

2nd Timothy-2

Lesson #32 Series # 469 2Tim 2:7

- I. Freedom through Military Victory:
 - A. The military provides and protects our freedom and the POLITICIAN destroys it and they are the BANE of our existence.
 - B. Our freedom is purchased with the LIVES of many many men in our history.
 - C. 2nd Lt. Almany Fischer, US Army, Platoon Leader, E Company, 157th Infantry, 45th Infantry Division, 12-13, Sept 1944 Gramau France.
 - D. The ONLY 2 Sources of freedom in a nation include:
 - 1. The Number of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
 - 2. The Establishment principle of the Military.
- II. Self Discipline v1-6 2Timothy, chapter 2.
 - A. 5 Analogies to Self Discipline, Student, Banking, Military, Athletics, Farming all teaching a variation of application to self discipline.
 - B. Our purpose in assembly or setting aside time for bible study is to engage in WORSHIP which is best fulfilled by Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - 1. Our objective is to accumulate a maximum of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this is how the Angelic Conflict is won and how the outcome of the Angelic Conflict is determined for every generation
- III. The Dynamics of Academic Discipline v7-
 - A. The real secret to life is what is carried in the soul of the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and what you think is what you are.
 - 1. “as a man thinks in his Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul SO HE IS”.
 - B. What you really are is determined by the content of your soul.
 - C. Of all the factors in worship the most important one is the ability to concentrate.
 - 1. You cannot talk, move around, dream and concentrate.
 - 2. The ministry of God the Holy Spirit is designed in worship so that you might be able to concentrate on the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
 - 3. You must do this all your life and the secret to capacity for life is your ability to concentrate, think, increase your vocabulary, to increase your categorical understanding of things.
 - 4. The content of Bible Doctrine which is prepared on the part of the Pastor Teacher MUST be concentrated on when it is taught.
 - 5. The whole objective of spiritual growth is bound up in the function of teaching Bible Doctrine by the Pastor Teacher in the local church.
 - 6. For those who cannot concentrate on the teaching of Bible Doctrine by one pastor they should leave and go find their right Pastor Teacher for it is above all else Bible Doctrine which is needed by every citizen.
 - D. Doctrine as what is taught is emphasized in what is most important in worship and what must be concentrated on.
 - 1. A whole generation of fundamentalist Christians were taught that the only thing important is for them to study the bible for themselves on their own and READ their bible daily and even memorize the bible.
 - i. Do it in the morning, in the evening when you come home, or on company time (Which is immoral, illegal and EVIL)
 - ii. People like to regulate their own time and by so doing there is NO self discipline involved and this is a critical key to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. Outside of the male who has the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher no believer can sit down and get anything from reading or memorizing the bible.

- i. This is good self discipline but so is memorizing any other document or information in life.
 - ii. Whatever benefit you get from memory work it has not spiritual connotation.
 - iii. It is only sitting under academic discipline and concentrating which is important and this introduces the concept of AUTHORITY and the DELEGATION of that authority by God.
 3. There is a right Pastor Teacher for every believer and this is a true principle of Bible Doctrine and every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has one.
 - i. The question is finding who that person is and it is not a matter of personality compatibility or rapport of some sort or of someone who has a nice sense of humor you can appreciate but ONLY A MATTER OF CONTENT OF WHAT IS TAUGHT.
 - ii. It has nothing to do with the individual involved and the gift of Pastor Teacher resides in all types of personalities and all sizes, shapes and descriptions of males ONLY.
 4. The reality of a right Pastor Teacher and a local church for teaching and of the Bible Doctrine from the bible taught in this situation is the reality of what is essential for spiritual growth in this Spiritual Life we have in the Church Age.
- E. Concentration on what is being taught by the Pastor Teacher in the local church is what is most important in worship.
1. 1Tim 2:11-12 you cannot talk and listen and concentrate on the teaching of Bible Doctrine and it is often a sign of Arrogance or merely selfcenteredness, always thoughtlessness and lack of manners, and lack of poise and indicative of Negative Volition at that moment.
 2. NO conversation is permitted during the teaching of Bible Doctrine EVER as this is disturbing and destroys concentration and is a violation of a direct command from God.
 - i. Many believers are under Divine Discipline based on the fact that they cannot keep their mouth shut during a service.
 3. Whatever self discipline you learn and acquire from assembly in the local church carries over into your entire life and gives you greater ability on the job, and helps you to be a better person on the job recognizing the authority and policy of the organization in which you are involved.
 - i. It helps in social life, making you a more thoughtful well mannered person and a better lover.
 4. In addition to all the benefits of driving your advance in the Spiritual Life toward Super Grace it also adds capacity for life.
- F. Concentration must be accompanied by OBJECTIVITY, POISE, AVOIDANCE of ARROGANCE or PRIDE and HYPERSENSITIVITY.
1. Since all Bible Doctrine is communicated by Male believers with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and since all males are imperfect with an Old Sin Nature and fail themselves the congregation MUST always focus attention on the message subject and NOT the person communicating.
 2. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit provides this and the ability to concentrate on any doctrinal subject at any time and we must recognize that all subjects do not hold equal interest by all believers all the time and this is part of life.
 3. Regardless of our interests ever jot and tittle of Bible Doctrine is important to us and the ministry of God the Holy Spirit gives us the ability to concentrate on EVERY subject in the word of God.
 4. The fulfillment of the command to concentrate on what is taught requires SELF DISCIPLINE and SELF REGULATION of the life of the individual believer.

5. This self discipline is compatible with a principle of GRACE and this grace is found in the ministry of God the Holy Spirit who indwells us and when we are in fellowship controls our soul under the principle of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

John 14:26, 16:12-15, 1Cor 2:9-14, James 1:21-25, 1John 2:27

- i. The importance of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in the principle of worship and assimilation of Bible Doctrine.
- G. (gr) Kurios == (heb) Jehovah = Deity and can be used for any member of the trinity.
1. The Essence of God resides in every member of the Trinity.
 2. When these characteristics are emphasized God is said to be ONE but the distinction in the persons comes when something in the context demands recognition of such distinction.
 3. (heb) Elohim = indicating essence of the trinity
 4. (heb) Jehovah = indicating individual members of the trinity.
 - i. All members have the same identical essence.
 - ii. In essence God is 1 and in personality God is 3.
 5. (gr) Kurios has the same connotation and can be used for God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit.
 - i. It is often used for God the Father when the consideration is author of the Plan of God.
 - ii. It is most often used for God the Son since he is the manifest member of the trinity.
 - a. Old Testament Scripture manifestations
 - b. First Advent Manifestations
 - c. Post Resurrection manifestations
 - d. 2nd Advent manifestations.
 - iii. Sometimes it is for God the Holy Spirit and v7 is one of these passages and in **2nd Cor 3:17-18**
 6. The system of worship for the Jews in the Old Testament Scripture times was one of ritual and ceremony with a designated priesthood functioning both in and outside the temple and tabernacle.
 7. Today after the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and his Substitutionary Spiritual Death, resurrection, and ascension to be at the right hand of God the Father as battlefield royalty the Angelic Conflict changed.
 - i. He has 3 categories of royalty
 - a. Divine God the Father and God the Holy Spirit his royal family
 - b. Human Line of David as his royal family
 - c. Battlefield Royal Family of God in this intercalated Church Age
 8. Because of this change in dispensations and the change in the Status Quo of believers to Royal Family of God WORSHIP must also change.
 - i. In the Church Age we as believers are Royal Family of God and now have a different worship.
 - ii. Ritual outside of the Eucharist is all removed and instead we have an “unveiled face” meaning we have the opportunity to hear Bible Doctrine taught from a text never before completed before AD96, the Canon of Scripture.
 - iii. We behold in the Mirror of the bible the Glory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Stream of Consciousness of the Soul we are transformed into that same image going from glory of saving Grace through living or Logistical Grace, to Glory of Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace and to dying grace to surpassing grace of eternity.
- H. Each facet of Grace progressively will give a believer progressive categories of blessing.
1. Saving to living or logistical, to Super Grace / Ultra Super Grace to dying grace to surpassing grace.

2. There can be no perception of Bible Doctrine aside from God the Holy Spirit who teaches us Bible Doctrine presented by the Pastor Teacher
3. There is no assimilation or cognizance of Bible Doctrine apart from the teaching ministry of God the Holy Spirit and this links up with self discipline and makes our self discipline in our bible study individually or in the local church compatible with GRACE principles.

I. There is no system of works or conformity or following through on religious activity or legalism which replaces Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

1. The soul has:
 - i. self consciousness making us aware of our own existence we relate things to self and our self to reality in life if we are NORMAL
 - ii. Left Lobe of the Soul, (gr) Nous, as the staging area of Bible Doctrine
 - iii. Right Lobe of the Soul, (gr) Kardia, as the key to everything.
 - a. The Heart or Kardia is NEVER used in the bible for the pump of the circulatory system but for the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is where we LIVE and it has:
 - i) Frame of Reference
 - ii) Memory Center
 - iii) Vocabulary Storage
 - iv) Categorical Storage
 - a) This is empty in many cases of those people who do not benefit in any way in life and are not happy in life.
 - v) Norms and standards or Conscience
 - vi) Launch Pad for Application.
 - vii) Volition
 - viii) Emotion (Bowels or Reins used in the Bible) and are designed as a responder to what is found in the Right Lobe.
2. The key to everything in life as a believer is to saturate the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with Bible Doctrine and this is the solution to the Angelic Conflict.
3. Daily study of Bible Doctrine is a means of transfer of written Bible Doctrine in the bible to the soul.

J. The chief objective of the Spiritual Life is the intake of Bible Doctrine

1. God measures your progress in the Spiritual Life by the doctrinal content of your soul.
 - i. Not some system of morality or legalism or asceticism or emotionalism, or strain or sacrifice by which one seeks to gain the approbation of God.
2. God is only interested in ONE thing and that is the level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul when considering GRACE activity in your life.
3. If there is to be ANY grace activity in your life it comes only from ONE thing and that is through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
4. Or the balance of residence of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.

IV. Doctrine of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, the Most important factor in your life:

A. Definition:

1. The Grace Apparatus for Perception (GAP) ==:
 - i. GRACE == the Plan of God, the Modus Vivendi and whole concept of the Plan of God.
 - a. God provides and we are blessed.
 - ii. APPARATUS == the God provided mechanical system in our soul for the assimilation of Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. PERCEPTION == the absolute desired result in the Christian Way of Life.

2. It is the system provided by God in Eternity Past whereby the believer is ABLE to understand the whole realm of Bible Doctrine while living on this earth.
 3. It is the divine grace provision for the believer's spiritual growth progress and advancement.
 4. God has found a way for all believers without regard for IQ or Educational Background to perceive and understand Bible Doctrine and transfer it from the Bible to the soul of the individual believer.
- B. There are 3 basic systems of perception in life by which all members of the Human Race acquire knowledge
1. Rationalism is a system of REASON as the source of knowledge and it is superior to and independent of the sensory perception.
 - i. This says what you think, can draw from your memory, vocabulary and categorical storage is REALITY totally apart from any other factor.
 - ii. What you See, Hear, Smell, Taste or Feel is excluded from reality under this system.
 - iii. Reason is the NORM or criterion for reality and rationalism is the adherence to the supremacy of Reason in matters of belief, conduct and thought.
 - iv. The subject of bible doctrine and scriptural interpretation MUST be put to the test of human reason and therefore Rationalism always rejects DOGMATIC AUTHORITY.
 - v. It is primarily for Philosophers such as Decarte who said reality was what he could think.
 - vi. He tried to understand God and the Origins of life but was unable to do so and developed the Cartesian principle of rationalism "I think therefore I EXIST".
 - vii. It is a system of superiority in thinking and the higher the IQ the greater or farther you can go in the system of Rationalism.
 - viii. Reality is whatever the rationalist thinks about any subject or situation without regard to the FACTS of what is or is occurring.
 2. Empiricism is a scientific system of learning and is in vogue today as it is learning by OBSERVATION and EXPERIMENTATION.
 - i. Reality lies in the sensory system relaying observational information to the brain for analysis.
 - ii. Experience, Observation, Experimentation provide the basis for reality and perception.
 - iii. This is what we learn about things in science to a POINT but some science is THEORETICAL and without any basis in fact and approaches rationalism.
 - iv. Reality is what the Empiricist sees, smells, tastes, feels and hears with regard to a situation or thing.
 3. In anything in life people tend to gravitate in their life system to rationalism or empiricism.
 - i. NO ONE starts as an empiricist or rationalist and an infant and child does not start to take in information and these 2 systems are for DEVELOPED I.Q.s, and perspicacity
 - ii. Both of these are MERITORIOUS systems and the merit of empiricism is in the observation and analysis while the merit of rationalism is in one's vocabulary and categorical understanding of things in all areas life.
 - iii. All people start to take in information in life under the system of FAITH which is the MOST misunderstood system of perception in life.
 4. FAITH is the only NON-MERITORIOUS system of perception where the merit is based totally on the OBJECT not even on the subject.
 - i. There is no such thing as BLIND faith but it is simply LEARNING or GAINING INFORMATION by accepting the AUTHORITY of the criterion involved.

- ii. Learning by accepting WORDS as representing objects and thus developing vocabulary.
- iii. Everything that is learned by the infant and child and even your dog is learned by FAITH whereby someone in charge of that individual starts with an orientation of words to objects or subjects.
- iv. Then vocabulary is put into sentences and the child (not the dog unfortunately) begins to think in terms of sentences and then goes into an educational system and begins to expand vocabulary into subjects and categories with which he can THINK and Understand LIFE.
- v. In the process of learning you are told things about history and you accept them based on faith in the one presenting the information so that you understand such things as the fact that the first American war for independence was a legitimate war and NOT A REVOLUTION LIKE THE FRENCH OR RUSSIAN REVOLUTIONS.
- vi. Then you begin to learn about our origins in England and you don't know where England is and have never seen it but you accept its existence based on FAITH in the ONE presenting the information.
- vii. Then you learn basic information about math considering we use a number base based on 10.
- viii. Then you learn geometry about lines and shapes and eventually you get into higher math of calculus but YOU NEVER START THERE.
- ix. Then EVENTUALLY Math or Physics or Science will cause you to develop in yourself RATIONALISM as a system of thought.
- x. HOWEVER, MOST of everything you learned in life and will learn is learned by FAITH whereby you accepted certain tenets and certain things as being TRUE.
- xi. You therefore build a whole system of thinking based on these tenets and therefore FAITH is the way that you learn most things.
- xii. The difference between FAITH and Empiricism or Rationalism is that NEITHER Empiricism nor Rationalism call for LEARNING UNDER AUTHORITY.
- xiii. Learning under either empiricism or rationalism is developed on your own.
- xiv. FAITH however demands being under a system of authority which you MUST ACCEPT in order to learn.
- xv. Faith is therefore the basis principle of education and the way you learn most things and having faith is NORMAL and does not in itself advance you spiritually nor have anything exclusive to do with the spiritual life.
- xvi. Faith must always have objects and in salvation the object of faith is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ so that faith as a nonmeritorious system of perception is the system brought in under the Grace Plan of God because under the GRACE SYSTEM all the merit belongs to GOD and we are the beneficiaries of that.
- xvii. Therefore faith is learning by accepting the authority of the criterion and is the reality of the unseen and is a system of thinking but is a nonmeritorious system of thinking and is building knowledge on the basis of an absolute authority or axiom whether it is God exists or $1+1=2$.
- xviii. Faith is therefore NOT only a valid system of cognizance but also the ONE most frequently used.
- xix. The validity of Faith depends on the criterion or Object of Faith and in Salvation Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the object of faith therefore there is validity.
- xx. In the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception Faith is a system of perception and the object of faith is in this case Bible Doctrine the principles of the word of God and the absolute criterion of the word of God.
- xxi. Many times the word (gr) Pistis more frequently refers to doctrine than to the act of faith.

- xxii. (gr) Pistis is used actually 3 ways in the New Testament Scripture and papyri.
- xxiii. Faith therefore is a bonifide system of learning and of thinking and the secret to blessing from God in time and immediately removes all arrogance, pride and pettiness and all concepts of superiority because of I.Q.

C. Distinction between Human and Spiritual I.Q.

1. I.Q. refers to Intelligence Quotient
 - i. Human IQ is the number assigned to a person on the basis of dividing his mental age by his chronological age where mental age is determined by testing and chronological age is determined by interrogation.
 - ii. The result is multiplied by 100 to remove decimals
 - iii. The CUT OFF date for IQ testing is at best 14 years old and no one has an established IQ after 14.
2. IQ really does not determine how smart you are going to be in life but simply tells the ability of your mind to absorb information under preconceived conditions within the area of the English language.
 - i. IQ is an excuse for an intellectual snobbery which does not and cannot exist.
 - ii. If you know your IQ and have a genius IQ it is a handicap if you become arrogant and full of your own supposed intelligence.
3. For every person who is a genius and makes it in life there are 100,000 of genius category who are a total flop in life.
 - i. More genius' fail in life than stupid people and genius develops hypersensitivity and has a tendency to divorce itself from reality especially through functions of rationalism therefore GENIUS is meaningless.
 - ii. There have only been a very few people in history who have had genius and it was meaningful and genius is of no value unless it stays oriented to REALITY.
4. Genius is meaningless most of the time because it usually occurs in only one field or area of life and the TRULY GREAT people of history had diversified genius.
 - i. Moses
 - a. He was a musical genius but most musical genius' are divorced totally from reality.
 - i) He was also a writer as a genius
 - ii) He was an engineering genius
 - iii) He was a military genius
 - iv) He was a public speaking genius
 - v) He was an administrative genius
 - b. He was diversified genius and he did GREAT things for Egypt and he brought the Thutmose dynasty out of the dark ages of Egyptian history and established the greatness of Thutmose III and Amenhotep II.
 - i) He was the one who brought Egypt to its greatest point.
 - c. However when God and Grace caught him his genius went to ZERO and he became an emotional cripple and tried to deliver the Jews by VIOLENCE which was not the way of God and not how it is to be done.
 - i) Violence is used under the Laws of Divine Establishment legitimately ONLY in stopping Crime or Defending one's nation.
 - ii) Violence and revolution is not the answer to anything and in trying to gain any point is EVIL and strikes and violence is EVIL in unionism and violence in demonstrations is EVIL.
 - iii) People try to get their way by VIOLENCE and women often try to get their way by throwing a tantrum.
 - iv) Violence is a terrible EVIL and is terribly destructive in all of its many forms and is never a valid way in which God functions.

- d. God had to take Moses out of circulation for 40 years and during that time his GENIUS lost touch with reality and his genius was of no value to God unless he got under a system of Bible Doctrine and grew up in the Spiritual Life and reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and after 40 years he still had not reached Super Grace but was getting close but his genius was totally divorced from reality.
 - i) There is nothing worse in life than his genius divorced from reality so one day he saw a bush burning and realized it did not start a fire and did not burn out so he stood and watched it and watched.
 - ii) This was the first time his genius had come back to reality so he walked over to the burning bush to investigate and GOD spoke to him and told him to remove his shoes for he was walking on holy ground.
 - iii) He was then back under REALITY and BACK under AUTHORITY and the first thing God told him was that he might be the VIP with his Arab friends but he was just another dummy who needed to get straightened out.
- e. Moses then expressed a pseudo humility with God saying he was not good enough for what God wanted him to do in freeing and leading the Jews.
 - i) He was told to go back and talk to pharaoh and free my people the Jews.
 - ii) He was such an arrogant idiot full of pseudo humility that he told God he was not that good of a public speaker when in fact he was a GENIUS public speaker one of the greatest in all of Human History but totally divorced from reality.
 - iii) In order to wake him up and bring his genius in the field of speaking back to reality God told him to use Aaron to speak for him and Aaron was so bad as a speaker Moses could not stand it very long and finally moved him aside and did the speaking himself.
- f. Genius is no good unless related to reality and it is better to be stupid and related to reality and under Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God than be a genius and divorced from reality and an unbeliever.
 - i) Moses diversified genius was finally harnessed by maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and he had to be totally under a grace system and as a Super Grace believer he became the greatest leader in history with 2,000,000 people in a constant state of revolution for 40 years.
 - ii) There never was a person with the greatness of Moses and he was able to superimpose his greatness in history with the Canon of the Old Testament Scripture which begins as a man who was genius in the realm of writing.
 - iii) In addition there was Isaiah who was a genius in the field of writing and was very eloquent while Moses was relatively simple but the genius of Moses was phenomenal.
- g. Genius is also no good unless related also to HISTORY and eventually Status Quo Super Grace did this for Moses.
- ii. Saul of Tarsus was a man of Diversified Genius
 - a. He was a genius in writing
 - b. He was a genius in thinking
 - c. He had all kinds of genius
 - d. He had great vigor of mind and a very strong man in his soul.

- e. GOD had to slap him down because his genius was not associated with reality.
 - i) It is unreal for a man with all that genius to have been killing Christians and if he had continued he would have eradicated the early church.
 - f. God therefore brought his genius back into touch with reality and under harness.
 - i) God then used Saul as the Apostle Paul as he could not use any of the other disciples of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ after the resurrection.
 - ii) The 11 included Peter, James, and John, NICE people but no good not smart, legalistic, mixed up, and confused.
 - g. Eventually God used the diversified genius of Paul under Status Quo Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace to give him an impact in history not just in his generation but throughout Human History.
 - h. There are 2 men who have had a greater impact on Human History than anyone else who has ever and most likely will ever live other than Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ himself, Apostle Paul and Moses.
 - iii. There are also 2 unbelievers in history who have had incredible diversified genius and have had a lasting effect on history but the difference is that without Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Status Quo Super Grace with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul their genius which had great impact and dynamic eventuated in GREAT tragedy for BOTH of them, Napoleon and Julius Caesar.
 - a. Julius Caesar in 5 years set up a system which gave Rome another 500 years of history roughly and is still one of the best systems of government administration the world has ever known.
 - i) However, His life ended in tragedy, but he had the ability to take in many areas of diversified genius and apply them to reality.
 - a) He was a military genius but never went to Roman Military Training becoming a soldier late in life.
 - b) He was liberal in politics and a genius there.
 - c) He was a genius in seduction and one of the greatest lovers of all time.
 - d) Later in life He became a governmental, military, math genius correcting our system of time and our calendar.
 - e) He tragically ended up under the daggers of assassins in the senate one day March 15.
 - b. Napoleon Bonaparte who has done more for modern history than any other individual.
 - i) He was again a diversified genius and out of the french revolution and its devastating principles he brought back establishment and Law and Order not just to France but to all of Europe and changed all of Europe and had the greatest impact on European history and function of any man.
 - ii) He died a very tragic way on the islands of Alba and St Helena miserably with stomach cancer and all kinds of problems and was even very sick at Waterloo.
 - iii) His genius was still harnessed to history despite his tragic death.
5. So there were 2 believers in history who were GREAT and 2 unbelievers in history 2 Jews and 2 gentiles

- i. The Genius of the 2 unbelievers without Bible Doctrine still made an impact on history and even though the genius impacted history their lives were very tragic and filled with misery.
 - ii. Moses though living in the most adverse of circumstances the last years of his life consisted of the most phenomenal blessings imaginable.
 - iii. Paul we are studying now and his blessing.
 - 6. Genius does have a place but genius can have a great handicap and when people talk about their IQ they are totally disoriented to LIFE.
 - i. IQ does not have any meaning in life and as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ GRACE is the key to everything.
- D. Spiritual IQ is for the believer ONLY and is determined by the content of Metabolized Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 1. (heb) chakmah = Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - 2. (gr) epignosis = Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - 3. (gr) Sunesis = Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - 4. Col 1:9-10 is a dissertation on the principle of spiritual IQ.

Col 1:9

v9: For this reason or because of this, we also since or from the day we heard of it, we do not cease to pray intensely on your behalf and to constantly ask with the result that your deficiency may be filled up with full epignosis knowledge of doctrine of his sovereign purpose and design or will by means of all wisdom (epignosis application) and spiritual understanding (epignosis exhale)

Col 1:10

v10: In order that you may walk worthy of the Lord, pleasing God in all things, constantly producing in the sphere of every good work (Absolute Good), constantly receiving growth or momentum by means of epignosis Bible Doctrine knowledge from the source of God.

- 5. (gr) Sophia = Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the launch pad of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for application to life and experience.
 - 6. (gr) Sunesis = is doctrine in the Frame of Reference and vocabulary and categorical storage of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 7. (gr) Epignosis = full knowledge of Bible Doctrine resident in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 8. Walking worthy of the Lord is based on mastery of Bible Doctrine and the amount of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is NOT WHAT YOU ARE DOING but WHAT YOU ARE THINKING.
 - i. Instead of going out and doing things for God SIT down and take in Bible Doctrine and learn Bible Doctrine and this is how great things are accomplished for God.
 - 9. Human IQ is not the issue but Spiritual IQ is always the real issue in the Spiritual Life.
- E. Exclusion of Human IQ from the Grace Apparatus for Perception:
 - 1. There is no place for human merit or ability in the grace Plan of God.
 - 2. Human IQ has often been considered a factor in learning Bible Doctrine and this would imply that low IQ believers would be handicapped in learning Bible Doctrine.
 - 3. However in Eternity Past God developed a way for every believer to learn Bible Doctrine totally apart from Human IQ and ability.
 - 4. For this reason at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God every believer receives the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit and a Human Spirit for the assimilation of Bible Doctrine.
 - 5. The Human Spirit bypasses Human IQ in learning Bible Doctrine and God the Holy Spirit teaches the Human Spirit and removes all merit from perspicacity of Bible Doctrine.
 - 6. For this reason God the Holy Spirit teaching the Human Spirit is taught in 1Cor 3;16, 1Thes 5:23, 1Cor 1:19-2;16

1Cor 1:19-2:16

v19: For it stands written {Isaiah 29-14}, "I will destroy the wisdom of the wise and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent or the cleverness of the clever I will set aside {the 'human genius' with human viewpoint only}."

1Cor 1:20

v20: NO Where (is) the wise (Man)? NO Where (is) the Jewish Scholar, Scribe or Academic? NO Where is the disputer or debater of this age? {Greek orators} Has not The God proved foolish the wisdom {human viewpoint} of this world or cosmos? Of Course!

1Cor 1:21

v21: For in as much as or since, in the wisdom or insight of God the world, by the instrumentality of wisdom, knew not God, God was well pleased or decided with pleasure, through the foolishness or childishness of the inculcated message preached, to save forever those who believe.

1Cor 1:22

v22: For indeed Jews require or ask for a miracle or sign {empiricism}, and, the Greeks keep on seeking after or searching for wisdom {rationalism}

1Cor 1:23

v23: but we declare or preach the revelation of Christ having been crucified {faith} unto the Jews a stumbling block and unto the Greeks or Gentiles foolishness.

1Cor 1:24

v24: But unto them - the elected ones, Royal Family of God - whether Jews or Greeks Christ and only Christ is the power of God and the wisdom of God.

1Cor 1:25

v25: Because the 'foolishness of God' keeps on being wiser than men (answer to the GREEKS). And the weakness of God is stronger than men (answer to the Jews).

1Cor 1:26

v26: Apply the doctrine of election, Royal Family of God how not many wise according to human standards, not many with ability {human talent}, not many with authority not many from the aristocracy are called.

1Cor 1:27

v27: But The God has chosen for special grace favor and privilege, the 'foolish things (faith and the Grace Apparatus for Perception) of the world', in order that he might put to shame or discredit the wise (Human Viewpoint rationalist). And The God has chosen for a special grace and privilege, the 'weak individuals the helpless Royal Family of God or Believers clinging to Grace or "things" in the judgment of the world' in order to confound or discredit the 'mighty or strong unbelievers or things'.

1Cor 1:28

v28: And the insignificant or low born or unimportant individuals in the view of the world, and people and things which are despised or rejected as nothing the God has chosen the not being or humble ones that he might neutralize the being or arrogant ones.

1Cor 1:29

v29: That no flesh should be glorified or boast in His presence.

1Cor 1:30

v30: But YOU Believers, from the source of Him, God the Father, or by his doing, you keep on being in Christ Jesus ie union with Christ; Who became what He was not before to our advantage, to us the wisdom from God: righteousness, and sanctification or aristocracy, and redemption.

1Cor 1:31

v31: In order that, according as it stands written, (Jer 9:24) "He that glories or boasts let him keep on glorying or boasting in the Lord".

1Cor 2:1

v1: And I, brethren, when I came to you, I came not according to the standard of excellency or superiority of words or speech or of human wisdom declaring unto you the testimony of God. (no philosophy or psychology)

1Cor 2:2

v2: For I (Paul) determined not to know any thing among you except Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and Him having been crucified.

1Cor 2:3

v3: And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling.

1Cor 2:4

v4: Both my teaching or doctrine and my delivery were not with persuasive or enticing words of human wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of His power {Divine Dynasphere}.

1Cor 2:5

v5: That your FAITH cannot or should not, stand or be or exist in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

1Cor 2:6

v6: However, when among mature believers we keep on teaching wisdom. But a wisdom that does not belong to this Age, nor of the leaders of this world who are fading out.

1Cor 2:7

v7: But, We (apostles) keep on communicating God's Wisdom in a mystery which is doctrine hidden or concealed and which Mystery Doctrine God pre-designed before the ages before the universe existed or in Eternity Past, for the purpose of or resulting in our Honor Code or Glory to the Church Age Believers.

1Cor 2:8

v8: The wisdom or Doctrine which none of the rulers or men of influence of this age or world have understood. For if they had known; but they did not know {2nd class}; they would not have crucified the Lord of Glory.

1Cor 2:9

v9: But just as it stands Written (Is 64:4), or to use the language of Old Testament Scripture, "Things which Eye has not seen nor ear has heard (empiricism) nor things which have not entered into the Right Lobe of man (rationalism) all the things which God has prepared for those who Love him (Advanced Believers in Reciprocal Love for God) these have not entered their Right Lobes

1Cor 2:10

v10: for to us, the God has revealed them (His plans) to us by means of or through the instrumentality of God the Holy Spirit, for the Spirit searches or investigates all things even the Deep things from God.

1Cor 2:11

v11: For who among men or mankind inherently knows or understands the thoughts, motives, memories, deliberations or reflections of a man or all mankind except by means of the spirit of rationalism or empiricism which is in man, even so the thoughts of God no unbeliever knows except the spirit of God or God the Holy Spirit.

1Cor 2:12

v12: Now we have not received or do not receive the source and seat of human discernment or the cosmic spirit but the Human spirit or divine source of discernment from the source of God, that we might have inherent and permanent knowledge of the things (Bible Doctrine) having been freely or graciously given to us under the authority of God.

1Cor 2:13

v13: Which divine wisdom or spiritual phenomenon things or Bible Doctrine we also speak or teach or communicate by categories, not in words or categories taught by human wisdom, but in words or categories that are taught by or from the source of God the Holy Spirit; explaining or combining with the Human Spirit to teach, spiritual things or phenomena or doctrine to a spiritual apparatus or spiritual persons.

1Cor 2:14

v14: But the natural or Soul-ish man or unbeliever (dichotomous) does not grasp or acquire or receive knowledge of the spiritual phenomenon or things or doctrine of or from the Spirit of God, to him they are foolishness or absurd to him, furthermore he is not able to learn or acquire or obtain knowledge of the spiritual phenomenon or the gospel, because they are discerned, understood or perceived spiritually or from the source of God the Holy Spirit.

1Cor 2:15

v15: But he that is spiritual the believer with the Grace Apparatus for Perception, appraises or investigates or evaluates 'The all things' of Bible Doctrine, yet he, himself is judged or evaluated of or by no man, living according to Bible Doctrine.

1Cor 2:16

v16: For, Who has known the thinking of the Lord that we should instruct him, (NO ONE) but we keep on having the thinking of Christ.

7. In this passage we are commanded to concentrate on what is being taught by Paul and for us by our right Pastor Teacher.
8. We have the thinking or mind of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the word of God in the canon of scripture and when we have the thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ communicated to and inculcated into our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then we have rapport with God and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and begin to fulfill the purpose for which we remain in this life.

2Tim 2:7

v7: BE CONCENTRATING, PERCEIVE under STRICT ACADEMIC DISCIPLINE, on what I Say, what doctrine I communicate {an order}! for the Lord God the Holy Spirit will progressively give you, Timothy and All believers by extension, total understanding, in all things or all categories of doctrine, Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the vocabulary and categorical storage of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul,

Lesson #33 Series # 469 2Tim 2:7, Job 32:7

I. The reason for studying the Grace Apparatus for Perception:

- A. Our lives and capacity for life and love and for Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the ability to fulfill the REASON we still live and fulfill our objective of life is bound up in the principle of Job 32:7-8
- B. In Eternity Past God, under the principle of Logistical Grace or Living Grace, designed for us everything we would need to stay alive in this world and to take in Bible Doctrine if our volition moved in that direction long enough to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 1. Then at the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace he provided in **Eternity Past** a Super Grace blessing package catered to each of us individually.
 - 2. In addition to this he provided Surpassing Grace for eternity as well for those who reach and HOLD Status Quo Super Grace.
 - 3. In Living or Logistical Grace one of the things he provided for us was ONE DAY AT A TIME.
 - 4. God has given each of us a certain span of life and knows how long we have to live and knows all about each of us in detail and gives to us 1 day to advance and then another and another.
 - 5. Our life we measure in terms of YEARS and DAYS God measures it in terms of DAYS After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - 6. We have the new day and have taken advantage of it while some do this every day some 2x a day some for the first time and some not ever.
 - 7. We are to use a portion of every day in the absorption of Bible Doctrine.

Job 32:7-8

v7: I said or thought to myself, I am repeating what I had previously said or thought and it should be said over and over again, Age should speak first or Days given by God one day at a time, should be devoted to the communication of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, and a multitude or accumulation of years should cause to teach, present or communicate or cause us to understand maximum epignosis doctrinal wisdom.

v8: But God the Holy Spirit inside man and the constant inhale of Bible Doctrine under the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception from the Almighty causes understanding of Bible Doctrine

- C. We are given the mechanism by which we can understand Bible Doctrine and the understanding of Bible Doctrine is not limited to those with high IQ but belongs to all members of the Human Race who are part of the Royal Family of God and function under Positive Volition and the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

II. The Function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception Continued:

- A. Points 1-5 emphasized the need for the GRACE provision for the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- B. The Grace provision for learning Bible Doctrine:
 - 1. There is the formation and preservation of the Canon of Scripture so that everything which Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ wanted us to know from his own thinking and essence has been provided for us in written form.
 - i. Mechanics of Inspiration
 - ii. Formation of and PRESERVATION of the Bible by the Grace of God so that even today some 2000 years after the completion of the Canon of Scripture we know EXACTLY what God wanted us to know from it.
 - iii. The canon is under constant attack from Satan and there is constant pressure and effort to destroy it and the preservation of the Canon over this long period demonstrates "Greater is he who is in us than he who is in the world".
 - iv. This results in the believer in 2018 having intact everything he will ever need in writing and it is simply a matter of transferring from the written page of the Canon to the Soul of the believer.
 - v. THIS is a GRACE FACTOR.
 - vi. The Fact that:
 - a. We have a bible

- b. The bible still exists
 - c. It is the most widespread book in the world today
 - d. all demonstrates the Grace of God and Power of God in providing and preserving this book.
2. The divine authorization for the local church
- i. This is our classroom and we take our text book to the classroom and this is the ONLY place where Bible Doctrine is taken in under the correct principle.
 - ii. There is nothing wrong with reading the bible but you cannot advance in the Spiritual Life without a prepared Pastor Teacher presenting Bible Doctrine to you.
 - iii. The problem is that there MUST be academic discipline in the learning of Bible Doctrine and the ONLY one who can learn Bible Doctrine and grow in the Spiritual Life is the male with the gift of Pastor Teacher.
 - iv. The Royal Family of God assembles in the local church and when he does he is a student without portfolio and his only right is concentration under the ministry of Filling of God the Holy Spirit for assimilation of Bible Doctrine.
 - v. The local church must assemble under strict discipline emphasizing good manners, objectivity, poise, concentration and motivation from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
 - vi. The Pastor Teacher has absolute authority during this time of teaching and his teaching must be compatible with the spiritual principles from Bible Doctrine.
 - vii. Because the Pastor Teacher has such tremendous authority from God his preparation period whether a few years or many must put him under a system of GROSSLY unfair discipline in order that he might learn what unfair authority is about and then can appreciate and value the proper use of authority.
 - viii. Too many pastors do not fit this picture.
 - ix. Those who use authority best are those who have been under totally unfair authority which demands the most from integrity and obedience in spite of everything.
 - x. The Pastor Teacher exercises his authority in the teaching of Bible Doctrine and whatever other functions are needed to keep the local church operating in a GRACE manner compatible with Bible Doctrine.
 - xi. As Bible Doctrine is transferred to the Right Lobe Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer he builds a command post there by which the believer can then regulate his life on the basis of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this is the basis for GREAT spiritual progress.
 - xii. The local church will continue in this function until the Rapture of the local church and this is all that God uses in the presentation of Bible Doctrine to the believer.
 - xiii. He will not and does not use Denominations, or Outside Organizations which often legitimately react to the dysfunctional local church and try to perform some “spiritual” function but whose emphasis is on some system of works be it evangelism or some legalistic function.
 - xiv. These organizations are not run by a Pastor Teacher and do not have the daily teaching of Bible Doctrine as their basis for formation.
 - xv. Denominations are a GROUP of WEAK pastors trying to hold each other up like 3 drunks trying to hold each other up.
 - xvi. Local churches do fail and when local churches fail they either fade into denominations or fade out of existence.
 - xvii. God will always raise up enough local churches to serve whatever Positive Volition exists at that time in that generation.
 - xviii. There are times when there is such great Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine that there are only a very FEW local churches in all the world actually doing their

job or teaching Bible Doctrine but this is all that is needed for the Positive Volition present at that time and such was the case in the Middle Ages.

3. The Right Pastor Teacher for each believer:
 - i. Every believer has ONLY 1 Right Pastor Teacher who is to teach you Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. God provides this right Pastor Teacher who can communicate Bible Doctrine to us and it is NOT someone who you must have some compatibility or rapport with.
 - iii. It is a male who by the very nature of his preparation and his spiritual growth is prepared to provide for you the spiritual food you need.
 - iv. In the Spiritual Life you only have one right Pastor Teacher and that is where you spend your entire Spiritual Life learning Bible Doctrine and you never know what is going to be taught but this is not YOUR CONCERN, and you only need concentrate on what is taught on any given day.
 - v. You only can know who your right man or woman or Pastor Teacher is by growing in the Spiritual Life and becoming aware of them.
 - vi. Rapport between the congregation and Pastor Teacher is NOT what is needed and too many base their choice of local church on these factors and it is not the objective of the Spiritual Life.
 - vii. The Spiritual Gift of Pastor Teacher is sovereignly bestowed by God the Holy Spirit on a FEW men in every generation at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - viii. God the Holy Spirit has a marvelous sense of humor which is observable by the variation in those who have received this spiritual gift therefore there is no such thing as a stereotyped Pastor Teacher.
 - ix. There also is no such thing as dedicating oneself to full time Christian service or surrendering to Preach since all believers are in full time Christian service and it would be ridiculous to have a woman surrender to preach when she cannot have the spiritual gift.
 - x. The very important question for every male believer is how do I know my spiritual gift and especially HOW DO I KNOW IF I HAVE THE GIFT OF PASTOR TEACHER?.
 - a. There should be some warning for pastors since it does take a LOT Of preparation to fulfill that spiritual gift.
 - b. You must take in Bible Doctrine to grow in the Spiritual Life and at a certain point you will discover your gift especially that of Pastor Teacher.
 - c. Then the difficulty begins with technical preparation.
 - xi. As we grow in the Spiritual Life we eventually find our Niche but his requires that we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as quickly as possible.
 - xii. Spiritual Growth leads to discovery of spiritual gift except in cases where the gift remains anonymous in which case the believer is to just stay with the Growth.
 - xiii. Once you do discover your gift and if your gift is that of Pastor Teacher you are in for a LONG LIFE of Discipline both academic and self, and other preparation by daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and regulation of your life so that you can receive the training needed to present Bible Doctrine to a congregation.
 - a. This could include military training or extensive academic training where there is some type of grossly unfair discipline exercised over you.
 - b. There must be self discipline, good study habits, dedication to the principle of what it is all about, avoiding all other unnecessary activities for the ministry such as call on people, going to hospitals, becoming

involved in any of the many Human Good concepts such as fund raising or making the believers feel welcome ETC.

4. The royal priesthood of the believer:
 - i. Every believer in the Church Age is Royal Family of God and a royal priest and this is a universal priesthood which mandates that each believer become spiritually self sustaining and do your own thinking and have privacy and freedom and do life before the Lord on the basis of what you have learned in bible study in your local church and as a royal priest are to build and construct your own altar command post in YOUR OWN SOUL.
 - ii. The purpose of universal priesthood is privacy, reception of Bible Doctrine,
 - iii. If you are going to make any progress in the Spiritual Life you will find your own and best friends in those who are moving in the same direction toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - iv. There must be separation from reversionists and any person or thing which may distract you from Bible Doctrine.
 - v. The local church must help maintain the privacy of the individual believer in the congregation.
 - vi. There is something very very relaxing in being around those who are under constant Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.
 - vii. There comes a time when rapport, friendship and love will be directed in the right direction toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - viii. We have privacy of the priesthood and property including everything which belongs to us and where we live and this is ensured because in the local church area and congregation in general it is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which does so.
 - ix. While learning Bible Doctrine privacy is very important to us and we do not want to be bothered by a lot of idiots sticking their noses into our business and this is why a very strong rule and grace principle which is essential in any congregation is that there must not be maligning, gossip, judging, running down other believers EVER and this results in the best and most relaxed atmosphere ever.
 - x. There is no place for human gimmicks, public relations, legalistic efforts or emotional antics in the local church and perception of Bible Doctrine.
 - a. There can be emotional response to Bible Doctrine, music, Laws of Divine Establishment principles, etc but it must be a RESPONSE.
5. Ministry of God the Holy Spirit who makes all this possible in learning Bible Doctrine.
 - i. This is the GRACE in the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - ii. The aristocracy of the believer in the Royal Family of God is a function of the ministry of God the Holy Spirit who provides Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ with a royal family at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God of the Church Age believer by placing him in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. This is the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit which enters us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iv. God the Holy Spirit is and agent of:
 - a. Regeneration
 - b. Royalty of the Church Age believer
 - c. and indwells us as the Escutcheon of the Royal Family of God.
 - d. Providing the sealing or security of the believer.
 - e. Provision of the spiritual gifts for believers whereby we come to depend on each other for spiritual blessing and sustenance.
 - v. Our objective is a BALANCE of RESIDENCE between the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

- a. At this point the believer arrives at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - vi. The ministry of God the Holy Spirit in teaching us Bible Doctrine to our Human Spirit lacks any requirement for IQ or perspicacity or human ability or understanding of vocabulary or words etc.
 - 6. The Human Spirit designed for a part of the function of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - i. The unbeliever does not have a Human Spirit only body and soul and therefore cannot understand Bible Doctrine and cannot absorb spiritual phenomenon.
 - ii. It is provided at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God by God the Holy Spirit as a basic receiver for Bible Doctrine and is essential as God the Holy Spirit bears witness with our Human Spirit.
 - 7. Laws of Divine Establishment
 - i. Our national government is responsible to protect privacy and freedom of the individual as well as the local church.
 - a. The great principle here is separation of church and state and is known as religious liberty.
 - b. This gives the right to privacy where a person can accept or reject Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ or choose any religion or NONE to have a relationship with GOD or NOT.
 - ii. The government thus is in place to ensure the privacy and freedom of everyone in the nation and this must be maintained.
 - a. This maintaining of the freedom of the nation occurs through Military Victory them means by which it was first acquired and this means military preparedness which demands universal military training which means maximum male self discipline which in turn gives capacity for life to both believer and unbeliever.
 - b. The Function of LAW with the Judge on the Bench, and the Law Enforcement officer on the street.
 - c. This is how freedom is preserved and enforced.
 - iii. Human Authority is also involved in the Laws of Divine Establishment functions where it begins with parents and goes up through government and also into the local church with the Pastor Teacher having the authority there.
 - 8. God provides everything we need under his grace plan and policy for each day in which we live and are supposed to take in Bible Doctrine at some point.
- C. Receptive Comprehension:
- 1. The mentality of the soul is composed of a Left Lobe of the Soul and a Right Lobe of the soul.
 - i. There is a human spirit which filters in Bible Doctrine as it is taught and brought to our understanding by God the Holy Spirit.
 - ii. There must be a staging area in the soul for Bible Doctrine and this is the Left Lobe of the Soul.
 - a. The Left Lobe of the Soul is a staging area for almost everything in life.
 - b. This is called NOUS and is designed to assimilate OBJECTIVE INFORMATION.
 - c. The doctrine information which enters the Nous is called GNOSIS and is academic knowledge which is UNDERSTOOD but not necessarily USABLE or able to be applied.
 - d. The reception of Bible Doctrine into the Left Lobe of the Soul classifies the believer as a hearer of the word.

- e. Very often this is where Bible Doctrine stops in the souls of most believers.
 - f. James tells us to be MORE than just a hearer of the word. **James 1:19-25**
 - iii. The Right Lobe is the eventual target for Bible Doctrine called in the bible Kardia or Heart.
 - a. This is where Bible Doctrine is accepted by the faith and volition of the believer
 - b. This is where James tells us to be a DOER of the word which is NOT someone doing DEEDS but metabolizing Bible Doctrine into the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. **James 1:19-25**
 - c. This is not someone who is performing some aspect of GOOD or in any way in the productive end of Christianity.
 - d. This is a person who has accepted the Bible Doctrine taught and staged from the Human Spirit into the Left Lobe of the Soul by faith under the ministry of God the Holy Spirit thus is said to have METABOLIZED Bible Doctrine.
 - e. Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is called Epignosis or Sunesis.
- 2. Believers who know all about Bible Doctrine and can tell you all about the tribulation of millennium or some other topic but cannot in any way apply doctrinal principles to their own life or situation and there is NO growth from simply KNOWING about Bible Doctrine and biblical facts and stories.
 - i. All Bible Doctrine goes into the Human Spirit and then moves directly into the Left Lobe of the Soul when it is comprehended but it must move into the Right Lobe before it can be applied to life.
 - a. The great issue of the Grace Apparatus for Perception is transferring Bible Doctrine from the Left Lobe of the Soul to the Right Lobe.
 - b. Almost anyone in the world can get Bible Doctrine into the Left Lobe of the Soul as simple academic knowledge.
- 3. We become DOERS of the Word because Bible Doctrine is in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and able to be applied to life and situations.
 - i. A lot of reversionists have Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe of the Soul but NONE in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 4. Receptive comprehension does not require IQ and it is information put into the Left Lobe of the Soul but it is NEVER enough for spiritual growth or application of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. This is how we passed many academic courses in school.
 - ii. Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe of the Soul MUST be transferred to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 5. Terminology:
 - i. Doctrine which is understood in the Left Lobe == (gr) GNOSIS
 - ii. Doctrine which is metabolized into the Right Lobe == (gr) EPIGNOSIS
 - iii. Subjective Thinking == (gr) DOKEO == it is perfect for Receptive Comprehension where you learn something but then immediately forget it.
 - iv. Objective Thinking (gr) Phroneo == that which is transferred from the Left Lobe of the Soul to the Right Lobe.
- 6. Receptive Comprehension is doctrine sitting in the Left Lobe of the Soul but unusable, it is like needing something to function which is in a warehouse but you cannot get to it to get it.
 - i. This is no good for us until it is delivered to us for our use.
 - ii. Sitting there in the warehouse it does no good for us.
 - iii. This is Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe of the Soul where we know it and understand it but have not accepted it as fact or truth.

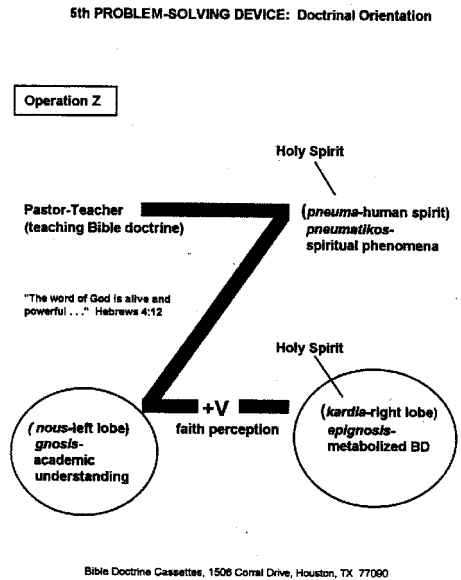
D. Mechanics:

1. There are 2 main problems which we have overcome in the concept of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - i. Human IQ and Receptive Comprehension.
2. Stage I == Hearing Bible Doctrine and this is operation ICE
 - i. I == Isogogics
 - a. This is the interpretation of the bible within the framework of its historical setting and understanding a passage often requires cognizance of the time in which it was written.
 - b. This is often the recovery of certain customs of ancient history such as what we have studied in Academic, Military and Farming customs of ancient Rome.
 - ii. C == Categories
 - a. This is putting principles of Bible Doctrine under an overall heading which fulfills the hermeneutical principle of comparing scripture with scripture to determine classification and mechanics of operation.
 - iii. E == Exegesis
 - a. This is the analysis of the grammar, syntax and etymology of a passage from the original language in which it was written, Hebrew, Chaldean, Koine Greek.
 - b. Lack of exegesis is a sign of the unprepared Pastor Teacher.
 - c. This is an analysis of a passage on the basis of the exact content and context to determine the exact meaning of that verse.
 - iv. These are the ingredients needed to properly Teach Bible Doctrine and They are not always enjoyable or entertaining
 - v. The basic factors with regard to assembly for bible study in the local church or elsewhere is to have the strict academic discipline, the manners, poise, self discipline, thoughtfulness, concentration, provided by the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in order to get into this stage I
 - a. The believer must be motivated by Positive Volition and his life must be regulated
 - b. In response to ICE teaching you must be MOTIVATED and your life must be REGULATED so that your motivation and your volition can keep up with each other.
 - c. You must regulate self and no one can do it for you and you must be motivated to be regulated and vice versa since they work interchangeably.
 - d. This allows you be able to show up for bible study on a regular basis.
 - vi. In this stage you LISTEN and HEAR Bible Doctrine taught and get information taught to the Human Spirit by God the Holy Spirit (Taught differently here)
3. Stage II is Receptive Comprehension
 - i. This is the assimilation of Bible Doctrine as GNOSIS putting information into the warehouse of the Left Lobe of the Soul moving it from the Human Spirit.
 - ii. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit produces objectivity in concentration and as a result you have the information stored and can be delivered immediately or in the future to the Right Lobe.
 - iii. All Bible Doctrine goes to this receptive comprehension function FIRST.
4. Stage III is operation Epignosis:
 - i. The big question is HOW does the Bible Doctrine get from the Left Lobe of the Soul to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from GNOSIS to EPIGNOSIS.
 - ii. This is the BASIC function of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) and its most basic and objective function Stage I of Faith Rest.

- iii. Faith can only take Bible Doctrine so far and this is when you actually BELIEVE what you know and it is carried to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul by God the Holy Spirit.

In this segment of the study there is a question as to the interrelationship between the Human Spirit, the Left Lobe of the Soul and the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. I refer you to Operation Z where Bible Doctrine is taken into and stored in the Human Spirit and immediately transferred to the Left Lobe of the Soul for academic understanding and then with Positive Volition and Faith Comprehension under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit it is transferred to the Right Lobe where it can then be used for application.

This is NOT how it is taught in this lesson.



- iv. Under faith the Bible Doctrine in the Left Lobe of the Soul is moved to the Right Lobe Frame of Reference and Memory Center, where it is sent to Categorical Storage, norms and standards and Launch Pad for application.
 - v. This is building up the Edification Complex of the Soul.
5. Stage IV Operation Glory
- i. This is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which causes the believer to move in advancement to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and glorify God. **Eph 3:14-21**
- E. The primary result of the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception:
- 1. Spiritual maturity of the believer ie Super Grace glorifies God in time and results in tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict.
 - 2. The synonyms for this Super Grace Life which is our primary function in the Spiritual Life include:
 - i. Language == (heb) Chakmah, (gr) Epignosis == synonyms for the Super Grace life wherever they are found.
 - ii. Theological == Super Grace Status **James 4:6**
 - iii. Priestly == Altar of the Soul **Heb 13:10**
 - iv. Building == Edification Complex of the Soul, Grace Orientation, Mastery of Details of life, Relaxed Mental Attitude, Capacity for Life, Sharing the Happiness of God **Eph 4:12+16** and with completion of this you are in Super Grace Status Quo.
 - v. Time == Redeeming or Purchasing time, where by God provides the believer 1 day at a time Job 32:7, with the capital for this purchase being Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - vi. Central Control == Dictator of the soul which is inner residence of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Eph 6:10**
 - vii. Military == Putting on the full armor from God Eph 6:11-18, Following the colors to the high ground **Heb 12:1-2**, Establishing a command post of the soul **Col 2:3-8**.
 - viii. Crucifixion == Take up your cross which is bible study in spite of distraction or opposition, Follow me, the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception eventuating in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, **Matt 10:38, Mk 8:34, Luke 9:23, 14:27**

- ix. Chemical Synonym == NaCl the Salt of the earth is the believer who upholds his generation and supports his nation.
 - x. Sanctification == Godliness **1Tim 6:3-6, 2Pet 1:3**
- F. The other results of the Grace Apparatus for Perception
1. Reversion recovery including the removal of Scar Tissue of the Soul, freedom from influence of evil, cancellation of Divine Discipline.
 2. Glorification of God in the Angelic Conflict by attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace receiving Super Grace blessings in time glorifies God.
 - i. Holding the ground means dying Grace and presentation of Surpassing Grace Blessings all which glorify God
 3. Equating royal status of the believer with his function as a believer where his royal ambassadorship only truly function after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 4. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and all capacities for life from inner residence of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
 5. Maximum influence on history where the Super Grace believer is the spiritual atlas holding up and carrying his generation and often changes the course of his generation.
 6. Provides the basis for bonifide production which requires balance of residence of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 7. Becomes the basis for eternal reward or production of or receipt of Surpassing Grace blessing
 8. All of this is what glorifies God in both time and eternity.

III. 3 Reasons Why Pastors Suffer v8-13

- A. This is apart from all the regular concepts of Christian suffering.
- B. V8 to perpetuate Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- C. Bible Doctrine metabolized into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is placed into and STAYS in the Frame of Reference, memory center, vocabulary and categorical storage so that it can be called up and used at any time.
 1. This is RECALL TO MIND, KEEP IN MIND, {(ff) brings to my mind Lamentations, “surely my soul remembers [my failures and god’s faithful support through them], THIS I recall to MIND [in reverse concentration the Bible Doctrine needed for application at this time]”
 2. As a believer in Status Quo Super Grace we must be always under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and have maximum Category I Love.
 - i. We must always WANT to do this and MUST consent to desiring Bible Doctrine constantly and to stay in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and continue further on in the Spiritual Life.

Lesson #34 Series # 469 2Tim 2:8

- I. Doctrine of Suffering
 - A. Review 8 points and Add a 9th.
 - B. {The following few points are additions to the notes in the appropriate categories if you want to have the whole realm of these notes let me know and I will send all 3 lessons.}
 1. Categories of christian suffering:
 - i. Disciplinary deserved suffering
 - a. Historic Disaster War, Revolution, depression, etc
 - i) When this is combined with Reversionism you will get additional intensive suffering from disaster etc.
 - ii) When it is combined with carnality there is some suffering which is mitigated by rebound as usual.

iii) When it finds the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace there is NO suffering.

C. Concept of Economic Suffering:

1. Divine Viewpoint is needed to survive economic depression and disaster **Ps 33:17-20**
2. Depression is a part of Divine Discipline for the nation and individual reversionist under the influence of evil **Ps 105;16, Jer 11:22**
 - i. A good depression always changes the attitude of the working man who in periods of great prosperity gets very sloppy about their work and job and it takes a good depression to get them sharp again.
 - ii. Depression also kills off a lot of useless weak people who otherwise act as a cancer to the nation and the depression is the enema of the people in the nation and cleans off those who should be destroyed and if they are not they will multiply like rabbits and shortly thereafter foment a revolution.
 - iii. Because the french government postponed the Depression which should have occurred because of Louis XIV for 100 years they had the french revolution.
 - iv. Many of the rabble who were involved in the revolution would have died off but instead they were kept alive by the government to breed and these were the rabble of the revolution who destroyed many wonderful people and almost destroyed France except for the intervention of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in History through the use of Napoleon Bonaparte.
3. God protects the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in depression **Job 5:20, Rom 8:35**
 - i. More than protection from God the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is BLESSED by God in depression and depression does not hinder divine blessing of the Super Grace believer.
4. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the solution to depression consequently advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is the true basis for restoring the economy **Is 37:30-31.**

D. The Reason Pastor Teachers Suffer:

1. To perpetuate Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **2Tim 2:8**
2. To disseminate Bible Doctrine **2Tim 2:9**
3. To fulfill the grace objectives of Life **2Tim 2:10**

E. Perpetuation of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ

1. Sometimes for the believer and especially the Pastor Teacher, it takes suffering to convert the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul into Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. This suffering has one objective for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God which is in order to bring him back to spiritual reality there MUST be Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - ii. In this passage consent and command are both involved and it is more like a suggestion to the believer and Pastor Teacher.
2. The results of the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ effects the Angelic Conflict and Human History both.
 - i. He has accomplished the strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict with permanent defeat of Satan.
 - ii. He has provided for tactical victories of every believer who is motivated to and accomplishes Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - iii. This resulted in a 3rd royal title for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which resulted in the required formation of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age including all believers.
 - iv. This resulted in the Royal Family of God with consistent Positive Volition being able to achieve Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace which

- resulted in these believers being blessed by God in time and in dying and having special blessing and reward provided for them in eternity.
3. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ died 2x on the cross.
 - i. Substitutionary Spiritual Death as the completion of the necessary function for the salvation potential which was in order to enable each of us to be BORN AGAIN
 - ii. Physical Death because the requirements for the salvation potential for mankind was FINISHED along with the objectives for the 1st advent.
 4. The Seed of David refers and emphasizes the Jewish royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and is an integral part of the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and fulfillment of the Davidic Covenant
- F. Problems in fulfillment of the Davidic Covenant:
1. It is an unconditional covenant and God has promised it without strings and therefore there is nothing we must or can do to enable or facilitate its fulfillment.
 - i. This means that God himself, must fulfill this covenant or God is a Liar which is blasphemous and unthinkable.
 2. This starts with the Curse of Koniah or Jekaniah or Johoiachin **Jer 22:30, 36:30-31.**
 - i. Koniah succeeded his father as the 19th king to rule over Judah which means he was descended from David and Bathsheba who had 4 children who survived.
 - ii. Solomon became the ruling line after David.
 - iii. The line of Nathan is also recorded in Scripture.
 - iv. 19 generations down from David we come to Koniah directly descended from David and Bathsheba through Solomon.
 - v. Koniah reigned for 3 months 10 days in BC 597.
 - vi. He was told he would never have a son who would rule under the Davidic Covenant but he did have several sons.
 - a. He also had a very famous Grandson Zerubable.
 - vii. Koniah had a son Osier who died childless.
 - viii. Koniah had a second son Shelteal who also did not have children but he found a nephew whom he could adopt but he had to go to the other side of the Davidic Line through Nathan and this was Zerubable who led the people in their return to the land.
 - ix. The legal line from Solomon through Koniah was cut off 2x, once by his first son dying childless and his second son having to go the other line of the family of David in order to get a son as Heir to continue the line.
 - x. This was cut off also since there were other descendants who came down from David & Bathsheba through Nathan to Mary.
 - xi. Joseph was descended from the Zerubable side and was the LEGAL but not genetic father.
 - xii. This was the problem in that the question was HOW can the davidic covenant be fulfilled considering the Koniah Curse.
 - xiii. The answer is found that the virgin birth came through Mary in the line of Nathan and also related to Zerubable but now by physical birth.
 3. The heraldry of Mary
 - i. The Line of Mary comes through Nathan and the line of Joseph is through Solomon and indirectly through Nathan with the adoption of Zerubable.
 - a. This is resolved by **1Chron 3:5, Luke 3:31**
 4. The physical death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ without Heirs
 - i. This would appear to hinder the fulfillment of the davidic covenant in that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did not marry and had no children and did not perpetuate the family line any further.
 - a. This is resolved by the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Rom 1:3-4, Acts 26:3-8, 2Tim 2:8**

5. Ascension of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and his absence from Earth
 - i. This is solved by the 2nd advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - ii. He left the earth to acquire his battlefield royalty.
 - iii. He will return to the earth with his battlefield Royal Family of God.
 - iv. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ came as the son of David but not in the direct line of Koniah but he legitimately the son of David and is the one who fulfills the davidic covenant BUT he died and this would seem to cut this off but resurrection resolves this problem and the 2nd advent completes this resolution.
6. The administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline to Israel in order that the race of Jews are spread all over the world.
 - i. At the 2nd advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ he will regather Israel and establish the fulfill the davidic covenant.

G. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ returns to the earth at the 2nd advent the Davidic and Palestinian covenants will be fulfilled to Israel demonstrating that God keeps his word and is faithful and not a liar and incompatible with the Essence of God.

1. It takes 2 advents of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to fulfill the davidic covenant and the link is right in this passage and others the RESURRECTION of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

H. God's promises to Israel WILL BE FULFILLED and in the mean time evangelism goes on and the 2 work together under the genius Grace Plan of God without one hindering the other.

1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ dying on the cross did not hinder the davidic covenant which will be fulfilled at the 2nd advent which will not hinder evangelism during the interim.
2. This verse is a landmark in biblical theology reconciling the function in the Age of Israel with the function in the Church Age and explaining their differentiation and how at the same time THOUGH different they both work together for GOOD.

II. Pastors suffering to disseminate Bible Doctrine:

A. There is nothing which can keep the pastor focused on studying and teaching Bible Doctrine effectively like suffering from time to time.

1. We have come to learn that no member of the Human Race is excluded from suffering.

B. The fact is that Paul suffered current EVIL in his 2nd imprisonment in his soul from the great attack of Evil.

1. At the same time dying grace negates any of this suffering which is attacking Paul.
2. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace means maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and this insulates and totally protects the believer from Suffering from EVIL.
3. Paul was at this time in the Mammertime dungeon and it overhung the forum built by Marshush and the only way for anyone to escape was into a public place which was not escape at all.
4. This dungeon was 12 feet underground and walled on all sides with arched ceilings and was therefore impossible to escape aside from Death.
5. Although Paul was imprisoned next to another prison where the people killed were thrown down a set of steps for the rats to eat this was of no concern for him.
6. There is a contrast between the pressure on Paul from evil and the freedom from Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
7. Bible doctrine has not been confined to this dungeon and being in residence in the soul of Paul and even though his body and soul are confined in this dungeon the doctrine has never been imprisoned and CANNOT be hindered.

C. The point of this verse:

1. Bible Doctrine will advance no matter what is done to believers.
2. The Plan of God moves on with Bible Doctrine moving on no matter what happens to the believers.

3. Paul's imprisonment has not stopped the teaching of Bible Doctrine
 - i. Timothy in Ephesus
 - ii. Titus in Crete
 - iii. Trophimus
4. Paul is about to die and as the greatest genius of the past 2000 years was thought by his contemporary opponents to be the only support for Christianity at that time.
5. Despite the Death of Paul and many other Christians at that time, the Grace Plan of God marches on regardless of who dies, when or how they die.
6. Death does not hinder the teaching of the Word of God and when someone comes along like Paul who can teach it and he dies nothing is stopped or hindered and the Plan of God advances and departure of any person every hinders the Plan of God.
7. NO ONE can in over 2000 years even come close to comparing to the greatness of the Apostle Paul which is in a rarefied atmosphere all its own which will never be touched by anyone at any time yet his death did not change anything with regard to the advance of the Plan of God.
8. There is no such thing as the INDISPENSABLE person in the Plan of God and the only indispensable thing in the Plan of God is the Grace of God.
 - i. Without the Grace of God no believer in all of Human History could advance in the Plan of God at all.
9. The epistles of Paul are being taught as effectively today as they were 2000 years ago.
10. Many missed the Apostle Paul terribly and surely wept profusely at his loss but this does not change anything and when a person of this kind dies you simply close up and move on continuing in the Plan of God.
11. Bible Doctrine will be taught in this and the next and so on to the rapture and in the tribulation and then in the millennium and no one's death and departure will effect the advance of the Plan of God.
12. Sometimes it moves over people sometimes through people and sometimes it simply stomps people into the earth but the Plan of God and Bible Doctrine will go on and nothing will ever stop it.
13. Not all the forces of Satan nor failures of man and no individual's failure can stop or even pause the Plan of God and none of it depends on each of us but ONLY on who and what God is.
14. If you fail in your Spiritual Life the Plan of God will simply roll over you and it will never collapse because of what you or any other person does EVER.
15. We are not indispensable in the Plan of God but simply are here having a helluva great time and we will be here as long as the Lord wants us here and when he is done with us that is the END for us but not the end of the Plan of God.
16. This is simply our graduation to another place where the Plan of God continues.
17. The Plan of God cannot and will not ever fold up no matter who drops dead no matter who or what they happen to be.
- 18.

2Tim 2:8

v8: You should CONSTANTLY, CONTINUALLY fix your thoughts on, call or recall to mind, remember, keep in mind Christ Jesus (title of Battlefield Royalty & Jewish Royalty), as Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, having been resurrected out from deaths, spiritual and physical, on the cross, out from the singular seed of David {Jewish Royalty} according to the Good News of my gospel.

2Tim 2:9

v9: In the sphere of which Gospel, I {Paul} suffer evil like or as a criminal though not, even to the point of being imprisoned but the Word of God has NOT been imprisoned or incarcerated.

- I. Reason for Pressure and Suffering by the Pastor Teacher which fulfill the grace objectives of Life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - A. Pastor Teachers are under extra pressure which no one else receives due to the function of the responsibility in the local church and authority he holds over the congregation.
 1. Satan is aware of how critical it is to KEEP Bible Doctrine IN the pages of the scripture and prevent it at all costs from getting into the souls of believers.
 2. This means that any Pastor Teacher will have additional pressure which no other individuals have.
 - i. There is also provision to handle it also obviously.
 3. This is because his spiritual gift is critical to spiritual growth of the believer In this Church Age
 - B. In the devil's world, which is unfair, the Pastor Teacher will have greater pressure in his life than any other believer and he remains under pressure enduring it because his spiritual gift is the basis for all other believers in the Church Age being able to advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 1. The devil's world is unfair to his own constituents and is much more unfair to those who oppose the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 2. Of all the believers in the world at any given time in history the devil is MORE unfair to those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and if any of these is a pastor then he is even more unfair to those.
 - i. The unfairness of the system of Satan under the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil often reflects his own inability in his phenomenal genius to rule this world
 - ii. He is smarter than any other creature who has ever existed angelic or human he is still not smart enough to keep all of what he wanted under control.
 - iii. He simply is not able to be fair when dealing with masses of people historically and angels going in different directions all at the same time.
 3. In addition the unfairness from the satanic system of this world also comes from his direct opposition to the Laws of Divine Establishment which are the true support for freedom and the Human Race.
 - i. There is no freedom apart from the Laws of Divine Establishment therefore no freedom, privacy, property and even life.
 - ii. Not only is Satan opposed to the Laws of Divine Establishment he is unable to come up with some system which will provide the same things in his system.
 4. ***It is a grossly unfair world into which each of us are born and in which we live out our life and it is especially unfair to really nice people***
 - i. ***These do not survive very well in this world aside from being in liberal organizations filled with bleeding heart do good people or to be one of the down trodden who arouses the sympathy of the bleeding heard do good people even while succumbing to their own self pity.***
 5. ***The sooner we come to realize that Satan is incapable of being fair even to his own followers the sooner we will realize that the only place we will every have FAIRNESS is from GOD therefore the sooner a person gets into Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and uses Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine the sooner it will work out well for you.***
 6. If there is anything which Satan cannot stand it is a FAIR system.
 - i. Any system which has freedom, justice and equity immediately arouses the jealousy of Satan who is a very petty creature.
 - ii. He is the greatest genius of all creatures of all time but is VERY petty and he cannot stand anyone getting fair treatment.
 7. The only way to get fair treatment is OUTSIDE of Satan's plan and in God's Plan but the only way a person can even recognize this and get fairness and justice in your own life is

to get under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and accumulate enough Bible Doctrine in your own life.

- i. The only way to get this Bible Doctrine is from a Pastor Teacher who studies and teaches it and any Pastor Teacher who does this regularly puts himself under the academic pressure which comes from this.
- ii. Consistent daily regular teaching requires an incredible amount of studying which is great pressure and if in his teaching he actually makes a point of so occasionally so people will understand what he is saying this also is excessive pressure.

C. The point is that the key to everything in this life is the transfer of Bible Doctrine from the scripture pages to your soul.

1. So there is a double pressure system for the Pastor Teacher and is why the Pastor Teacher must understand that the PRESSURE he ENDURES is reasonable for anyone who has his gift and USES IT PROPERLY.
 - i. Having the gift of Pastor Teacher does not make a person a Pastor Teacher until he goes through the many years of preparation and discipline prior to getting to the pulpit.
 - ii. There is maximum authority from God in the function of the local church and without the preparation and inordinate discipline the authority will inevitably be abused.
2. In addition to this the academic training must be intense and focused under a system of discipline.
3. Because of this the Pastor Teacher will never be a NORMAL person.
 - i. Most expect him to be a plaster saint but these people are totally disoriented.
 - ii. Others think you simply have to have the ability to talk before a crowd and then get up and say some things and this is it.
4. The pastors often start out as normal but after all the training and discipline of the preparation they become abnormal and are similar to a machine which thinks.

D. If there is pressure on the pastor then there will be pressure on those who then consistently listen to his teaching also.

1. Often in the process of spiritual growth the believer look like a bunch of weird people not going anywhere but the reality is that those under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine are NOT weird and going ahead at full steam to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and having an incredible amount of fun while doing so.

E. (gr) hupomeno – present active indicative

1. Customary present denotes what may be reasonably expected to occur for the Pastor Teacher and then the congregation as pressure.
2. The devil's world is unfair to the believer who is advancing in the Spiritual Life or has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is understandable since he is unfair to those who follow him also.
 - i. There are some who sell out to the devil for his pseudo super grace system and under this receive great temporary blessing.
 - ii. Dr. Faustus is not all mythology but is based on a doctrinal principle that there are some unbelievers and some reversionistic believers who sell out to Satan and he tries to give them a counterfeit Super Grace blessing package of whatever they want most in life.
 - iii. And from time to time he does a fair job at this but in doing this he becomes unfair to others of his constituents.
 - iv. Since the devil has no respect for stupidity it is totally understandable that he cannot actually treat anyone fairly and it is not within his ability or power to do so.

- v. Since he is not and never will be fair it is very obvious that anyone advancing in the Spiritual Life will be on the short end of the stick from Satan.
3. While reversionistic believers are often blessed by Satan ruler of this world the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is often subjected to maximum pressure from the Cosmic Dynasphere
 - i. This is healthy pressure since Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul insulates the believer from this pressure.
 4. To be blessed by the devil is to be under maximum influence of evil and in a state of reversionism.
 5. Pseudo Maturity or Pseudo Super Grace is the devil's counterfeit for the Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo.
 6. Satan in the framework of his great power provides a pseudo Super Grace blessing package for reversionistic believers and unbelievers who serve him.
 - i. Therefore we see some in this world who are wealthy, promoted, prominent, successful because of this counterfeit of God's System.
 - ii. Within the framework of his rulership and power has the ability to reward those who serve him.
 7. Insofar as he is able Satan puts maximum pressure on the Pastor Teacher who communicates Bible Doctrine and the believer who is under consistent Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.
 8. Therefore the customary present tense indicates what you can expect if you have consistent Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.
 - i. For this reason Paul endured some incredible pressure from the satanic systems.
 - ii. The Truly great Super Grace believers who reach Ultra Super Grace and maintain it (2Tim 3), such as Moses and Paul who had maximum pressure and endured it to receive maximum blessing.
 - iii. Outside Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ himself these 2 men endured more pressure than any other person in history.
 9. Active Voice is Paul producing the action of enduring in this verse as did Moses and they stayed under the pressure and did not attempt to leave it.
 - i. Under this pressure they had a greater happiness of any 2 people ever to have lived.
 - ii. These 2 men and others similar to them but not quite as advanced as they are so rare that the rest of us down where we live never really understand them.
 - iii. These 2 men were in fact far beyond the entrance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace where all of us as mature believers receive their 5 categories of blessing.
 - iv. Beyond this is a SUPER Super Grace area we call it Ultra Super Grace where there is a pressure provided by Satan which not many believers ever see let alone have to endure
 - a. "Jesus I know and Paul I know but who are YOU?".
 - v. In this area pressure is continual and maximum and when you are in this pressure you receive Ultra Super Grace blessings which are always wrapped in pressure but are greater blessings than those received at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - a. (Other studies indicated that between Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace there is a great deal of pressure to prevent the believer holding on to Super Grace Status Quo and moving ahead into Ultra Super Grace and this is supported by combining the Logistical Grace of our life support from God with our Super Grace blessings in 4 categories as a merged logistical support for this advance forward movement to Ultra Super Grace.)

- vi. Both MOSES and PAUL were FAMOUS people BEFORE their Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - a. Then as believers when they advanced in the Spiritual Life they became MORE famous and received incredible blessings at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - b. When they moved ahead keeping their Status Quo of Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace their blessings were similar to those received at reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but extremely intensified and completely surrounded by pressure.
 - c. You are then never out from pressure but have intensive blessings at the same time in this Status Quo of SUPER Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 - d. This is a RARE Status Quo for believers.
- 10. Indicative mood is declarative and indicates the action of the verb here from the viewpoint of REALITY.
 - i. It is a real thing that a person can spend his whole life wrapped up in pressure and have greater blessings and happiness than we could ever dream of.
 - ii. This is blessing where Satan cannot get his foot in the door to either interfere with or supplement it.
 - iii. Satan can provide great blessings for his followers but he cannot hold those blessings for them and all that he gives can be lost instantly.
 - a. Satan offers everything which God offers in Super Grace blessings but did not have enough time to PLAN this.
 - b. God planned this whole thing in Eternity Past including Satan's part in it but Satan had to wait until Adam and Ishah both indulged in the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - c. Once Adam and Ishah fell from the Plan of God he could start putting all this together and has had about 5000 years to put his plan into effect.
 - d. He therefore cannot hold on to it and does not have the character to make his blessings to his followers stable in their life.
 - iv. A great example is David who got his Super Grace blessing package and NEVER DID LOSE IT.
 - a. David was a CARNAL believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and his blessings and wealth and success as king never changed but in fact increased.
 - b. David being carnal eventually rebounded after Bathsheba and Uriah and had to rebound but he never lost his ability as king nor his wealth and he never had to recover from reversionism because he never was in reversionism. **Ps 38**
 - c. He did however have great Divine Discipline for the rest of his life but cursing was turned again to blessing by his use of rebound.
 - d. David tried to destroy his Super Grace blessings but it did not depend on him in the first place.
 - e. NEVER get uptight about your habits or character when you finally reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God since in so doing you will slide backward out of Super Grace Status Quo.
 - f. GOD provides the Super Grace blessing package for us and IT DOES NOT, DID NOT AND CANNOT DEPEND ON US.
 - g. WE MUST COME TO THE REALIZATION THAT NOTHING DEPENDS ON US IT ALL DEPENDS ON GOD....."**GRACE**"
 - h. You cannot lose your blessings given by GOD just because you fall into carnality for a while, however, drop into reversionism and see how fast you will lose it all.

- v. This proves a very important point; it is what you think which is important in life and if you are thinking Bible Doctrine then you will glorify God in the Angelic Conflict.
 - a. You may be thinking legalism and be the hardest Christian worker but you are in fact a casualty in the Angelic Conflict.
 - b. All the bleeding heart do good actions and hours put in with outside organizations does count for anything.
 - c. ***Once you realize that what you think is more important than what you do then you are moving in the right direction, and then you will learn that what you do depends on what you think and when you are thinking Bible Doctrine what you do will not be what YOU thought should be done but what GOD wants for you to do.***
- vi. Once you achieve Super Grace the maintenance of this Status Quo is continued Positive Volition and Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine the means by which you got there.
 - a. Then you receive something from God which you cannot lose because God gave it to you in the first place.
 - b. Many people are so stupid to think they can lose what God gives and some even think they can lose salvation by some carnal act.
 - c. If you are one of these then you obviously have a very poor opinion of God and are incredibly arrogant to think you can destroy the salvation for which you cannot and did not do anything to get.
 - i) Salvation is provided by the trinity in toto.
 - ii) You cannot lose salvation because it does not depend on you in the first place so how can you lose something you have which you did nothing to get by doing something “wrong”? YOU CANNOT!
- vii. This same principle is true of Status Quo Super Grace you did not do anything to get Super Grace it is simply the result of your thinking changing because of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul therefore you cannot DO anything to lose it.
 - a. Sin cannot take you out of Super Grace since all people and all believers at all levels of spiritual growth constantly SIN
 - b. 1John 1:8+10 tell us that if a person contends that he no longer sins (Arrogance itself as a sin) he is a LIAR.
- viii. WE MUST UNDERSTAND that God gives us blessings beyond imagination at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and we did nothing to get them and GOD will not remove them UNLESS you reverse the process by which you got to them by neglecting Bible Doctrine.
 - a. You do nothing to GET Bible Doctrine which is MERITORIOUS on your part, DUH GAP == GRACE Apparatus for Perception.
 - b. We are only able to assimilate Bible Doctrine because of a GRACE system.
 - c. David did many things wrong after he reached Super Grace and had at least 5 wives and 20 mistresses while in Super Grace Status Quo and did not lose his position there.
- ix. We must never get mixed up about God and when GOD gives to us he will never take it back.
 - a. Thinking he will is getting God mixed up with Satan who constantly takes from one to give to another.
- 11. The doctrine here is that this is an unfair world because the ruler of this world is incapable to making his rulership FAIR.
 - i. He does not have the essence of fairness.

- ii. NO arrogant person can ever be fair and Satan is the quintessence of arrogance.
 - iii. To the extent that you as a believer are arrogant to that extent you are incapable of exercising authority anywhere.
 - iv. Therefore NO pastor can ever be arrogant and do his job since there is too much authority involved and too much involved in GRACE.
 - v. This is a place where the Pastor Teachers of today have failed because it is an arrogant world today and there is very little Bible Doctrine being taught and very little challenge to Arrogance.
 - vi. Most people do not understand Arrogance at all the confuse it with self confidence.
 - vii. Satan is arrogant like not creature has ever been arrogant and his arrogance has built up over the time in Eternity Past in the course of the Angelic Conflict and over the time in Human History and from the time of his fall to the present day no one is or can ever be as arrogant as Satan.
 - viii. One with that much arrogance can USE that arrogance and he being a genius added to his arrogance means a SUPER WEAPON and he uses it.
 - ix. He first used his arrogance in his genius against the woman in the garden telling her God was unfair when in fact SATAN is the one who is unfair and it is impossible for God to be unfair.
12. WE must never be sorry for anyone who is so blessed by God that even when you wrap up all his blessings in suffering and pressure and difficulty and the blessing is intensified by this then this person is living in an areas and sphere of spiritual growth that is beyond the comprehension of most people.
- i. David did not get to the same level of Moses and Paul but he did demonstrate that when God gives you a blessing package for Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace he is not going to take it away because you are carnal.
 - ii. The ONLY way to lose your Super Grace blessing package is through reversionism which is the replacement of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with EVIL which destroys the Spiritual Life and removes all capacity for life so that God cannot allow you to continue to have the blessings he gave which require capacity for life.
 - iii. EVIL is much more dangerous than sin can ever be because SIN was dealt with by God at the cross and Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but EVIL will not be dealt with until the end of Human History.
 - iv. Meanwhile the insulation for the believer against EVIL is DOCTRINE more and more of it.
- F. Paul had more pressure and disaster and suffering of all categories of anyone in his time and very few people in history have even come close to it.
- 1. He did endure it because it was a very warm blanket of suffering wrapped around his Ultra Super Grace blessings in SUPER Super grace.
- G. Man in the garden had no need of knowledge of Good and Evil and when he ate of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil he ate something which resulted in Spiritual Death which is Good and Evil.
- 1. Spiritual Death is separation from God and it is Good and Evil which separates one from God.
 - 2. When you realize that the TOTAL objective of every aspect of our country and government is to produce Good then the source is obviously EVIL.
 - 3. The only counteraction to this is getting finally to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and receiving your Super Grace blessings which enable you in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to produce Divine Good with a LITTLE BIT on the way there and this is what counters the GOOD produced by everyone else.
 - 4. GOOD was never an issue in the garden under perfect environment of the garden.

- i. Good only became an issue after man and the woman both sinned by eating from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and it in the form of Human Good was the first thing man and woman did after the fall.
 - ii. Sin was not the first thing they did the first thing was an act of good for they at that point instantly KNEW EVIL the plan and policy of Satan the new ruler of the world and did operation fig leaves.
 5. Paul is a spiritual atlas holding up his generation and in addition he is one of the few in history which connects history.
 - i. Timothy is also about ready to take over and hold up his generation.
 - ii. HOWEVER there is an overall stability in history which goes from one super genius Ultra Super Grace believer to another, from Abraham to Moses to Paul and every 2 or 3000 years God brings out someone who is God's person in a special way.
 - a. We are about DUE for another such person.
 - iii. This is a stabilizing rod running all the way through History and occasionally the unbeliever get into this act as well as Caesar and Napoleon did.
 - iv. His endurance of pressure is a source of victory and demonstration of perfect provision of God in Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace to meet every exigency of life.
 6. Paul therefore did not only carry his own generation for history for the believers in that generation but is also demonstrating that there is a Status Quo beyond Super Grace for those who will press on after Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to Ultra Super Grace.
 7. The process of pressure and blessing begins to reverse itself in Ultra Super Grace.
 8. The emphasis in Super Grace is blessing and the ability to meet pressure but in Ultra Super Grace the emphasis is on PRESSURE wrapped around blessing and intensifying that blessing.
 9. To go from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace means you will have your whole life wrapped up in pressure and you will never be free from pressure.
 10. Many Super Grace believers get out from under pressure by riding the wave of blessing above the pressure of life.
 11. This is God providing every once in a while a person who is great and wrapped up in pressure with great blessing BECAUSE OF EVERYONE ELSE.
 12. Paul as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace was a great blessing to his generation and as an Ultra Super Grace believer he was a blessing to EVERY GENERATION SINCE THAT TIME.
 13. This one man has been a greater spiritual blessing to mankind than all others and the greatest writing in the entire scripture is that of Paul in his epistles.
 14. Moses wrote the first 5 books of the bible and they have blessed every generation since then.
 15. Pauline Epistles of the New Testament Scripture have been a blessing so great that even PETER himself being NOT in the same category as Paul indicated that for the complexities of the Spiritual Life and to reach Ultra Super Grace Paul should be studied.
- H. Paul here is giving the greatest encouragement for consistent spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
1. The believer who is consistent in function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and constantly regulates his life WILL reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
 2. If Paul wrapped up in the pressure of Ultra Super Grace all the time can have maximum blessing which very few have ever had and the best of everything so that life is so wonderful that DEATH is simply skipping into heaven and there is no change and can

have deliverance from maximum pressure then they can have deliverance under minimal pressure.

- I. A believer who is under constant Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine will never have any pressure which he cannot bear.
 1. A believer under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine will have pressure which he can endure and have blessing and the secret is happiness and blessing FROM PRESSURE in life.
 2. This is not just blessing from the nice things of your Super Grace blessing package but from pressure and out of pressure.
 3. All believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will have a surpassing grace blessing package but those who reach Ultra Super Grace will have SUPER Surpassing Grace blessings.
 4. Paul in heaven with all those decorations and blessings will thereby glorify God forever in eternity.
 5. This is a demonstration of the power of Bible Doctrine residence in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but sets a pattern for deliverance from pressure from constant Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

2Tim 2:10

v10: **Because of this, For this reason, I, Paul, remain under pressure, endure all categories of suffering (2Cor 11:25-) because of the elect the Royal Family of God, in order that they may attain or acquire, by the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, THE God provided deliverance under pressure of Ultra Super-Grace which deliverance is provided for those who are in Christ Jesus along with eternal glory, Super Surpassing Grace blessings for eternity.**

Lesson #36 Series # 469 2Tim 2:11

- I. Doctrine of Super Grace REVISED: v11-
 - A. Definition & Classification
 1. Grace is all God is free to do for man on the basis of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - i. If God is going to bless man he must be free to do so.
 - ii. To be free to bless man he must not in any way jeopardize or compromise any part of his essence or character.
 2. Because of the complexity of the Essence of God GOD must be consistent and no part of the Essence of God or character of God must ever be Jeopardized or compromised.
 - i. God cannot and does not and did not give mankind anything EVER which compromised his essence.
 - ii. God's freedom to give Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to mankind for Substitutionary Spiritual Death as a potential for salvation is based on the mechanism God found to bless man in Eternity Past.
 3. Propitiation is the work of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross which frees God to bless man under the Grace Plan of God.
 4. Grace is God's freedom and consistency to express his love to believers in the Human Race through grace to man without compromise to any part of his essence.
 5. Under the principle of Grace God provides a series of blessings to man totally apart from man's merit, thinking, abilities, talents or any part of his energies.
 6. Under the policy of grace God gives and man receives, God does all the work and providing while man does all the benefiting and receiving.
 7. Under the concept and policy of grace **Everything** depends on the Essence of God and character of God therefore Grace depends on who and what God is and is all God can do for man and still be consistent with his essence.
 8. Under the mechanics of Grace, man has a relationship with God in 2 categories:
 - i. Before the Fall
 - a. The relationship with God was based on CREATION.

- b. Man was created an adult and started life as an adult and everything had to be provided on that basis including appreciation of all that was provided and this was in the form of the Tree of Lives.
 - i) In addition to the Tree of Lives providing capacity and appreciation for the grace blessings from God the daily bible class taught in the evening in the garden by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ also provided the same.
 - c. An illustration of this is the trees for stimulation of the soul, Good for the EYES; those good for food, Good for the BODY; the one related to the Human Spirit and spiritual sustenance, the Tree of Lives, GOOD for CAPACITY and APPRECIATION of GRACE;
 - d. The tree which was placed as a TEST and presented the plan and policy of Satan, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil where Good and Evil are the policy and plan of Satan, testing volition.
 - e. Good and Evil is not needed by man to have a relationship with God and Good and Evil IS Spiritual Death.
 - f. Man in relationship to God in his creation relationship did not need in any way Good and Evil.
 - g. Evil is the thinking and policy of Satan and representation of his genius and GOOD is the application of that policy to experience and history.
 - h. Many had to choose between these 2 primary trees in the center of the garden and had to do so DAILY and in a positive fashion for the Tree of Lives until the day he went on Negative Volition toward the plan of God and Positive Volition toward the woman and satan's policy and plan.
 - i. Upon going on Negative Volition to the Plan of God immediately he had a complete knowledge of Good and Evil the plan and policy of Satan.
 - j. The ONE single thing he did not need for a creation relationship with God in the garden was the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - k. Once he partook of the forbidden fruit he had instant knowledge of Good and Evil and became spiritually dead.
 - l. Spiritual Death is the knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - m. Satan during the fall of man then took over rulership of the world and man's relationship with God changed.
- ii. After the Fall
 - a. The relationship of man with God after the fall is based only on REGENERATION.
 - b. At the time of the fall Man ate of the forbidden tree and immediately understood Good and Evil and immediately being under the rulership of Satan who took over the world from him, immediately KNOWS Good and does it with operation Fig Leaves.
 - c. Good and Evil are Satan's Plan and Policy and Adam and Ishah could choose for God's Plan of Grace or Satan's Plan of Good and Evil and they chose the latter.
 - d. Man is now no longer starts life as an adult but as an infant with an Old Sin Nature being under Spiritual Death and in this Status Quo has to be "born again" to have a relationship with God
 - e. Therefore there is GRACE provision for man before and after the fall.
9. Therefore grace provision from God to man occurred in 2 categories:
- i. Provision of Grace before the fall
 - a. Relatively simple but not nearly as simple as it appears to most.
 - ii. Provision of Grace after the fall
 - a. Extremely complex as it develops.

10. Under the Plan of God Grace is all that God can do for man from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Eternity totally apart from man's merit, ability, planning, behavior, talent, reaction of sin and evil, response Human Good.
 11. Grace is the genius of God and Bible Doctrine is the revelation and manifestation of that genius.
- B. 6 categories of Grace:
1. Saving Grace is the Substitutionary Spiritual Death work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross whereby man has the potential for eternal life through this function.
 - i. Everything was provided for salvation grace by God in the form of propitiation, redemption, reconciliation, justification etc.
 - ii. **Eph 2:8-9** Salvation is by FAITH alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ALONE through GRACE and man can only enter into salvation totally apart from any human merit, talent, or effort of any kind.
 - iii. Man cannot be saved by any thing which man himself can do in any form or fashion.
 - iv. Faith is the only legitimate nonmeritorious response in man compatible with the principle and policy of Grace.
 - v. The Father planned it
 - vi. The Son executed it at the 1st advent incarnation.
 - vii. The Spirit reveals and empowers it at any time IN TIME.
 2. Living or Logistical Grace
 - i. Is all that the trinity provides by POWER, SECURITY and PROVISION to keep the believer alive in the world ruled by Satan so that the divine objectives in the historical Angelic Conflict can be fulfilled in YOU.
 - ii. Spiritual Provision which is the bible as the text and local church as classroom and Pastor Teacher as the communicator.
 - iii. Temporal provision which includes Food, shelter, clothing, transportation and even friends.
 - iv. Historical Provision which includes the Laws of Divine Establishment whereby the believer is free to grow in grace under the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 3. Super Grace
 - i. It is the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict or Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. This is Experiential Sanctification or the Balance of Residence of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with the Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
 - iii. The believer in Super Grace is a spiritual atlas and as goes the Super Grace believer so goes his generation.
 - iv. Paul held up his generation and after him Timothy did along with Titus and others.
 - v. Many men in Super Grace never go on to Ultra Super Grace such as:
 - a. Daniel, David, Peter, John, etc.
 4. Ultra Super Grace
 - i. This is the sphere of the Angelic Conflict between the unfairness of the world of Satan and total fairness of God to those believers in Super Grace placed under maximum pressure.
 - ii. This is beyond the Status Quo of Super Grace with its package of Super Grace blessings whereby you still have all the 5 categories of blessings completely surrounded by suffering, pressure or adversities which intensifies these blessings and makes them much much better.

- iii. This is where God takes a mantle of constant pressure and opposition from the forces of Satan and evil and wraps it around the Super Grace blessing package of the believer.
 - iv. This is very RARE aspect of the Spiritual Life.
 - v. It is a conflict between the unfairness of the world of Satan vs the Fairness of God to the believer in Super Grace.
 - vi. There are 2 basic categories of Ultra Super Grace:
 - a. The one who is a stabilizer of all of Human History such as Moses and Paul from his time to the end of time.
 - b. One who is a stabilizer of a portion of history especially in a time of historical disaster such as Jeremiah for his nation.
 - vii. (Later studies have indicated that in moving from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace through an intensified period of pressure the Super Grace blessing package is merged with the Logistical Grace support for the believer in time to form Bravo Grace Blessings to sustain the momentum of the believer who continues to advance in the Spiritual Life after Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.)
 - viii. Ultra Super Grace provides all the blessings of Super Grace plus the intensification of these blessing completely enshrouded in maximum pressure and adversity from the satanic forces of evil. (Later called “evidence testing”)
 - ix. **2Tim 2:10** is the principle of Ultra Super Grace.
 - x. **2Tim 3:8-12** is the illustration of Ultra Super Grace.
 - a. Moses and Paul are 2 illustrations of Ultra Super Grace believers who are spiritual atlases who sustain their generation but also are historical stabilizers for all of Human History.
 - b. Their lives after Ultra Super Grace were continually shrouded with pressure and suffering but with incredible blessing surrounding them.
 - c. Moses had 80 years of it, Paul not as long but just as intense.
 - d. These believers were on a much higher plane of Spiritual Life and they were a stabilizing factor in history and stabilize EVERY Generation of believers who are under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.
 - xi. These men wear the highest honor and dignity which can come to any member of the Human Race to wear the shroud of continually adversity and suffering and all the while have the phenomenal blessing of Ultra Super Grace.
 - xii. Ultra Super Grace is an intensification of blessing while under intense pressure from Satan and is a demonstration of the power of Doctrine and exploitation of the power of Bible Doctrine to the maximum and is one which comes ONCE in history about ever 2000 years.
 - xiii. **2Tim 3:8-12 is one of the greatest illustrations of all the forces of evil from both Satan, demons, and reversionistic believers and unbelievers putting pressure on one man.**
 - xiv. Paul in Ultra Super Grace had the power to undergo and sustain opposition, criticism, annoyance without ever giving up or succumbing to cowardice or stupidity.
 - xv. The Lord delivers from all pressure in Ultra Super Grace.
 - xvi. There are VERY FEW believers who ever reach Ultra Super Grace and many Super Grace believer do not ever get this far.
5. Dying Grace
- i. Is greater blessing in dying and passing from time to eternity than all the blessings of life.
 - ii. In addition it means leaving behind great blessings to friends, loved ones family etc.

6. Surpassing Grace
 - i. The blessings and rewards and decorations for believers in Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace and is the quintessence of glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. **Eph 2:7**

C. Definition:

1. Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace are conditions of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in time.
2. The nomenclature is derived from the correct translation of **James 4:6**
3. Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace is related to the power of God and a demonstration of maximum power in Grace **Eph 1:19**
 - i. The surpassing magnitude of the omnipotence of God:
 - a. His Operational Power of God the Holy Spirit
 - b. His Ruling Power of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 - i) These 2 put together compose the balance of residence or Super Grace Status Quo for the believer.
 - c. His Inner Power is the ability of God the Father to make the plan work and provide maximum blessing for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
4. Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace is described as PURSUING GRACE **Ps 23:5-6, Eph 1:6**
 - i. David as a Super Grace believer was given by God great wealth greater than any other person in history and this wealth was increased by his son as a part of David's Super Grace blessing.
 - ii. David never left Super Grace Status Quo and demonstrates the difference between being CARNAL and REVERSIONISTIC and he tells about his carnality Divine Discipline in **Ps 38** but had instant recovery when he rebounded and never LOST his Super Grace Status Quo.
 - iii. The discipline on the believer in Super Grace when carnal is OBVIOUSLY there and intense but when a believer is in reversionism his life is intensified compound of misery piled on misery until he dies the Sin Unto Death and SOLOMON is an illustration of this Divine Discipline for reversionism, Ecclesiastes and Song of Solomon.
 - iv. David never lost his Super Grace Status Quo from the time he became King for the whole rest of his life, but he never reached Ultra Super Grace.
 - v. Jeremiah may have reached Ultra Super Grace, Abraham never was in Ultra Super Grace either.
 - vi. You as a believer can go on and on in the Spiritual Life after Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace but VERY FEW ever make it to Status Quo Ultra Super Grace
 - vii. Ultra Super Grace is a Status Quo where God throws a mantle of blessing around the individual says to Satan Fire at Will and you will not shake him and he will have the same and even greater happiness than before.
 - viii. This is the HIGHEST accolade which God can give to any human being.
 - ix. Ultra Super Grace still sins as well, **1John 1:10** and all believers all sin.
 - x. Super Grace is defined in **Eph 1:6** as the pursuit of the believer by GRACE.
5. Super Grace & Ultra Super Grace Blessing are beyond human imagination **Eph 3:20-21**
6. **1Tim 1:14**, Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace are said to be ABUNDANT or SUPER ABOUNDING.
7. By definition Super Grace is the adult stage of the Spiritual Life in the Royal Family of God, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

8. Super Grace is maximum glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ complimenting his strategic victory of the Angelic Conflict with the tactical victory of the believer in time.
 9. Super Grace is the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God while Ultra Super Grace is that maximum growth and blessing attended by maximum suffering which intensifies the blessing, it is a robe or mantle of opposition to the maximum accompanied by better blessing.
 - i. Possibly what was referred to as evidence Testing.
 10. Super Grace is where the normal function of the Royal Family of God Priesthood and divine good BEGINS.
- D. Synonyms for Super Grace:
1. Theological == Super Grace == **James 4:6**
 2. From the standpoint of Bible Doctrine Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul (heb) Chakmah, (gr) Epignosis which represents the Super Grace life.
 - i. Super Grace is related to maximum Chakmah or Epignosis in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 3. Priestly == Altar in the soul == **Heb 13:10**
 4. Building == Edification Complex of the Soul **Eph 4:12 & 16** When a believer completes construction of his Edification Complex of the Soul he has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and has therefore reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo.
 5. Sanctification == Godliness == **1Tim 6:3-6, 2Pet 1:3**
 6. Chemical == Salt of the earth or land == Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believer being a blessing to his nation or others by association.
 7. Crucifixion == Take up your cross == **Matt 10:38, Mk 8:34, Luke 9:33, 14:27**
 - i. This is the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God resulting in maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Status Quo Super Grace.
 8. 3 Military
 - i. Put on the Full armor from God == **Eph 6:11-18**
 - ii. Follow the Colors to the high ground == **Heb 12:1-2**
 - iii. Establishing a command post in the soul == **Col 2:5-8**
 9. Central Control system == Inner Strength == **Eph 6:10**
- E. Blessings of Super Grace:
1. It is important to understand all these categories of Super Grace blessings since in Ultra Super Grace they are intensified beyond human understanding and the only one with a Frame of Reference for it is the one for whom it is provided.
 2. Category I == Spiritual
 - i. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ maximum Category I Love
 - ii. Sharing the Happiness of God
 - iii. Capacity for every category of life and love and blessing and freedom, and the Grace Plan of God.
 - iv. Ability to face any suffering in life
 - a. For the Ultra Super Grace believer intensification of facing and handling suffering comes when they wear the shroud or mantle of maximum, unremitting, non terminating suffering.
 - b. These all are intensified when a believer reaches Ultra Super Grace Status Quo.
 - v. In Ultra Super Grace these are all intensified under maximum pressure and persecution from satanic forces of evil is a phenomenal wonderful thing and has

an impact inwardly for the individual believer and also outwardly and historically it has repercussions for at least 2000 years or more for those involved.

3. Category II == Temporal
 - i. Wealth
 - ii. Success
 - iii. Promotion or advancement in whatever sphere you are in.
 - iv. Prosperity in every category
 - a. Social
 - b. Sexual
 - c. Professional
 - d. Technical
 - e. Mental with increased concentration and perspicacity in any field which also increases your interest and capacity for life.
 - f. Cultural = music drama art literature
 - g. Establishment = freedom, privacy, possession of property, protection from crime
 - h. Military = blessing in both field and combat situations.
 - i. Prosperity in Economic Disaster
 - j. Leadership Dynamics
4. Category III = Association Blessings
 - i. Those in the periphery of the Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believer are blessed by their association or relationship see TIMOTHY.
 - a. In the case of the Ultra Super Grace believer this blessing is greatly intensified.
 - ii. 2 Categories of Blessing:
 - a. Directly from God to the one in association with the Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believers.
 - b. Direct blessing from the Super Grace believer who simply shares his blessings.
 - c. Peripheral Areas – 5 minimum
 - i) Loved ones – Right Man, Right Woman, Friends, Family
 - ii) Business – any organization or business and associates including investors.
 - iii) Social – any organizations like clubs, fraternities, teams.
 - iv) Spiritual – for the local church, mission, or other believers.
 - v) Geographic – neighborhood, city, county, state, nation.
 - a) This is the salt of the earth principle where by the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers preserve their nation from historical disaster.
5. Category IV = Historical Impact Blessings
 - i. This is the principle that the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believer is a spiritual atlas who carries his generation in Human History.
 - ii. In addition the Ultra Super Grace believer becomes a stabilizer for all future historical generations or for a limited historical period as with Jeremiah.
 - a. For Moses this stabilizing has been for some 4000 years and for Paul a mere 2000 years.
 - iii. This is the Super Grace believer being “on the right side of history” and as such supports his generation in history.
 - a. Except in special cases of blessing by association, blessing is not perpetuated from one generation to another and every generation must stand or fall on the basis of its own Super Grace believers remnant or lack thereof.

- b. The reversionist in contrast is always on the wrong side of history.
 - c. This sets up the doctrinal pattern of spiritual heritage **2Tim 1:5**
 - d. Only Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers are on the right side of history and even men of superior genius and ability like Caesar and Napoleon while having maximum impact on history under the principle of their relationship with Laws of Divine Establishment, their genius was not ever appreciated by their contemporaries nor historians but for a few who are objective.
 - e. When this occurs with the unbeliever their genius is never appreciated by their contemporaries and they are usually surrounded by IDIOTS and their end is always tragic and unfortunately they end in the Lake of Fire.
 - i) Napoleon & Julius Caesar
6. Category V = Dying Blessing
- i. Every member of the Royal Family of God in time has a choice in his relationship with God
 - a. Divine blessing through Grace which is perfectly wonderful
 - b. Divine Discipline through grace which is totally miserable.
 - ii. Attitude toward Bible Doctrine is the determining factor in which way the believers life will progress.
 - iii. Both alternative paths have a terminating point.
 - iv. For the reversionistic believer after a lifetime of misery and pain from Divine Discipline his life is terminated by INTENSIFIED Divine Discipline and God puts on this believer the mantle of intensified Divine Discipline the antithesis of the mantle of opposition with blessing of the Ultra Super Grace believer.
 - v. This is the Sin Unto Death by which many believer leave this world while very few depart as Ultra Super Grace believers.
 - vi. For the Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believer their end of life is under the principle of Dying Grace and as a believer in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace he has the BEST of life and when he dies he receives that which is BETTER than the best of life resulting in surpassing grace for eternity which is even better than this.
 - vii. The Ultra Super Grace believer like Moses and Paul in addition leaves behind a heritage which is blessing and stability for all generations of Human History.
 - viii. The Ultra Super Grace believer enjoys these incredible blessing more because they are enshrouded by suffering.
 - ix. There are therefore 2 categories of believers enshrouded by suffering, the Ultra Super Grace believer who is sustained by blessing and the reversionist who leaves life under the Sin Unto Death or maximum Divine Discipline.
 - x. There is the system of Pseudo Blessing given by Satan to believers and unbeliever who follow his system of Evil and Divine Good but these blessings are destroyed by the suffering of the Sin Unto Death.

Lesson #37 Series # 469 2Tim 2:11

- I. Freedom through Military victory:
 - A. Freedom in our nation is the result of 2 things:
 - 1. Occasionally existence of believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
 - 2. Principle and function of the Laws of Divine Establishment especially freedom through military victory.
 - B. James H Fields, 1st Lt. US Army, 10th Armored Infantry, 4th Armored Division, Rashkur France, 27 Sept 1944.

- II. This is the Devil's World and he has had command and rulership of this world at the Fall of Adam and Ishah.
- A. Prior to this the world was ruled by Man, Adam and at this time the woman and man were created as adults in a CREATION relationship with God.
1. God provided for them all in grace and this is always his plan where any relationship exists
 2. This means God does all the providing and with regard to this he provided all the trees in the garden for man for his soul, body and appreciation and capacity for grace.
 3. In the middle of the garden were 2 trees which represented the issue of the Angelic Conflict.
 4. The Tree of Lives which provided CAPACITY to appreciate Environment, Grace and God and his Plan.
 - i. This represented the Grace Plan of God and provision of God.
 5. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was Satan's Plan and Policy
 - i. There were 2 things which man did not and does not need in relationship with God and that is Good and Evil.
 - ii. Good and Evil represent the genius plan of Satan in the Angelic Conflict.
 - iii. Evil is the thinking and GOOD is the application of that thinking to any given situation.
 6. When man ate from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and became under Spiritual Death this is characterized by a Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 7. Man died spiritually at the moment of partaking of the forbidden fruit and at that instant he knew Good and Evil.
 8. Immediately knowing Evil he immediately went out to perform Human Good in operation fig leaves.
 9. From that time on Good and Evil is the plan and policy of Satan.
- B. Now that Satan rules this world and man no longer comes into the world as an adult but as an infant the relationship between man and God is now one of REGENERATION and we must be "Born Again".
- C. Grace continues in several categories now for man: (A few added by me FF)
1. Salvation Grace
 2. Living or Logistical Grace
 3. Super Grace
 4. Bravo Grace (combination of Logistical Grace and Super Grace blessings)
 5. Ultra Super Grace
 6. Dying Grace
 7. Surpassing Grace
 8. Charlie Grace (For all reversionistic believers in time)
- D. Despite Satan being ruler of this world and having magnified the concepts of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil into a fantastic system by which he controls MUCH of the population of the world including many BELIEVERS in reversionism there is still an answer and solution to this situation.
- E. Review the Doctrine of Super Grace last lesson
1. Every generation makes its own way in this life and no one does anything to make a better world for the next generation.
 2. It is impossible for any individual, group or nation to do things during its generation to make a better world for the next generation.
 3. **EVERY GENERATION STANDS ON ITS OWN BASED ON THE NUMBER OF SUPER GRACE BELIEVERS IN THAT GENERATION AND THEIR GEOGRAPHIC DISTRIBUTION.**
 - i. (FF) I have said this many times since I, being here in western PA without much contact with other believers who are under Positive Volition toward Bible

Doctrine believe that we of the Berachah Battalion and those other believers who have been positive to Bible Doctrine consistently under other Pastor Teachers are scattered around the nation ELSE the nation would have fallen long long ago.

4. Believers like Paul who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and also move ahead beyond that to Ultra Super Grace are a blessing to their own generation and a stabilizing influence for all of Human History.
 - i. These believers have their Super Grace blessing package intensified, enhanced and expanded when they reach Ultra Super Grace and it is wrapped in a mantle of opposition or adversity without such suffering ever diminishing the blessing and happiness of the believer.
 5. Paul, Moses, Jeremiah,?? Abraham?? as believers and Caesar and Napoleon as unbelievers in this category of stabilizing and altering history and both of these men in order to have impact on history had to break from the functions of Good and Evil and were VERY Strong in the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - i. These men were not free from carnality but neither was Moses, Paul or Jeremiah.
 - ii. Carnality is NOT an issue and Caesar was a Hell Raiser and very carnal as was Napoleon.
 - iii. These 2 men however were very establishment minded and set up establishment systems which were perpetuated in history
 - iv. They died tragically as any other person who has no relationship with God and were misunderstood in their own day and still are today.
 - v. They did however superimpose their fantastic genius on their period of history and affected history thereafter.
 6. Very few people ever reach Ultra Super Grace and we are about due to have another one since it seems to be needed in history about every 1500 to 2000 years.
- F. Paul has received the highest mantle which can belong to any believer in time of Total and complete persecution and unremitting pressure from Satanic forces of evil.
1. Being in Ultra Super Grace this merely intensifies the blessing of this believer balancing out the pressures on him.
 2. Wearing this mantle of opposition and adversity is the highest honor which can exist in the Spiritual Life and is one of great pressure on the believer from all satanic forces and genius from both angelic and human beings.
 3. Moses, Jeremiah and Paul had an intensity of blessing beyond the comprehension of most people.
 4. God has only bestowed and permitted under the permissive control of Human History this Accolade to exist in the case of very few believers and therefore they must be distinguished from other believers.
- G. Now Paul begins to quote from his favorite hymn and this is the ONLY hymns ever quoted in the New Testament Scripture 1Tim 1:15, 3:1, 4:9, Tit 3:8, 2Tim 2:11-13 the longest quotation from this hymn.
1. It is possible that Paul wrote the lyrics of the hymn and contains 4 1st class conditions which summarize the entire paragraph we have studied and cap it off.
 2. The lyrics are designed to appeal to the Right Lobe of the mentality of the soul in any hymn or song
 3. The music is what appeals to the emotion
 4. If the person is in Emotional Revolt of the Soul then the lyrics are forgotten and the music stimulates the emotion.
 5. If the person is functioning normally then you have both good lyrics and great music.
- H. The title of the Hymn (gr) "Pistos Ho Logos" == Faithful the Word or Faithful the Doctrine
1. In each of the 5 quotations of this hymn quoted in the New Testament Scripture there is some relationship between the lyrics and the principle of the faithfulness of Bible Doctrine.

2. The first segment as a conditional clause means that all members of the Royal Family of God are in the Plan of God forever
 - i. This is whether you want to be in it or not
 - ii. Faith in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ puts you in the Plan of God and keeps you there and nothing can take you out of it for time and eternity.
 - iii. The difference is that in time you have choices and your volition must be used to decide:
 - a. Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine continued consistently will bring you into the route of blessing from God and the GRACE glory road to glorify God
 - i) This includes all the stages and categories of Grace.
 - b. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine then God cannot express his LOVE in GRACE BLESSING so he must do so in the cursing of Divine Discipline.
 - i) This occurs for carnality and in 3 stages of Divine Discipline for reversionism.
 - iv. You are in the Royal Family of God in time and have this choice and we can see the Love of God as Divine Discipline (Heb 12:6) or as Blessing (1John 4:19)
3. Being Dead with Christ from Baptism of God the Holy Spirit putting us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ under the principle of positional truth means we must REJECT the principles and concepts of Good and Evil.
 - i. It is impossible for us to reject Good and Evil because Satan is vastly smarter than we will ever be.
 - ii. Therefore the only way to reject the plan and policy of Satan is the constant and consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception whereby we accumulate Bible Doctrine the THINKING OF CHRIST into our souls and move away from the plan and discern the fallacy of it.
4. EVERY FUNCTION of the government of the United States of America since the 1970's and possibly before is Good and Evil.
 - i. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil now lives in Washington and it grows and flourishes.
 - ii. We have been for many years since our bicentennial anniversary and before we are in one of the greatest "white wash" periods of history and have gone from TOTAL GREATNESS to TOTAL DEGRADATION.
 - iii. If your government stopped functioning in its entirety we would immediately advance a 50% solution and if our elected representatives would DO NOTHING we would be 1000% better off.
 - iv. No laws are ever passed which is NOT a function of Good and Evil and every law passed is a destruction of freedom and everything important in life.
 - v. All laws on busing, gun control, welfare systems, bureaucracies, and all government functions with the possible exception of the Department of Defense is functioning under concentrated Evil.
 - vi. Therefore we are as a nation and society not even aware that we have a problem (not totally true today) and people simply choose between 2 forms of satanic Good and Evil.
 - vii. Christian Fundamentalists are filled with Good and Evil and every function outside the local church is Good and Evil and every denomination is Good and Evil and they are in fact WEAK churches and use each other to lean on like crutches.
 - viii. ONLY the local church where true Bible Doctrine is taught is free from Good and Evil.

- ix. WE MUST HAVE A REMNANT OF BELIEVERS IN SUPER GRACE OR WE HAVE NO CHANCE OF SURVIVAL AT ALL.
- I. 2000 years ago it is true that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ died a Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross.
- 1. The doctrine of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is what applies here.
 - 2. The Holy Roller Christians have taken with their Good and Evil and distorted this and when you apply Good and Evil to the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit you get vicious evil people involved in speaking in “tongues”.
 - 3. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is retroactive positional truth and the significance of this is that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ rejected in the garden the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and he told the original parents that the day they partook of that tree DYING they would eventually DIE.
 - 4. Angels looked down from heaven observing the appeal segment of the angelic conflict trial and physical death of the participants was a NON ISSUE for them.
 - i. Physical death was not an issue in the garden and is not an issue NOW.
 - ii. When Adam and Ishah sinned they immediately died spiritually and were immediately saturated as adults with Good and Evil
 - iii. They immediately took their evil principles and put on clothing of fig leaves and this is GOOD.
 - 5. When you eat from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil you have no relationship with God
 - i. Believers in reversionism have no fellowship with God BECAUSE they are eating constantly from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and it saturates their souls.
- J. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit enters us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in his death and at the right hand of God the Father.
- 1. This is historical reality and therefore TRUTH.
 - 2. The other part of positional truth is that we will LIVE eternally with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 3. This is a statement of fact under the normal circumstances of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and if we live with him we will do so FOREVER as Royal Family of God.
 - 4. If the Royal Family of God is left on this earth we are left here to produce something never before produced while looking like royalty, which is the Status Quo Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
 - 5. When a person is born into aristocracy they are born an infant and know nothing of his aristocracy and the aristocracy trains its own to act properly like aristocracy.
 - i. Aristocracy can therefore only be discerned and recognized AFTER THE TRAINING.
 - 6. We are “BORN AGAIN” aristocracy and may not look like it, act like it, or think like it and the TRAINING will bring us to Super Grace Status Quo which is the first manifestation of aristocratic principles.
 - 7. If there is anything which Satan cannot tolerate in his kingdom is an aristocracy related totally to GOD.
 - 8. There has never been before in the family of God an aristocracy until the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit and WE are aristocracy in the Royal Family of God and will never act, think or look like aristocracy until after the training.
 - 9. The principle of aristocracy is SUPERIORITY.
 - 10. There never has been equality in the Human Race and ever will be and never has there been a generation in Human History where Aristocracy has not risen from its own historical superiority.
 - 11. There always has been and always will be an aristocracy in every generation.

12. Some have it and some don't and those who have it drive ahead in every generation and those who do not fall by the wayside.
 13. Here however for the Royal Family of God is an aristocracy which goes above all others and we see a few manifest in any generation and in some more than a few but it all depends on attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
 14. The Royal Family of God Aristocracy is not manifest until the believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and this says that this person has enough Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to demonstrate to all satanic forces of evil in this world that he can glorify God in the Angelic Conflict.
- K. Being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is what gives us Status Quo Royal Family of God and we do nothing for it but God the Holy Spirit does it all for us.

III. Doctrine of the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit:

A. Definition:

1. This is one of 5 ministries of God the Holy Spirit at our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we received 39 irrevocable assets for our Spiritual Life and 5 of these are the responsibility of God the Holy Spirit.
 - ii. Regeneration which is entrance into the FAMILY of GOD
 - iii. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit which is entrance into the Royal Family of God.
 - iv. Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit which is entrance of God the Holy Spirit into the body of the believer as the escutcheon of the Royal Family of God.
 - v. Sealing of God the Holy Spirit which is the guarantee of security and royalty forever.
 - vi. Reception of a spiritual gift which becomes the function of royalty.
2. This is the salvation ministry of God the Holy Spirit which enters each believer at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. This is NOT experiential in any way.
3. This union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is permanent and is a permanent identification which distinguishes Christianity from religion and the Royal Family of God from the family of God (Believers of all other dispensations).
 - i. The Church Age is inserted in Human History to bring out the Royal Family of God for the battlefield royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - ii. When this Royal Family of God is completed it will be removed from the earth by the rapture of the church and there never again will be the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
 - iii. This enters every Church Age believer into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. **1Cor 12:13**

B. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is one of at least 7 bible baptisms **Heb 6:2**

1. Baptism means IDENTIFICATION and there are REAL
2. Real baptisms are ACTUAL identifications
 - i. Moses 1Cor 10:2, Moses identified with the cloud and the Jewish people passed through the red sea and this was a DRY actual baptism.
 - ii. The Cross is the baptism of the cup and the cup is used and portrayed as being filled with the sins of the world and this was poured out on Christ on the cross and he was identified with and judged for all our sins Matt 20:22
 - iii. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit identification with and placement into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iv. Baptism of FIRE where the unbelievers of the tribulation identify with fire Matt 3:11, Luke 3:16
3. Ritual Baptisms are representative Identification where WATER is used to represent some principle of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Water Baptism

- a. Prior to the completion of the canon of scripture the believers in the Church Age were baptized.
 - b. There is no evidence that water baptism was to be perpetuated beyond AD96 though it was.
 - c. Water baptism by placing the believer in water was teaching the believer by ritual that he was identified with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in his death and when he came up from the water this was identification with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the right hand of God the Father.
 - d. This was a teaching aid until the canon of scripture was completed, Acts,
 - e. There is only one reference to it in the epistles and Water Baptism was a source of fighting, antagonism and bickering as it always has been the basis of water baptism is totally obscured and never makes anyone better but is simply a teaching aid.
 - ii. Baptisms of John
 - a. The principle there was the wonderful kingdom of God and those who believed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ were identified with the kingdom of God and this ritual taught them that.
 - iii. When Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was baptized by John the meaning was different and the water represented the Plan of God and the identification and compliance of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ with it.
- C. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit did not occur until the Church Age.
- 1. The Church Age did not exist until the ministry of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was completed and he prophesied that the church was a future factor **Matt 16:18**
 - i. It was on the rock of Christ Jesus that the church is built and NOT PETER.
 - ii. Peter was a perfect illustration that a jackass can succeed if they live long enough and sincere people can make it to Super Grace but it is very difficult.
 - 2. The church was formed by the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit prophesied many times by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **Acts 1:5** and **Acts 11:15-17** was the fulfillment of this prophecy.
- D. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit occurs at the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God. **Acts 11;17, Eph 4:5, Gal 3;26-28**
- 1. Baptism of God the Holy Spirit occurs for all believers WHEN they believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in an instant of time.
 - 2. The victorious experience of not growing in the Spiritual Life or even being saved until you recognize Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as your Lord is HERESY.
 - 3. In the Royal Family of God there is no racial, social nor gender distinctions.
- E. The Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is related to both Retroactive and Current Positional Truth **Rom 6:3-5**
- 1. We are the beneficiaries of the Grace of God from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God as Living or Logistical Grace with temporal and spiritual benefits in order that we can walk in a life totally free from the supervision of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and the ruler of this world and free from his genius and from legalism and Human Good and all the satanic principles of evil and have a soul liberated from EVIL of all kinds.
 - 2. We reject the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil in the death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and therefore accept the newness of life taught in his resurrection, **Col 2;10-12**
- F. Conclusion:
- 1. therefore the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is that unique ministry of God the Holy Spirit whereby at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God every Church Age believer is entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forming the Royal Family of God.
 - 2. While God the Holy Spirit regenerated all Old Testament Scripture believers at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and continues to do so in the Church Age he adds at the

same time the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit whereby to regeneration is added Status Quo of Royal Family of God.

- i. Adam, Ishah, David, Abraham, etc etc all became family of God but NOT Royal Family of God.
3. Therefore the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit is the means of forming the Royal Family of God and / or the body of Christ.

2Tim 2:11

v11: True and Faithful the Doctrine or Faithful the Word, “for you see, if, we have died with or along with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, (Retroactive Positional Truth from Baptism of God the Holy Spirit) and we have, our sins being judged in Christ on the cross, at the same time also, then we shall also live with him.

Lesson #38 Series # 469 2Tim 2:12

- I. Super Grace continued
 - A. (to be expanded later).
 - B. Super Grace is the objective of the Spiritual Life for the believer
 - C. Super Grace must have Top priority as in Philippians 3:4-8
 - D. God is waiting to provide Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace blessings Is 30
 - E. Heb 12:1-3 is the command to advance to Super Grace Status Quo.
 - F. Importance of Retaining the Objective of Super Grace:
 1. Getting to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo is one thing then the believer must retain this objective. **Phil 3:12-14**

Phil 3:12 (Getting from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace NOT getting to Super Grace)

v12: Not that I have before now, already received, obtained or attained permanent Ultra Super-Grace status nor have I before now, already reached the objective of Ultra Super-Grace BUT now then I keep on pressing and driving on in hot pursuit, closing in, if also I might gain, overtake, seize, grasp, take possession, accomplish and attain and hold the high ground of Super-Grace on account of which high ground objective of Super-Grace I am also seized and held, overtaken by Christ, Jesus

Phil 3:13

v13: Members of the Royal Family of God, I even I consider, estimate or evaluate myself even myself objectively as not yet to have attained, overtaken, seized, reached and held the deliberate objective according to the specified Norms and Standards of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, the ultimate of Pleroma, Ultra Super-Grace however, now one thing on which I concentrate, constantly forgetting or deliberately assigning to oblivion those things which have already happened and lie behind, the things of the great sins related to reversionism as a handicap, and constantly and eagerly vigorously pursuing advancing or straining or pressing toward, the front or what lies ahead, through the function of Grace Apparatus for Perception as the Ultra Super-Grace objective.

Phil 3:14

v14: I keep on advancing pressing and closing in toward the next objective of Ultra Super-Grace across no man’s land, for the purpose of reward, wealth and success in paragraph Super-Grace 2 & 3 blessings and decoration belonging to that upward or highest station in life of potential blessing at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ from that self same God, God the Father by means of Christ Jesus.

2. Reversionism was allowed 1 time for each of these believer who reached Ultra Super Grace Moses, Jeremiah, and Paul
 - i. They had 1 experience in reversionism and in reversion recovery and each in recovery went back into Super Grace Status Quo and held and advanced further into Ultra Super Grace.
3. There are 2 reasons why the objective of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace MUST be held
 - i. To reach the further objective of Ultra Super Grace
 - ii. To enter into the blessing of dying grace from Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
- G. Issue of the Love of God in time related to this subject.
- H. Historical illustrations of Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace:
 1. Men who never reached Ultra Super Grace but who were fantastic Super Grace believers:

- i. Abraham who emphasizes sexual prosperity of Super Grace which became the basis for the new race of the Jews.
 - ii. Joseph who emphasizes the promotional aspect of the Super Grace believer but he was not in Ultra Super Grace.
 - iii. David representing Super Grace promotion, prosperity and leadership and demonstrating the fact that if you keep up on Bible Doctrine and recover from carnality you can hold the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and benefit from dying grace as David did dying lying between 2 virgins to keep him warm.
 - iv. Isaiah was the ultimate in Super Grace communication but was not in Ultra Super Grace.
 - v. Daniel emphasizes Super Grace promotion and influence outside the land but never was Ultra Super Grace.
2. There are 3 well established cases of the Ultra Super Grace believer in Human History:
- i. Moses where the intense blessing and national leadership was wrapped up in a mantle of constant pressure and opposition and persecution from all the forces of evil of Satan demons, unbeliever and believers in his own organization and still he had the most intensified happiness ever to be imagined.
 - ii. Jeremiah enshrouded in a mantle of pressure, persecution and opposition he was blessed in time of total national disintegration and his blessing became a stabilizing rod for the next generation of young who would be in captivity and the generation after that who would return to the land.
 - iii. Paul who received maximum pressure, persecution and opposition from satanic forces such as very few people in all of Human History and as the Demons said quoting from Acts “Jesus I know, Paul I know, but who are you”?
 - a. He was the greatest genius communicator of all time and probably the most unusual person ever to walk on the earth.
- I. Promotion principle of Super Grace:
1. **IF GOD DOES NOT PROMOTE YOU THEN YOU ARE NOT PROMOTED.**
 2. God promotes the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace as part of his Super Grace blessing package **Ps 84**

Psalm 84

v0: To the one having authority or preside over all musicians: upon The Gittith the happy harp of Gath. A Psalm of the Sons of Korah.

v1: How great is the Rapport of your Loved dwelling places or tabernacles or Bible Doctrine, Oh Lord of the Armies (freedom from Military Victory necessary for learning Bible Doctrine)

v2: My soul has an intense and insatiable yet fulfilled yearning and desire with Positive Volition for the courts or tabernacles for learning doctrines of the Lord, my right lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of my Soul and my body or my Soul Residence rejoice with inner happiness and overt exaltation over or has Occupation with the Person of the Living God Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ giving Capacity for Life

v3: Therefore the Sparrow (The Most Helpless Bird), has found a house (Grace blessing analogous to the believer finding the Right Pastor Teacher and Bible Doctrine), and the swallow a nest for herself where she may lay her young (helpless vulnerable creatures receiving blessing from God analogous to the believer in the LC), even your altars (Right Pastor Teacher teaching Bible Doctrine) Oh Lord of the Armies (Freedom necessary for Spiritual Growth) my King (Humanity of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ) and My God (Deity of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ)

v4: Inner Happiness' to those who continue to dwell in your house or Bible Doctrine (Daily function of Grace Apparatus for Perception for Spiritual Advance), they (believers who make Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God) will still or always be praising you (Occupation with the Person of Christ). Selah (relaxed attitude of the believer while God does the work)

v5: Happiness' to the mature believer whose power is in you or in Bible Doctrine, in whose right lobe Stream of Consciousness of the Soul are the highways to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace,

v6: passing through the valley of no man's land or tears they make or convert it to the fountain of springs or highest delight or pleasures of life (Pleroma Believer). The Rains or Grace of God in Bible Doctrine in the word of God also saturates the Right Lobe of Stream of Consciousness of the Soul in blessing

v7: They are promoted or advance spiritually from Strength of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace Strength, each one in Zion is seen, promoted and blessed by Elohim, God himself (Logistical Grace as bravo grace)

v8: Oh Lord God of the Armies (freedom's basis) hear my prayer, listen oh God of Jacob,

v9: Behold our shield, Oh God and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, oh God, therefore regard with respect your commissioned or appointed ones,

v10: for one day in your court to learn Bible Doctrine through Grace Apparatus for Perception is better than a thousand Days in occupation with the details of life or Reversionism, therefore I would rather choose to be a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as a door keeper in the house of the Lord than to dwell with emphasis on every detail of life in the tents of pleasures of Evil reversionism.

v11: For the Lord God the Son is a SUN, and A shield for our security, both grace provision and grace protection, the Lord God the Father gives Grace which can be exploited resulting in Promotion, He, God the Holy Spirit, will not hold back the Divine Good or Blessings or spiritual wealth of Maturity from those who walk with Honor in fellowship with Bible Doctrine to attain Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace,,

v12: Oh Lord of the Armies (Freedom through military victory) happiness' belongs to the Man who depends on or Trusts or has confidence totally in You (Max Adjustment to the Justice of God)

- i. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the Lord of the armies providing and protecting that freedom which allows the believer to keep on moving ahead under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to advance to Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace and author of the Laws of Divine Establishment whose best expression of freedom is "Freedom through Military Victory"
- ii. The Body is the place of residence for the Soul, the soul is the place of residence for the Right Lobe, and the Right Lobe is the place of residence for Bible Doctrine, and Bible Doctrine is the objective of the Spiritual Life and God has provided a house for the soul and a house for Bible Doctrine and these 2 enclose and hold your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where we must do all of our thinking.
- iii. When you can rejoice over the living God you are very close to or have attained Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or are pressing on as did Paul and Moses and Jeremiah to Ultra Super Grace.
- iv. Both the sparrow and swallow live close to the ground and are secure when they nest like the believer who wanders around until he finds his right Pastor Teacher and then this becomes his home and the believer without his right Pastor Teacher is like a sparrow without his nest.
 - a. He is nothing and can be nothing and cannot grow nor progress in the Spiritual Life for all spiritual progress is made under the ministry of your right Pastor Teacher.
 - b. Only the one with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher is able to go directly to the source of scripture and study and advance from his own study.
 - c. Not only do you find your own right Pastor Teacher in the local church or non face to face by some other media application of doctrinal teaching and sometimes you can grow in the Spiritual Life faster with the recorded lessons than in face to face studies.
 - d. The principle is that if you are consistent and persistent in your Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine however you get it YOU WILL GROW UP AND REACH Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- v. The ALTAR in v3 is the place where you learn Bible Doctrine and the Lord of the Armies, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the one who provides the freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment whereby you can CHOOSE to be consistent in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

- vi. In Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo there are 5 categories of happiness' for the believer who is consistent in intake of Bible Doctrine.
 - a. The believer can rest on this principle.
 - vii. The well in v6 is Ultra Super Grace and the valley described here is the No Man's Land of pressure between Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace where the Super Grace blessing package is combined with the Logistical Grace support package which has been in effect for the whole life of the believer forming Bravo Grace support to sustain the believer under this period of maximum distraction and pressure prior to reaching Ultra Super Grace.
- J. The intensity of blessing in the Status Quo of Ultra Super Grace:
- 1. Operation HOT DOG:
 - 2. The vastly intensified blessings of Super Grace are completely enshrouded by pressure, opposition, persecutions and suffering from satanic forces of evil 2Tim 3:21-25
 - 3. This is Jeremiah one of the 3 well established Ultra Super Grace believers and one of the most famous in the sense that his Status Quo of Ultra Super Grace was always ignored but was the stabilizing rod for the nation and when the nation was totally disintegrated and destroyed the only thing left was the Stabilizing Rod.

Lamentations 3:15-26

Corrected Translation according to: R. B. Thieme Jr.

(This is Jeremiah's HOPE, Bitterness is the wrong reaction to divine discipline)

v15: He (God) filled me with bitterness (blaming God for it), he made me drunk with venom of the soul.

v17: My soul has been rejected from prosperity, tranquility and happiness, (he forgot what happiness was),

(Jeremiah then remembers to rebound)

v19: Remember my afflictions and restlessness, the bitterness and venom of my soul, I will remember

v20: Surely my soul remembers my constant failures and it is bowed down and humbled within me considering your constant grace support:

v21: This Doctrine I recall to mind, therefore I have confident expectations (HOPE) or faith under pressure in time of disaster.

v22: It is because of the Lord's unfailing gracious mercies that we are not CUT OFF or Consumed, The grace expressions of Ultra Super Grace blessings of the Lord are never exhausted,

v23: For His Compassions, Gracious Mercies or functions for temporal security never fail These compassions which never fail, they are new every morning, great is your faithfulness.

(logistical grace is received 1 day at a time)

(what GOD has promised HE will deliver)

v24: The Lord is my portion or my comfort says my soul, therefore I have absolute confidence in Him in the midst of pressure, I shall delight in doctrinal principles, I shall not forget your word.

(part of virtue is personal love directed to GOD

impersonal love directed to man,

confidence directed to GOD,

courage directed to man)

v25: The Lord is good to those who wait or endure patiently in absolute confidence of hope for him to provide the blessings of Ultra Super Grace, to the soul who constantly seeks Him.

(The faith rest drill used in adversity with integrity {spiritual strength} from constant +volition for perception, cognition, metabolization and application of Bible Doctrine)

v26: Good it is to be silent and wait for the deliverance of the Lord.

- I. Doctrine of Positional Truth:
 - A. Positional truth is the beginning of our relationship with God and our entrance into the Plan of God.
 1. We are at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God placed into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit
 - B. Definition:
 1. Positional Truth or Positional sanctification refers to the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the Church Age being placed into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by God the Holy Spirit.
 2. This is the key to understanding the Church Age and the reason for the interruption of the Age of Israel with the Church Age.
 3. It is the fact that distinguishes the Church Age believer as Royal Family of God from all other believers in Human History who are family of God.
 4. It is the basis for distinguishing between Christianity and Religion which are antithetical concepts.
 - i. Religion is man by his own efforts seeking to gain the approbation of God.
 - ii. Christianity is a man without any approbation from God for works being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and having a personal relationship with God.
 5. The fact that we are in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and that we have WELL DEFINED objectives of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace demands that we understand the foundation of our Status Quo in the Plan of God and the security of it.
 - C. Mechanics of Positional Truth
 1. This is the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit **1Cor 12:13**, at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God resulting in **Eph 4:5**, 1 Lord, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as the only savior, 1 Faith, Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone is the only means of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, 1 Baptism, the only means of entering in the Royal Family of God.
 - D. Judgment of Eternity
 1. Positional truth guarantees no judgment for the believer in eternity. **Rom 8:1**
 - E. Qualifies the believer to live with God forever.
 1. To live with God forever you must be a good or righteous as God is and this is accomplished through union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 2. God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God takes us and enters us into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ whereby we share his righteousness
 3. Having the Righteousness of God of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is God we are as good as God is good.
 4. This was accomplished in prior dispensations by Imputation at regeneration of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and also is so accomplished in the Church Age but sharing the Righteousness of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for the Church Age believers makes it a double benefit for the believers in the Church Age. **2Cor 5:21**
 5. We must also have the same life God has and we have Eternal Life and share that Eternal Life of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ also, **1John 5:11-12**
 6. If we are going to live with God and be in his plan we must have 2 things which begin at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God for us to have a relationship with God.
 7. We must have Eternal Life of God and the Righteousness of God both accomplished for the Royal Family of God through positional truth.
 - F. Positional truth guarantees Eternal Security for the believer Rom 8:38-39
 - G. Positional truth belongs to all categories of believers.
 1. Since positional truth occurs at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God it is finished before the EXPERIENCE of the believer is determined.

2. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God one of the 39 irrevocable assets received by each believer no matter whatever their status becomes is Positional Sanctification by the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
 3. Spiritual status quo has nothing to do with positional sanctification.
 4. Positional sanctification belongs to the carnal and spiritual believers, to the Super Grace and reversionistic believers to all categories of experiential Christianity. **1Cor 1:30**
 - i. The Corinthians were notorious carnal believers but were said to be SANCTIFIED in Christ Jesus
- H. Positional Truth creates a new creature and union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is unique to the Church Age.
1. It started on the day of Pentecost and continues to the rapture and never occurred before nor will occur after the end of the Church Age.
 2. Whether the believer becomes a mature believer or NOT does not make them NEW CREATURES in Christ.
 3. Something a believer gives up or a change in behavior or some kind of HOLY lifestyle and being a NEW CREATURE is positional NOT EXPERIENTIAL.
 4. New creature is a relationship with God not spiritual progress.
 5. Anything an unbeliever can do is not part of being a new creature in Christ but also anything a believer can do is NOT part of being a new creature in Christ EITHER.
 6. Being a new creature has nothing in the world to do with WHAT you do or do not do or your spiritual progress or retrogression might be.
 7. NEW creatureship is POSITIONAL not experiential.
 8. Positional truth is designed for good production and a pattern of life compatible with our Status Quo as Royal Family of God but NEW creatureship is NOT in any way EXPERIENTIAL. **Eph 2:10**
 9. Good production does start with positional truth in the sense that you have to have positional sanctification in order to be qualified to advance in the Plan of God Super Grace and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God where good production can occur.
- I. Positional Truth is the basis for Grace Blessings **Eph 1:3-6**
1. Our blamelessness is not behavior but our positional sanctification.
- J. Implications of positional truth
1. These are related to the fact that we share what Christ has by virtue or our union with him.
 2. Eternal Life – being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we share his Eternal Life 1John 5:11-12
 3. The Righteousness of God – being in /union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we share his righteousness **2Cor 5:21**
 4. Election – being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we share his election **Eph 1:4**
 5. Destiny – being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we share his destiny, **Eph 1:5**
 6. Sonship – being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we share his sonship **Gal 3:26**
 7. Heirship – being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we share his heirship **Rom 8:16-17**
 8. Priesthood – Being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we share his priesthood **Heb 10:10-14**
 9. Royalty – being in union with the King of Kings Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we share his royalty **2Pet 1:11**
 10. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace is in the wonderful position and privilege of exposing his positional sanctification to the entire world.

11. Positional Truth or positional sanctification is NOT EXPERIENTIAL but obtained by grace provision entirely at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
- II. We are not only in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but will also be with him a reigning rulers.
- A. V12 is a first class conditional sentence, IF and it is True a supposition from the viewpoint of reality.
 1. Review Prodisis and Apotasis structures.
 2. This is a statement of supposition the fulfillment of which supposition is assumed to secure the realization of a potential fact expressed in the companion clause.
 - B. There will be suffering in the life of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and continuous pressure and opposition from satanic forces of evil in the life of the Ultra Super Grace believer but it is all designed to make the blessings of Super Grace more intense and enjoyable.
 1. The Super Grace believer is equipped through the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to handle any adversity and suffering in life and the Ultra Super Grace as the stabilizer of history much more so.
 2. This suffering is a spiritual blessing of the Super Grace package of blessing.
 - C. We WILL rule or reign with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ if we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and HOLD our Status Quo.
 1. All Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers will have a phenomenal surpassing grace package of eternity.
 2. This will be the greatest glorification of God ever and for all eternity and EVERY Believer should strive for this Status Quo of blessing and reward in eternity.
 3. It is false humility in fact arrogance to say you don't want these blessings.
 4. We are to move on and plug on and LET GOD WORRY ABOUT THE SURPASSING GRACE BLESSING FOR ETERNITY.
 5. Every decoration we receive from our experience in time is an eternal glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ NOT YOU FATHEAD!!!!!!!!!!!!!!
 6. This is REALITY.
 7. We must get this straight now in our Spiritual Life so that we DO NOT end up as many will in a Resurrection Body in heaven MINUS the Old Sin Nature and MINUS Human Good and Evil and will never get even a little toe in the Lake of Fire BUT a PEON forever.
 - i. These will be the COTTON pickers on our great plantations in heaven.
 - D. Reversionism carries tremendous Divine Discipline and the worst thing which can happen to any Christian is to die the Sin Unto Death which is the ultimate Divine Discipline for reversionism.
 1. BUT there will be NO MORE sorrow, tears, pain or death for any believer beyond the grave but THERE WILL BE A DEFINITE DIFFERENCE AMONG BELIEVERS IN ETERNITY.
 2. **THERE IS NO EQUALITY IN HEAVEN.**
 3. It will be much better to reign than to be peons and it all depends on the daily attitude toward Bible Doctrine in time.
 - E. Believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God MUST never neglect Bible Doctrine and Bible Doctrine is and MUST BE as much a part of our life as the air we breathe.
- III. The conditional Clauses of this paragraph:
- A. The first conditional clause dealt with positional sanctification or Positional Truth
 - B. The second conditional clause dealt with reward for the believer in time and eternity.
 - C. The third conditional clause portrays the loss of Super Grace blessings and subsequent loss of surpassing grace blessing and reward in eternity.
 - D. God has designed a phenomenal surpassing grace blessing and reward package for the believer for eternity BUT IT IS BASED ON FIRST GETTING YOUR BLESSINGS IN TIME FOR REACHING Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.

1. If you have these blessings in time then you will also have something even greater in eternity.
 2. If you lose out in time and lose your blessings having NOT made Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo then you will also lose out in eternity.
- E. Under the conditions of reversionism and the influence of evil believers will neglect or reject Bible Doctrine and therefore reject or neglect or even repudiate or deny Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
1. When this occurs then Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will and does refuse and denies us our surpassing grace blessings for eternity.
 2. This occurs when Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ provides our OER at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ evaluation.
 3. It is the one whom we neglect or reject by neglecting or rejecting Bible Doctrine in time who refuses us the eternal reward and blessing designed by God in Eternity Past.
- IV. V13: The principle is that loss of reward is NOT loss of salvation.
- A. The 4th conditional clause
 - B. The believer can lose the rewards and blessings of Super Grace, Ultra Super Grace and surpassing grace but he cannot lose his salvation.
 1. No matter what you do in time YOU CANNOT LOSE ANYTHING YOU GAINED AT THE INSTANT OF SALVATION
 2. There were 39 assets given us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and they cannot be taken from us.
 3. We were placed into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and cannot be taken out of union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 4. We are given the Righteousness of God and cannot have it removed.
 5. If we are the worst flop in history with regard to Christian living we cannot lose what we gained at salvation since in fact we did nothing to gain it in the first place.
 6. When we lose potential blessing and rewards from God these are related to WHAT YOU DO AFTER SALVATION WITH REGARD TO Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - C. This is the worst thing we can do in time as a reversionistic believer:
 1. As a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God if we are NOT believing or being unfaithful by neglecting or rejecting Bible Doctrine we continue to accumulate the thinking and policy of EVIL of Satan a bit at a time until we have reached the point of having total hardness of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, blindness of the soul and total Reverse Process Reversionism.
 2. This is being UNFAITHFUL and being unfaithful is not forgetting to pray today or not witnessing to everyone you contact today but ONLY WHEN YOU REJECT DOCTRINE.
 3. This is the absolute WORST thing a believer can ever do.
 - D. This takes reversionism as something which occurs and demonstrates that such reversionism may be loss of reward and blessing for both time and eternity.
 1. Believers in reversionism under the influence of evil are the ones who in reality do this.
 - E. Despite our being unfaithful and rejecting Bible Doctrine and / or God himself after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God HE, GOD remains faithful to us and will provide eternal salvation after our death, BUT THAT IS ALL.
 1. Whether we are successful or unsuccessful as a believer in time GOD is faithful and will bring us home to live with him forever.
 2. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ cannot deny or repudiate themselves and our being in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ guarantees our eternal security.
 - F. Application:
 1. The believer is placed into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in the Church Age.

2. The believer who is unfaithful and reversionistic and saturated with evil IS STILL IN UNION WITH CHRIST.
3. THE BELIEVER WHO RENOUNCES CHRIST IS STILL IN UNION WITH HIM AND HE CANNOT CHANGE ANYTHING.
4. All believers are in union with Christ and nothing you nor God can do can change this.

2Tim 2:12

v12: IF we endure suffering, remain under pressure in maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace, and we do (in the Divine Dynasphere), we shall also rule or reign along with Him (blessing at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ), IF we as maladjusted reversionists repudiate, deny, refuse, reject or neglect him and Bible Doctrine teaching and it is true some believers do, by being in the Cosmic Dynasphere, that same one, the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, He, will also refuse, repudiate or deny us eternal reward blessings above the resurrection body

2Tim 2:13

v13: IF we as reversionistic believers under the influence of evil, are not believing, being unfaithful by neglecting or rejecting Bible Doctrine, and some believers are, He abides or remains faithful {the title of this hymn}." For you see, He, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, can not deny Himself {In Union with Christ we are part of Him} Tim.

Lesson #40 Series # 469 2Tim 2:14

- I. During the time of the 2nd war for independence, there was 1 state in the south which almost did not secede and one state in the north which tried to secede.
 - A. Indiana in the North which was one of the strongest state in the realm of States Rights and the ONLY thing which kept Indiana in the Union of the North was that Governor Oliver Merton dismissed his legislature who were overwhelmingly in favor of secession and they thought he would have to bring them back when he ran out of money BUT Abraham Lincoln immediately dropped \$100,000 to him and during the war kept funneling him money.
 1. This was the first case of Federal Aid to states and of all states one of the 3 strongest in states rights
 2. This shows what one person can do in turning things around and in this case the WRONG way.
 - B. Virginia almost did not Secede and the only reason they did finally Secede was because Lincoln called for 50,000 volunteers for the Army and were opposed to secession until that moment.
 1. The state of Virginia contributed more regiments to the confederate armies than any other state in the confederacy.
 - C. The State of Texas almost did not go out and if the governor of Texas had had his way Texas would have stayed in the Union, Sam Houston and was completely opposed to any secession of any kind and said NO GOOD would every come to Texas because of it and that is when everyone turned against Sam Houston and thrown out of office and discredited in the state and of course lost some sons fighting for the confederacy.
 - D. Whenever there is a conflict in American history you will find people who are wrong and they are reversionists and liberals influenced by evil.
 1. You will also find people who are right and are centered in Bible Doctrine and establishment principled.
 2. You will always find American tenacity, courage and conviction on both sides and this is one of those beautiful things we have inherited in American culture.
 3. There is no part in the world in the last 200 years where people have disagreed more violently, viciously and tenaciously and ever persuaded the other side they are right.
 4. THIS IS OUR CULTURE and BACKGROUND.
- II. Every believer must master this coming paragraph as it is the Responsibility of the Pastor Teacher and his Job Profile and what every pastor must do.
 - A. Those in the congregation need this more than the few who will become Pastor Teachers.
 1. The tragedy today is that the believer in the congregation does not know what to expect from his Pastor Teacher and how to identify who could be his RIGHT Pastor Teacher.

2. When a pastor does not measure up with what is in this passage he cannot be your right Pastor Teacher.
- B. Most think of the right Pastor Teacher in terms of rapport, one who has a nice personality which agrees with them personally and who knows how to make you feel wanted and important or utter soothing epigrams for any situation.
1. The importance is such that NO ONE can grow in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God without their right Pastor Teacher.
 2. A pastor may be on a recorded device or behind a pulpit glaring at you or smiling during presenting weak points but HE is the missing link in your spiritual growth.
 3. He will be the one who communicates the information which will eventually bring you to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 4. Without him you get into a rat race of trying to do your own thing and getting involved and victorious experiences, making it a better world so Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will return!!!! Blaspheme and Idiocy.
- C. There are cities where there might be 1000 pastors and if you live in that city not one of them may be your right Pastor Teacher.
1. Some may give lip service to the word of God but NONE who teach it.
 2. A pastor in reversionism is NOT your right Pastor Teacher and it must be someone who is faithfully teaching Bible Doctrine.
 3. This passage is more important to the one in the congregation than the one in the pulpit.
- D. This is an extremely important advance in the concept of spiritual heritage and Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace and interpretation of Human History.
1. This is the last thing written by the greatest man and Pastor Teacher and Apostle in history.
 2. This is a challenge to both the Pastor Teacher and believer.

III. The Job Description of the Pastor Teacher:

- A. The beginning is referring to and emphasizing the doctrines of the word previously taught in the Hymn of Paul.
1. Retroactive Positional Truth
 2. Super Grace Suffering (evidence testing)
 3. Ultra Super Grace Suffering in time
 4. Blessing and reward in Eternity
 5. Reversionism
 6. Influence of Evil
 7. Eternal Security
- B. This verse instructs the pastor to command the believer in the congregation to remember that which they should already know.
1. This is the result of academic discipline of the local church being involved in the fulfillment of this command.
 2. When Bible Doctrine occurs in a biblical context they must be taught and then retaught again and again.
 3. This command is for the Pastor Teacher here Timothy in the church at Ephesus and he is to dig down and take all the Bible Doctrine he learned under Paul and teach it and repeat and repeat it over and over again.
 4. The idea is that the context of any doctrinal teaching in the soul of the believer must be able to be reiterated along with the Pastor Teacher as he teaches it and is so inculcated that the believer cannot forget it when he is asleep.
 5. Good teaching is DRILLING and always accomplished under STRICT Academic discipline.
 6. Things you learn under discipline you will never forget ever and any time you are disciplined and trained under discipline you will never forget it.

7. YOU LEARN FROM REPETITION SO THAT YOU WILL NOT FORGET.
- C. Timothy here and every Pastor Teacher in every local church must do this and it is an ORDER to them to teach all the doctrine they have learned and study constantly to learn more and then teach with constant repetition all the doctrines.
1. This is a picture of **Thomas Jonathan Jackson** who was utterly hated by everyone in his periphery and he was the STRONGEST disciplinarian on both sides of the war between the states and he courts martialled more officers and made more complaints against general officers than anyone on either side and he never heard the words PUBLIC RELATIONS.
 2. He was tougher on soldiers and on officers and sent in more court martial papers than any other 5 general officers in the confederate army.
 3. Before he became a great producer he was NOT Liked at all by anyone and only until 1st Monassas and other campaigns that he became “famous” and whether he was tough or not did not matter any longer.
 4. There was only 1 other man who was a tough as Jackson in history and he was despised by everyone until he became well known and famous. **George S. Patton Jr.**
 5. People who are famous to us and who we hear about with reference to anecdotes were not funny to the people under them because they were so tough and so strict disciplinarians that people could not stand them.
 6. Yet they did the job right and proved as is always true that discipline is the key to everything and is just as much the key to spiritual growth as it is to an offensive action in combat battle.
 7. Without discipline you cannot have spiritual growth and a good Pastor Teacher is going to demand it.
 8. Both Jackson and Patton did this as did other men who were successful.
 9. You cannot be buddies with those under your authority and if you are they will be of no value when they are required to perform.
- D. The pastor who fulfills these concepts is the evanescent American.
1. The point is that every time a Bible Doctrine concept is communicated YOU ARE UNDER OATH therefore must listen and concentrate in order to receive the charge.
 2. The local church when doctrine is being taught and is in solemn assembly and failure to heed this concept means DISCIPLINE along the way.
 - i. Administered by one who is ultimately fair, God himself.
 3. **This means that as you sit and take in Bible Doctrine on your own or in the local church YOU ARE RESPONSIBLE TO THE LORD FOR WHAT YOU TAKE IN.**
 4. At some time in your experience in the future the Lord will hold you will responsible for what you learned in bible study and you will have to apply it.
 5. If you did not learn it the Divine Discipline will be how you will hurt because you did not learn it when it was taught.
 6. You never hear anything in Bible Doctrine teaching for which you are NOT responsible and at some time the Lord will throw some pressure suffering or disaster into your life so that you can be tested and if you learned it you will lose it and if not you will hurt because you are STUPID about that situation.
 7. Teaching Bible Doctrine is accomplished not only under strict academic discipline but one in which God himself takes the oversight position.
- E. At the time of teaching of Bible Doctrine you are NOT to resist Bible Doctrine taught you.
1. This means that you must have an open mind and there are things with which you will not agree but you are NOT to disagree.
 2. There are things which will be contrary to what you have previously in life learned or contrary to your developed norms and standards.
 3. There is a possibility that the Pastor Teacher might be wrong and if he is wrong he will be under horrible discipline and be out of the ministry rapidly.

4. One thing the Pastor Teacher must not do is be wrong about a doctrine, if he is wrong about exegesis he will eventually discover it and move on correctly.
 5. A Pastor Teacher who is properly trained and prepared is not going to be wrong IF he has the proper training in the languages and history.
 6. God does not tolerate any Pastor Teacher who is wrong in what he teaches and as a believer we never have to worry if a pastor is WRONG or not.
 7. Men who are getting the truth or wrong in their exegesis and analysis are removed or become so apostate that anyone who knows any Bible Doctrine knows they are wrong.
 8. They do get a following because many people LIKE to be wrong and they are generally under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and Positive Volition toward EVIL.
 - i. This was Ishah and she is personified in many reversionistic believers.
- F. This is the first responsibility of the Pastor Teacher to maintain discipline in the local church and must teach so that the importance is understood of discipline, self discipline and church discipline
1. All are under the oversight of God and a church without discipline is totally and completely useless.
 2. Discipline is just as necessary in the local church as in anyone's army.

2Tim 2:14

v14: **Keep on reminding, solemnly commanding, inculcating them, the believers in the congregation, with these things or doctrines previously delineated, and be adjuring, imposing an oath on them, giving them a charge under oath they thus being bound by that oath, giving a command under threat of extreme discipline (Courts Martial) warning them in the local church or in bible study in the presence of The Lord, that it is non-beneficial or useless to resist or fight with words against doctrine and leads to the catastrophe, destruction, ruin of reversionism of the hearers or congregation.**

Lesson #41 Series # 469 2Tim 2:15

- I. Job Profile of the Pastor Teacher Continued; 2nd Purpose:
 - A. The Second Purpose is to fulfill the #1 Priority of Studying and Teaching Bible Doctrine.
 1. This is a command to the Pastor Teacher and here to Timothy as a Super Grace believer teaching in the Key Church of Ephesus.
 2. This takes the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to assemble and listen to Bible Doctrine teaching and the Pastor Teachers decision to study consistently.
 3. This takes a Positive Decision and concentration, objectivity, good manners, poise, academic diligence and discipline.
 4. Every member of the Royal Family of God should produce the function of this verb and it is a command
 - B. Approval from God is the believer reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 1. Approval is the place of receiving the OER for the Royal Family of God the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, **Rom 14:10, 1Cor 3:11-16, 2Cor 5:10, 2Tim 2:12-13, Heb 6:7-12 ETC**
 2. Approval is based on reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and HOLDING this Status Quo until DEATH.
 3. The over and above blessing is that which the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in time will receive throughout all eternity.
 4. It is beyond what is expected and OVER and ABOVE and the approval is parlayed into surpassing grace blessings
 - C. For the believer in the Royal Family of God our approval is based ONLY on what GOD thinks and no other person.
 1. It does not mean a DAMN what other people think of you it is ONLY what GOD thinks which counts.
 2. There are always dominant personalities in every circle of people but their approval is of no consequence.

3. When you try to live your life for the approval of other people you are excluding the big objective and you MUST live your life to please ONLY GOD.
 4. This takes a maximum of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 5. God being all knowing, all seeing and is the only one who counts with regard to our approval.
- D. Diligence in presenting yourself to God to be approved requires consistent daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
1. Timothy is being told to be diligent to be a good teacher of Bible Doctrine and if this is to occur he must study and teach consistently as is the case with EVERY Pastor Teacher.
 2. The only way a Pastor Teacher can avoid shame at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ is to be diligent in his studying and teaching.
 3. He must avoid pastor gimmicks such as calling on the sick, counseling, setting up programs, ETC.
 4. He must avoid arrogance, laziness, lack of self discipline, and never determine policy on the basis of friends or member of the congregation who are influential or NOT.
 - i. The Pastor Teacher has to be his own man.
 5. The Pastor Teacher has to make up his own mind on every issue and he is a policy maker not a policy taker.
 - i. No one can in any way influence him nor make the policy and policy must come from the Pastor Teachers own personal study of doctrine.
 6. The difference between your right Pastor Teacher and wrong Pastor Teacher is based on whether his policies are based on Bible Doctrine and compatible with grace and authority, discipline and NOT based on what any individual or group in the local church thinks.
 7. The Pastor Teacher must never be run by his wife or any other person who might have his attention.
 - i. If he is he will slide into a sloppy useless fraternity or be struck down by a bolt of lightning which is preferable.
 - ii. TOO MANY are influenced by people who don't know one doctrine or scripture from another.
 - iii. This does not mean that the new Pastor Teacher starts in immediately to change the policies and straighten out the congregation and the local church.
 - iv. His first move is to STUDY and TEACH constantly and he and the congregation will grow together and changes will then be made based on Bible Doctrine.
 - v. In the movie "How green is my valley" the Pastor Teacher should have CANNED the Deacons not removed the pregnant unwed mother.
 - vi. If a prostitute wants Bible Doctrine they are entitled to get it in the local church and what they do is no one's business at all.
 8. Any one should be able to come into the local church and sit and take in Bible Doctrine without any questions or judgment from anyone else in the congregation.
 - i. When a person wants their privacy and does not want anyone to know what they do they should be able to have their privacy and the only issue is whether they are under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and from their own free will want Bible Doctrine or NOT.
 9. The Pastor Teacher must avoid any distractions or detractors from studying and teaching Bible Doctrine and must not lack self discipline and must not be lazy.
 - i. His study must result in a GRACE policy not influenced by people in the congregation and all policy must come from the grace principles of Bible Doctrine.
- E. The Execution of Striving:
1. Many strive and are legalistic, reversionistic, under the influence of evil, all do good liberals strive and are not considered here.

2. Skill in examining and proper exegesis of Bible Doctrine requires PREPARATION in many areas.
 3. This is why it takes many years of preparation for a Pastor Teacher to be able to teach properly the word of God.
 4. The preparation is almost more important than the execution of teaching.
 5. Scholarship is an essential for proper function as a Pastor Teacher.
- F. The Pastor Teacher's job is simply TO STUDY, STUDY, STUDY DAY IN AND DAY OUT WITHOUT BREAK.
1. (ff) I at one time thought that I might have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher. I am an excellent teacher however when the end of the day came I could walk away from the material and forget it until the next day. When the end of the class came and the next semester came I could use the same information with a new group of people and over a year or so this became very very EASY work.
 2. THIS IS NOT THE CASE WITH THE PASTOR TEACHER WHO MUST STUDY EACH AND EVERY DAY AS IF HE HAD AN EXAMINATION OVER THE MATERIAL EVERY DAY.
 3. Every day the Pastor Teacher stands before the congregation to teach he must have examined more and more material to present each day.
 4. The real tragedy is that MOST pastors do not do the analysis and study of the bible languages and history in order to provide proper teaching.
 5. There is no such thing as a pastor who has a NORMAL routine life like any other person.
- G. The Pastor Teacher is here COMMANDED to be accurate and skillful in his examining and presenting his teaching of Bible Doctrine.

2Tim 2:15

v15: Move fast, strive, be zealous, diligent, industrious, with daily consistent discipline and concentration on Bible Doctrine, to present yourself approved, after testing and trial of the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ, having reached and held Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, to The God, an irreproachable teacher, producer or communicator, not put to shame, accurately and skillfully examine, exegete and communicate the word of God with reference to its Bible Doctrine without perversion or distortion.

Lesson #42 Series # 469 2Tim 2:16

- I. 3rd function of the Pastor Teacher:
 - A. Constantly Avoiding apostasy, reversionism and evil in the content of his message and this can only be accomplished by his own personal study.
 1. The more a Pastor Teacher teaches the more vulnerable he becomes to making a mistake whether it is a grammatical error, giving information not compatible with the subject, or totally inaccurate information, or bucking the tiger giving some form of evil, satanic concept, or reversionism.
 2. All reversionistic pastors would do much better to never teach nor speak and the more they stand in the pulpit the more the content of their message becomes immediately erroneous.
 3. A pastor must avoid in the content of his message at all times anything which is related to in any small way EVIL or satanic policies or the bleeding heart liberal Human Good activities.
 4. You identify your right Pastor Teacher by the use of this verse for the wrong pastor will be teaching EVIL and Satan's policy as compatible with the ruler of this world.
- II. Summary:
 1. All words are formed in the mind and they reveal what the individual is thinking.
 - i. If you want to know what someone is really thinking listen to them talk and the more they talk the more they unveil their soul and the more they tell you what they are thinking.

- ii. The less they talk the better the impression they make if their thinking is NOT impressionable.
 - 2. Talk or chatter is composed of words formed first in the mind.
 - a. Every bit of preaching which has ever occurred came from the mind and the original thoughts.
 - b. All pastors give their own thoughts which originate in their mind.
 - 3. When the words formed in the mind are vocalized they represent the thinking of on the one hand reversionism and evil OR on the other hand Grace and Doctrine.
 - i. In this passage we have avoidance of Anti Doctrinal Empty Talk.
 - 4. Therefore the only way to obey this command is for the pastor to focus constantly on constant and continuous STUDYING of Bible Doctrine.
 - 5. Sermons which are called empty talk are based on the influence of evil in the soul and the Pastor Teacher involved therefore is in some phase of reversionism.
 - 6. When the message is void of content the congregation cannot grow spiritually.
 - 7. This means failure in the objective of the local church which is assembly for the purpose of communication and reception of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Therefore there is failure in the objective of the Spiritual Life to follow the colors to the high ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 8. No pastor can lead his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God when there is no doctrinal content to his message.
 - 9. Doctrinal Content comes through diligent study which was commanded in v15.
 - 10. The Pastor Teacher must present the BIBLE viewpoint and as God's representative he is there to present God's viewpoint from the bible God's Word and this is ONLY possible through Exegesis, analysis of the context, and classification of all doctrines found in a given context.
 - 11. No pastor can be divorced from constant daily bible study which is the source of his personal growth and the means of preparation of his messages and the inevitable growth of the members of his congregation under Positive Volition.
- B. When the Pastor Teacher is in reversionism his congregation will follow him deeper and deeper into it themselves.
 - 1. In order to identify your right Pastor Teacher you must understand the doctrine of:
 - i. Reversionism
 - ii. Stages of reversionism
 - iii. Categories of reversionism
 - iv. Evil
 - v. Categories of Evil
 - vi. Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
 - 2. This will simplify the identification of your right Pastor Teacher.
 - 3. Nothing is ever said about personality or how sweet or good a person is to be your Pastor Teacher.

III. The first Parenthetical principle: v17-18

- A. The reversionistic pastor is NO BELIEVERS right Pastor Teacher.
 - 1. The reversionistic pastors do exist and they are in fact spreading the policies and principles of the ruler of this world.
 - 2. These pastors will spread their false apostate reversionistic teaching like cancer spreads among good cells in the body and they may say some things correctly but not being based truly on Bible Doctrine their ministry will inevitably cause them to deviate from the absolute truth.
 - 3. Satan likes to have his representative in the pulpit say some things which are accurate doctrinal principles and then through in the Cancer.
 - 4. The cancer will reside with the good but eventually chokes out the good and only the cancer remains.

5. Since this is the world of Satan EVIL his policy and principles spread very rapidly in many forms very popular.
 6. False teaching from reversionistic pastors is like cancer in the body spreading rapidly and eventually destroying the believer through reversionism and the Sin Unto Death.
- B. Timothy had been in reversionism and has now recovered but there are other churches in Ephesus.
1. When Timothy began his recovery from reversionism and began to move up again to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God some of his poor troublesome congregation LEFT his church in Ephesus.
 2. They found other people to be their pastors who had great personalities such as Hymenaeus but whom were in reversionism and under the Sin Unto Death for several years.
 3. He is guilty of every phase of reversionism and has attracted some from the church of Ephesus to form a little group church.
 4. Another is Philetus also a pastor in Ephesus but who has disagreed with the principle of the rapture and he contended from the great trouble in Rome that the tribulation is already here.
 5. He contended that to get in on the rapture the believer had to follow his teaching and be very good, moral, upright and he was basically teaching that you had to keep the Mosaic Law and be religious.
 6. One has the appeal of personality and the other takes some truth and mixes it into his teaching and this cancer eventually dominates.
- C. The point of why the believer is left alive on the earth after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God:
1. We are left here as part of the Angelic Conflict Trial Appeal
 2. We are left as representatives of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as Royal Family of God.
 3. As such our first objective is simple and we are to exercise Positive Volition and self Discipline and Self regulation to take in Bible Doctrine under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception consistently and DAILY in order to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace where we can at that POINT glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 4. At Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive a package of Super Grace blessings which in our receiving of them glorifies God.
 5. This makes our life meaningful in the Angelic Conflict with a tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict to accompany the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which was his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross.
 6. The only way we can accomplish this tactical victory is to come under the very strict discipline of our right Pastor Teacher in the local church who is accurate emphasizing the word of God teaching it by analyzing and categorizing all sorts of Bible Doctrine.
 7. This is why we are alive and we ARE NOT HERE TO HUSTLE FOR GOD AND GET INTO ORGANIZATIONS WITH PROGRAMS NOR TO GIVE YOUR TESTIMONY.
 8. We are not here to listen to stupidity from reversionists but to take in Bible Doctrine daily and move from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond.
 9. The people in this passage have missed this point entirely and have therefore been captured by Satan and are in fact now his servants.
 10. All reversionistic believers are Satan's servants and white washing the world ruled by Satan and advocating satanic doctrine and are bleeding heard good doers, love everyone types etc.
 - i. These are the people who want to love the communists and islamists and do not recognize that these people are and always will be our enemies and the only thing

to be done with them is to KILL THEM and the ones qualified to do so is the military and our freedoms are on the line.

ii. When we fight communists or moslems we must kill a lot of them and WIN against them or there will be NO MORE evangelism or bible doctrine teaching in this country.

11. We are here under the principles of freedom provided by the Lord and his laws and the Laws of Divine Establishment is centered in freedom through military victory

12. We are here in this life after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to take in Bible Doctrine constantly and consistently and have the freedom to do so at this time and as we do so we fulfill our objective.

13. The believer NOT under continued bible teaching is NOT smart enough to handle the devil and he will be captured by some form of evil or bleeding heart liberal do good functions for some reason.

14. These people think they are making a better world which they are doing for the devil.

15. This concept has occurred in history and has been repeated over and over as well.

D. The illustration of the apostasy of these false pastors is the mid or post tribulational rapture.

1. These men are believers in reversionism working for Satan and the spiritual gift which they possess has been turned around and used for Satan.

2. The Resurrection of the church is going to take all believers to be face to face with the Lord.

3. God never mixes his plans and when the Age of Israel ended the Church Age began instantly and when the Church Age ends the Age of Israel will resume to completion and NEVER are they mixed together.

4. After the rapture of the church there will be NO Royal Family of God on the earth again and will be in heaven.

5. The Age of Israel will conclude with the tribulation and end at the 2nd advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and his millennial reign.

6. All the Royal Family of God will leave the earth at the rapture by either being resurrected or receiving an interim body and leaving the earth apart from physical death.

7. This point demonstrates that either you can discern or not, think straight or NOT, see the role of the Church Age or NOT and when you get into a mid or post tribulational rapture you blur all the distinctions and have one foot in the law and the other in grace and are half baptist and half 7th day Adventist which is a NOTHING.

8. YOU CANNOT MIX THESE THINGS OR OTHERS LIKE THEM.

E. The question is WHY did these 2 nice sweet pastors teach this awful hearsay?

1. Because Timothy was teaching the correct doctrine and how the rapture ends the Church Age.

2. As a result these 2 taught the opposite so that they could condemn Timothy for being inaccurate.

3. They were teaching false doctrine not because they themselves believed it but out of pettiness and spite.

4. Once Timothy Got back to teaching properly doctrine the bullies could not run over him any more and they therefore left and went to the mousy people on the side to control them.

F. Principle:

1. Teaching mid or post tribulational rapture is FALSE and a sign of Failure of 2 kinds:

i. Failure in the soul to have the correct Bible Doctrine

ii. Failure from the Old Sin Nature in the area of pettiness, spite, jealousy, vindictiveness, implacability.

2. The very fact that any pastor would ever stand up and teach such a thing indicated failure on his part to understand the uniqueness of the Church Age and the objective for which

the Royal Family of God remains alive on the earth after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

- i. The Church Age is unique and it is based on the fact that God has a plan and purpose for each of us.
3. Such a position reveals total ignorance of the Plan of God or the deliberate tampering with the understanding of the Plan of God by misstating it.
4. The result is that when a believer gets under a pastor who is not teaching Bible Doctrine sticking with the word of God analyzing and categorizing and exegeting it, this is what will occur with you.

G.

2Tim 2:16

v16: But keep avoiding teaching, satanic policies of evil, bleeding heart Human Good functions, anti-doctrinal or profane, ridiculing, contemptuous, blasphemous, irreverent, defamatory, obliquis, negative treatment of Bible Doctrine, empty talk or useless argumentation for they will cause you to grow worse, progress, advance or get deeper, or farther into or toward reversionism.

2Tim 2:17

v17: In fact the word of teaching or preaching from the reversionistic, apostate, false Pastor Teacher from the pulpit, will in the future spread or increase like cancer, being totally evil, among whom is Hymenaeus {ITim 1:19-20} and Philetus.

2Tim 2:18

v18: Such a category of pastors, Hymenaeus and Philetus along with their congregations, who have departed from, missed the point of the doctrine as to why the believer after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God is left alive on the earth, communicating that the rapture or resurrection of the Royal Family of God, has already occurred and they are constantly overturning, subverting, corrupting, destroying the doctrine of certain reversionistic believers, enhancing their reversionism.

Lesson #43

Series # 469

2Tim 2:19

- I. 5th command of what is expected or what is the responsibility of the Pastor: to make a constant issue out of Bible Doctrine.
 - A. Bible Doctrine is more important than the air we breathe, the only way we advance in the Spiritual Life, the means of the tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict therefore there must be a constant issue made about Bible Doctrine to those interested in Bible Doctrine.
 - B. Apostasy, reversionism or evil does not shake the foundation of this dispensation which is the preservation of Bible Doctrine in the Canon of Scripture
 1. The continued existence of the local church and Pastor Teachers who are faithful in teaching the word of God and Super Grace Pastor Teachers, although at times a very few, is always true in history no matter the circumstances.
 2. The foundation spoken of in v19 is the spiritual growth through the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to the point of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace from consistent intake of Bible Doctrine taught by the Pastor Teacher.
 3. This is not a foundation which can ever crumble and is called SOLID which is the means of spiritual growth and of glorifying God and our spiritual advance.
 4. This is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the canon of scripture preserved by God along with the local church and the proper function of the local church which will continue to exist in every generation for spiritual growth of the believer
 - i. None of the outside service organizations are not ever the basis for believers to grow to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Spiritual Life.
 - C. The Solid foundation of the Church Age for the believer is a 3 part principle:
 1. Bible Doctrine resident in the canon of scripture
 2. congregation of believers who are under Positive Volition toward that Bible Doctrine.
 3. The Pastor Teacher which is the missing link for communication of that Bible Doctrine to the congregation.

4. The local church often go sour and the Pastor Teacher fails to communicate Bible Doctrine and in failing they either disappear or becoming weak form up with others into denominations.
 - i. Denominations are a group of local churches which are too weak to function on their own and therefore they join up with others for strength.
 - ii. God has never approved of denominations and has never approved of any system outside the local church for spiritual growth.
 5. Evangelism exists outside the local church and occasionally Bible Doctrine is taught outside the local church for some benefit but constant consistent spiritual growth leading to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God does not exist outside the local church functioning with a prepared Pastor Teacher.
 6. All spiritual growth will occur within the framework of the local church as this is the only place where the Pastor Teacher is given total authority and the place where Bible Doctrine can be taught to a group under strict academic discipline.
 7. Even in the middle ages in southern France the Baldensians and later the Huguenots were involved with their local churches outside of Romanism and these were the great Super Grace believers of the middle ages.
 - i. All the prosperity that ever came to France making it the #1 power in the world from Louis XIV to Napoleon was simply the payoff of blessing historically which overflowed from those great French Super Grace believers of the middle ages.
 - ii. The great Protestant movements preexisting the reformation.
 - iii. This has resulted in the Bordeaux area of France which is where these people lived has been the recipient of GREAT blessing through out history to the present day as well related to the spiritual growth of these individuals.
 8. The only possible way of spiritual growth is under strict academic discipline under a prepared Pastor Teacher.
- D. God has a perfect plan and has chosen to stabilize the Human Race by his plan and this is communicated to the believers in the Human Race by means of the teaching of Bible Doctrine.
1. God will never be without those believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in any generation.
 2. Many times these people are unknown but they being under the Plan of God hold up and stabilize history in their generations.
 3. Behind this process is the living or Logistical Grace system which keeps every believer alive in the world ruled by Satan and provides the canon as the text and local churches faithful to the principles of the canon and Pastor Teachers who continue to grow and study and teach for the growth of their congregations.
 4. Whether known or not commented on by historians or not these people are and will continue to be the stabilizers of the Human Race down through the Church Age to the 2nd advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 5. The foundation of Logistical Grace produces that which is needed for the Positive Volition believer and there never has been in Human History any believer who functions consistently under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine who did not receive EVERYTHING needed to continue in history and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and stabilize their generation.
- E. The SEAL and SEALING
1. It is the Grace of God provision to keep anyone who is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine alive to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and thereby glorify God in time.
 - i. Sealing was used in the ancient world for many things and you cannot understand the use of the word SEAL in the bible unless you understand the use of seals in the time of writing of the bible.

- ii. The bible must be interpreted in the time at which it was written (This is the hermeneutical principle of interpreting the bible based on historically when it was written)
2. First of all the seal was used as a guarantee of a transaction.
- i. It denotes for anyone who is going to stand up and face down history no matter how disastrous it may be IF we are continually under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine individually and as a group.
 - ii. We must constantly remember the GOD HAS A PURPOSE FOR OUR LIFE and as long as we are alive we have a purpose in the Plan of God and God will keep you alive as long as that purpose exists.
 - iii. That purpose is always related to Bible Doctrine and we MUST BE CONSISTENT AND UNDER POSITIVE VOLITION TOWARD BIBLE DOCTRINE DAILY.
 - iv. This daily consistency of Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine will turn around the course of history in our generation and we have the potential and opportunity by being consistent and faithful to Bible Doctrine and by continuing to function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception of becoming a spiritual atlas and supporting our generation.
 - v. We are therefore guaranteed from God, Life, provision, everything for our spiritual growth and living and we WILL survive and have blessing in times of disaster in history.
 - a. At the time of this lesson it was a terrible time in history for the United States of America when we had a weak president who cowered before the Chinese communists who were pushing to control all parts of the world.
3. The seal was also used as identification of Ownership.
- i. The seal of our Spiritual Life as a Christian means that God recognizes that EACH OF US BELONG TO HIM.
 - a. The only true issue is whether or not we recognize since the day of our salvation that we are the property of God and under his authority.
 - ii. It is wonderful to realize that the GOD of the universe whose power and authority transcends everything in life, actually owns each of us.
 - iii. He is therefore totally responsible to provide everything we need in life, death and eternity.
4. The Seal was also used for provision
- i. The signet ring was the means of signing checks in the ancient world
 - ii. God is constantly cashing checks for us and has provided the means by which we spend our time in life GLORIFYING HIM and fulfilling the objectives of the Grace Plan of God.
 - iii. This means also having capacity for all aspects of life and love and happiness and prosperity etc.
5. The Seal was used also for Security.
- i. The seal was used to protect something of value and every believer is considered by God something of great value.
 - ii. The Kings treasuries and libraries and storage vaults were he kept his valuables were sealed by him.
 - iii. In connection with the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ there was a tomb he was buried in and the seal was put into the center of the stone which covered the tomb and this meant that Rome owned this tomb and guarded it and all were to stay out.
 - iv. By putting the seal anywhere on the thing to be protected meant that the object was protected by the one placing the seal there.

- v. So it is with us and the seal of God is affixed to us and is part of what God the Holy Spirit does for us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is security for us and means that as far as God is concerned WE ARE SOMETHING OF VALUE TO HIM.
 - vi. Whatever our value may be to the world in general all of the power of God is used to protect, provide and bless each one he has sealed.
 - F. That which is sealed in this passage is of the utmost importance:
 - 1. It is Bible Doctrine in the scripture, communicated to the local church by the Pastor Teacher.
 - 2. It is the importance of Bible Doctrine which makes our life meaningful and fulfills the objective of our Spiritual Life.
 - G. God the Father has acknowledged in the Angelic Conflict as part of his grace plan that each of us as a believer is of infinite value to him.
 - 1. Therefore this is a warning of “HANDS OFF” and unless God permits there is no pressure or adversity which will come to you from Satan.
 - i. God often does permit this as a matter to develop your spiritual growth.
 - 2. The WHOLE Essence of God is behind the provision of God for each and every believer in this Church Age.
 - 3. As we continue under his TOTAL provision and function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception we begin to understand God. **Eph 1:3-6**
 - 4. In this way the Essence of God especially the omniscience of God is related to the Divine Decree and indicates that God is not ever caught off guard by some unusual problem, adversity or disaster in history which happens to YOU.
 - 5. God knew all that would happen to each of us from Eternity Past and made provision for it and providing for it long before any prayer we would utter could occur for help from him.
 - 6. He knew all our prayers and which he would answer and which NOT and WHY or WHY NOT.
 - 7. God in fact answered all prayers of all believers for help and needs in Eternity Past long long before we ever even existed.
 - H. As believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we are in fact SPECIAL to God no matter our Status Quo as believers, good, bad, mature, immature.
 - 1. We know that from the point of our Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to the point of our death God has provided everything for our life imaginable.
 - 2. God knows what we need at any given time and provides all of it and never mixes up anything we need for any reason.
 - I. All we must do as a believer from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to dying grace we must be consistent in the use of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and we will fulfill this.
 - 1. The only thing which keeps us from all the blessing which God has designed for us is what is known as Wickedness which EVIL as the thought pattern from Satan combined with REVERSIONISM which are the mechanics of rejection of the Plan of God.
 - J. Every Pastor Teacher must emphasize Bible Doctrine.
- II. Classification of the Congregation:
- A. The objective of the ministry of the Pastor Teacher is to lead his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace accomplished by the consistent studying and teaching of Bible Doctrine.
 - B. Maturity as the concept is called Super Grace (James 4;6), etc.
 - C. The Super Grace believer is spiritually self sustaining and a beneficiary of his own Super Grace package of blessing.
 - 1. He is not however independent in that he can walk to the hospital or lie in a field and die gloriously without any pastor holding his hand or anyone else.
 - 2. He can face any disaster and handle it by himself without anyone helping him.

3. He can walk out and have the greatest blessing and handle it perfectly and face anything on the outside of the local church with what God provides for him whether blessing or adversity.
4. He is capable of handling these adversities and prosperities after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - i. The ability to handle great prosperity and maintaining the spiritual status quo before reaching Super Grace is doubtful at best since very few people have the capacity to handle prosperity dumped on them suddenly and unexpectedly.
 - ii. If the believer is however prepared spiritually then they will be capable of handling it and enjoying it to the maximum and it will be used as a part of glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. Our promotion, wealth, prosperity in every category, spiritual growth, is all a means of glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and part of the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict.

- D. The Super Grace believer glorifies Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in receiving these blessings and maintains this glorification by NOT being spoiled by his success and prosperity.
- E. HOWEVER, we will see that every local church contains all kinds of believers even when Bible Doctrine is taught faithfully there are those who do not concentrate and assimilate the doctrine and therefore are in the congregation but do not benefit from the teaching.
- F. Not all believers are under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and not all are amenable to discipline and authority exercised by the Pastor Teacher in communication of doctrine therefore NOT all believers in any given congregation are advancing in the Spiritual Life.
- G. Therefore this 2nd parenthesis the objective of v21.
- H. The classification of the congregation is portrayed through analogy and we will see the doctrine of Vessels.

III. The Church as a spiritual house 1Pet 2:5 and it takes ONLY 2-3 to be there for the teaching of Bible Doctrine.

- A. House is therefore used for the local church and a large house it must be.
 1. Any place where royalty assembles may only have 5 people there but it still will be a LARGE house.
 2. A King may live in a castle without wife or children and have 50 servants but they do not live in the house but the HOUSE is still a LARGE HOUSE.
 3. Therefore it is reference to the HOUSE not the number of people in it and it is where royalty meets for spiritual growth and fulfill the basics of the Plan of God.
- B. In every generation there are different categories of believers in attendance at the local church.
 1. All kinds of vessels exist in the congregation of the local church.
 2. A Vessel in this passage is referring to any kind of household furnishings including containers or chairs or tables etc.
- C. Therefore here is mentioned a CASTLE with GOLDEN FURNITURE and this refers in analogy to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 1. These are the KEY members of the congregation and they are not picked by the Pastor Teacher but Positive Volition and consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to Super Grace are the KEYS in the congregation.
- D. From the standpoint of positional truth we are all equal as believers in the Royal Family of God but from the standpoint of Experiential Truth we are all TOTALLY UNEQUAL.
 1. WE are not born equal, we do not live equally, we do not die equally and we certainly do not have the same equal spiritual growth and the reason for this is that we all have varying degrees of Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 2. This is a personal decision between the believer and the Lord and NO ONE ELSE'S business whether you are consistent or not in the study of Bible Doctrine and this is FREEDOM!!!!

3. If you are going to be objective in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine you must MAKE YOUR OWN DECISIONS about Bible Doctrine.
 4. If you do bible study under coercion you have lost the battle already and it takes about ½ the lesson to get back into fellowship and learn anything and by the time you do get with it you are so mad about what you missed you are MAD again and miss again.
 5. The Angelic Conflict hangs TOTALLY on FREE WILL and this means you must do things with reference to the Plan of God such as engage in the study of Bible Doctrine daily BECAUSE YOU WANT TO DO IT NOT BECAUSE SOMEONE ELSE WANTS YOU TO DO IT OR EXPECTS YOU TO DO IT.
 6. The great failure of the Pastor Teacher generally is that they try to live the lives of the congregation for them.
 7. Bible Doctrine must be what tells all of us how to live and the motivation to listen to the doctrine must come from you own SOUL not someone else's.
 8. IF you free will says STAY HOME or SKIP BIBLE STUDY then do it as unto the Lord ONLY not because someone pressures you into doing it.
 9. You have to live life as unto the Lord make your own decisions and it is this freedom to refuse to expose yourself to Bible Doctrine teaching or freedom to do so and the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception after exposure is what makes the difference in the VESSELS in this passage.
 10. EXPERIENTIALLY there is an incredible difference among those in the congregation as long as the Pastor Teacher is actually teaching Bible Doctrine properly.
 11. If the local church is not teaching Bible Doctrine properly they will develop programs for the congregation and when they perceive they are weak in the Spiritual Life they will form together with others and create a denomination like ROMANISM which was the first church to do so.
 12. When the leadership such as the POPE of the Roman Church sits EXCATHEDRA and makes policy outside of the principles of Bible Doctrine then that denomination is an abomination.
- E. There are many organizations which can and have led individuals and groups to the Lord in evangelism and this is a fantastic legitimate function.
1. However there is NO OTHER PLACE for spiritual growth to occur than in the local church itself.
- F. Silver Vessels are those believers who are consistent in their Positive Volition and Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine but who have not reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as yet.
1. A congregation is therefore classified as HONORABLE, composed of GOLD and SILVER Furniture types and DISHONORABLE composed of Wood and Clay furniture types.
- G. Today household furnishings of wood are often beautiful and totally acceptable but in the ancient world the homes considered best had permanent metal furnishings and wood was only used because it was cheaper and one could not afford the other therefore WOOD 2000 years ago meant something totally different than it does today.
1. Wood here refers to the consistently carnal believer who is under the influence of Sin which keeps him from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 2. Recovery is by means of rebound procedure for the believer and it results in INSTANT recovery.
 3. We are all carnal (1John 1) but here this believer permits his carnality to hamper his perception of Bible Doctrine.
 4. He comes to bible study carnal and does not rebound and is therefore is grieving and quenching God the Holy Spirit and the spiritual teaching is meaningless to him.

5. It is possible for a believer to be carnal and still be under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and advancing in the Spiritual Life.
- H. Clay or earthen furnishings refer to the reversionistic believer who is under the influence of the evil of satanic thinking.
1. On the cross SIN of all the world was judged but EVIL of the policy and thinking of Satan was rejected and must continue.
 2. Recovery from EVIL Influence in REVERSIONISM requires a great deal of time to remove the EVIL from the thinking process and replace it with Bible Doctrine.
 3. It is true that the reversionist is carnal but ALL Carnal believers are NOT in reversionism.
 4. The reversionist is a believer who is carnal but who also has consistent Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
- I. The honorable believer is one who has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
1. This believer is either MOVING TOWARD Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or has arrived there and is HOLDING position.
 2. Paul has emphasized here that there is a great distinction between beauty and ugliness in the mind of GOD.
 3. Beauty and Ugliness as perceived by God in the believer is found in the soul and has to do with attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
 4. In the Divine Viewpoint it is not what you are on the exterior but what you are in the soul.
- J. There are HONORABLE believers under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine who function consistently under the Grace Apparatus for Perception under their right Pastor Teacher whether they do it in person or another way.
1. Gold furnishings refer to the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
 2. Silver furnishings refer to the believer who are consistently under Positive Volition and are advancing in the Spiritual Life and closing in on Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- K. There are DISHONORABLE believers who are either consistently carnal and distracted by sin from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine or under consistent Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and in reversionism under the influence of evil.
1. Wood furnishings refer to the carnal believer who is under the influence of SIN and distracted from function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - i. These believers are against or antagonistic toward the Pastor Teacher or his teaching and is vindictive, implacable, and antagonistic.
 - ii. Being constantly antagonized by the teaching of Bible Doctrine he remains consistently carnal.
 2. Clay or Earthen furnishings refer to the reversionistic believer under the influence of EVIL totally under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.

2Tim 2:19

v19: However, the solid foundation of spiritual growth through the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception to the point of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in a local church under your right Pastor Teacher which is from the ultimate source of The God keeps on and continues to stand fast or hold it's ground stabilizing it's generation in history, having this seal The Lord, God the Father author of the Grace Plan of God, has acknowledged, recognized in Eternity Past, that in the Angelic Conflict those of infinite value who belong to Him. In fact let everyone who is in the Royal Family of God has used what God the Father has provided from Eternity Past, the name or person of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for salvation withdraw or depart from wickedness the evil combined with reversionism.

2Tim 2:20

v20: Now in a large house, the local church for the Royal Family of God to meet, there are NOT ONLY golden vessels, household furniture, analogous to believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and silver household furnishings, analogous to believers who are consistently under positive volition, but also vessels or household furnishings of

wood, analogous to the consistently carnal believers distracted from Bible Doctrine by sin, and vessels or household furnishings of clay or earthenware, analogous to reversionistic believers consistently under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine; in fact, there are, on the one hand, certain ones, under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, who refer to honor and, on the other hand, there are certain ones, distracted by sin from or under consistent Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, referring to dishonor.

Lesson #44 Series # 469 2Tim 2:21

I. Principles:

- A. All reversionists to recover must do so by the use of their own volition which was in fact the means of entering reversionism for them.
 - 1. All reversionists are under the influence of evil.
 - 2. Apostasy has 2 sides of one coin, one is reversionism and the other is evil.
- B. This is a 3rd class conditional sentence with a potential fulfillment and the supposition is that a reversionist can and should clean out his soul from evil in order to recover.
 - 1. The fulfillment of this supposition is his condition after recovery.
 - 2. Apostate believers when they change their mind about their Status Quo reversionism will turn around toward Bible Doctrine and become very positive and intense and take in Bible Doctrine at every opportunity and will in fact overdose with Bible Doctrine in order to clean the EVIL from their soul.
 - 3. Evil must be driven out of the soul before a believer can recover from reversionism.
 - 4. As doctrine enters the soul EVIL is pushed out and by the time you reach reversion recovery all the evil will have been pushed out so that at the same time you are recovering from reversionism you have also been moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

II. The Doctrine of Vessels:

- A. Etymology
 - 1. (gr) SKEUE == refers to any house hold Furnishing or container of any kind, table, chair, paintings, containers.
 - 2. (gr) SKEUOS == a vessel, drinking cup, vase or storage vessel of some kind.
 - 3. (gr) AGGEION == a flask or container
 - 4. (heb) KELI == any kind of household furnishings
 - 5. (heb) MAEN == a vessel or container
 - 6. (heb) NEBEL == a wineskin or leather skin of some kind.
- B. Definition
 - 1. In the ancient world there were many kinds of vessels
 - i. Jars for storage of grains and foods
 - ii. Vases for flowers etc.
 - iii. Large Jars for holding spears and arrows and weapons
 - iv. Drinking cups and vessels were extremely common.
 - 2. Wooden, leather, baskets, sacks, bottles, etc.
 - 3. Pottery is the key to many of the secrets of ancient history and there are many references to this.
 - 4. Metal vessels of Gold and Silver were used by those who could afford them and in the tabernacle of the Jews for many things.
 - 5. Manna Jars for the Arc.
 - 6. Store Water and wine and oil and food for storing clothing and for sewage.
- C. Under the principle of election the believer is said to be a chosen vessel and as such is said to be filled with Bible Doctrine. **Acts 9:15**
 - 1. A vessel is useless when it is empty and only usable when it is filled.
 - 2. Election in Acts 9 is saying that God has a plan for Paul's life and before God can use Paul he as a vessel must be filled with Bible Doctrine.

3. We are never usable nor used by God nor ever fulfill the Plan of God designed for us in Eternity Past until we are filled vessels with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- D. Vessels are used to demonstrate the Essence of God in his treatment of both believers and unbeliever. **Rom 9:19-23**
1. Paul had a great sense of humor and a great sense of sarcasm and when some would as they still do today ask incredibly stupid questions he would use these together to make a point.
 2. God is perfect and whenever a human being calls God to task for anything this is a demonstration of the imbecility of that human being.
 - i. It is impossible for God to be imperfect and wrong and for his character in any way to jeopardize his plan and for his character to be INCONSISTENT.
 - ii. God is perfect and can do no wrong and the sovereignty of God is perfect as well as all other parts of the Essence of God.
 - iii. God in his sovereignty has never and can never make a bad decision.
 - iv. God is Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice and therefore makes perfect decisions and it is impossible for God to make an unfair decision and he never has made one with reference to any of us from the cradle to the grave.
 - v. When God takes one out of this life it is fair, just and perfect in timing and we must never question it.
 - vi. God cannot make an unfair nor bad decision and therefore the sovereign decisions are in keeping with the perfect Essence of God.
 3. Paul was a multi genius and a relaxed genius and could actually assume the position of one who was a jackass in order to make a point.
 - i. To show you his relaxed genius and never took stuff too seriously nor shattered into a thousand pieces because of circumstances, he was the kind of a genius who always related to reality because he enjoyed taking the position of someone who is stupid.
 - ii. You have to be flexible, smart with a great sense of humor and be totally relaxed and know how you think and how a jackass thinks.
 4. Here is a person questioning God trying to be profound and really is not.
 - i. The Essence of God
 - a. Sovereignty
 - b. Justice
 - c. Righteousness
 - d. Love
 - e. Omniscience
 - f. Omnipresence
 - g. Omnipotence
 - h. Veracity
 - i. Eternal Life
 - j. Immutability
 - k. Sovereignty
 - ii. These characteristics demonstrate that GOD can do no wrong
 - iii. The sovereignty of God is part of the Essence and character of God therefore the Sovereignty of God is PERFECT!
 - a. If his sovereignty is perfect God cannot make a bad decision.
 - iv. **God can and has never made a bad nor unfair decisions.**
 - a. If the Essence of God is perfect and sovereignty is part of his essence then his sovereignty is perfect and if his sovereignty is perfect it is impossible for his sovereignty to make a bad or unfair decision.

- b. When you or anyone else dies it is the sole decision of God and he has never made a bad decision and therefore we cannot ever question any of the decisions of God.
- c. As you live and God provides for you don't every question it and what he provides and how he provides it for he cannot make a bad decision.
- d. The only ones who can make bad decisions are those created by God, angels and people.
- v. People can make bad decisions for the simple reason that WE ARE NOT PERFECT.
 - a. This is the difficulty of understanding God at times for he is SO PERFECT and we are SO IMPERFECT, he is totally CONSISTENT and we are totally INCONSISTENT, he is so very SMART and we are extremely STUPID.
 - b. Bible Doctrine is what is supposed to and does take up the slack.
- vi. With the believer propitiation makes it possible for God to provide GRACE blessings and to do so without compromise to his character.
 - a. All of us are imperfect in varying degrees and the best of us are the worst of us and the worst of us are the best so that when God blesses us it really takes something to bless the best or worst because we are SO IMPERFECT and the contrast is so very great.
 - b. God found a way to bless us and STILL be perfect.
 - c. What happens when a NICE guy blesses a NOT SO NICE guy? He becomes not so nice eventually as well.
 - i) This is how nice guys become not so nice and then obnoxious and this happens because they LOWER themselves to bless someone who is NOT nice at all.
 - ii) When the nice guy blesses the not so nice guy who knows all the tricks to get attention and blessing the nice guy eventually is torn apart by this and becomes NOT SO NICE.
 - d. This is the problem which GOD faces since NONE of us are NICE.
 - e. How is God going to bless you and I who are spiritually dead, sinful, under the kingdom of Satan from the fall of Adam and still remain PERFECT.
 - f. IT IS IMPOSSIBLE FOR GOD TO BLESS US AND RETAIN HIS PERFECTION BUT HE FOUND A WAY AND THE ANSWER IS THROUGH HIS GRACE PLAN.
 - g. This answer goes right back to the CROSS and the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross for all human sins.
 - h. The Absolute Righteousness of God the Father is what is in danger and with the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross for all human sins the Absolute Righteousness of God the Father was satisfied so that through the cross there can be blessing for the one who receives the cross by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone therefore the Righteousness of God remains intact.
 - i. If God would bless us just straight across the board for all people like imbecilic people want him to, "all roads lead to heaven etc", and took the unbeliever as a spiritually dead person and blessed him he would not be able to keep his righteousness intact.
 - j. It is not righteous and not perfect for God to bless all the unbelievers.
 - k. This would also compromise the Justice of God and if God even once compromised his justice and righteousness then with all the omnipotence

he possesses he would be the greatest MONSTER in history and this is blasphemous and unthinkable.

- l. If one time only God loses his righteousness or justice he will not lose his power and this creates the MONSTER.
- m. Instead he is the source of all blessing because the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross guarantees that the Righteousness of God and Justice of God are not compromised because Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ had Absolute Righteousness as a HUMAN satisfying the Righteousness of God the father and in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death bore all sins of all humanity satisfying the Justice of God the father.
- n. Some parts of the Old Sin Nature had to be judged and some parts were not judged else we would not have the Angelic Conflict appeal in progress.
 - i) (ff) Sin is not part of the Plan or policy of Satan the therefore COULD be and WAS judged on the cross to give Mankind the option of choosing FOR the Grace Plan of God or For the EVIL plan of Satan.
 - ii) This was the area of weakness of the Old Sin Nature producing SIN which was judged.
 - iii) The area of strength of the Old Sin Nature producing Good and Evil could not be judged as it is the plan and policy of Satan the whole reason for the Angelic Conflict Trial and for the demonstrations of God for the LOSS of his Appeal.
- o. This is because of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross and God the Father and God the Holy Spirit and God the Son all knew the cross would happen from the very start of Human History it was possible for GOD to bless man in Status Quo Spiritual Death without compromise to his essence.
- vii. With the unbeliever who has rejected the cross there is no propitiation factor and therefore GOD must curse him because the Righteousness of God and Justice of God have not been propitiated.
- viii. In answer to the question of this imbecile, Paul first asks 2 questions of his own
 - a. WHO are you to answer back or question GOD
 - b. Does anyone have the right to question their creator
 - c. Paul is saying that you as a creature of the eternal God have about as much right to say to the creator “Why have you made me this way” as a pot has to question the potter who makes it.

5. The Answer:

- i. The creature has no more right to challenge the creator than the pot has to challenge the potter. (in fact he has less right).
- ii. When God created Man he placed in his soul a FREE WILL which is a facsimile of his own sovereignty in order to resolve the Angelic Conflict.
 - a. Furthermore God in his grace provided everything man needed for that free will to decide for GOD and the Grace Plan of God.
 - i) The Score in the Garden was 3 to 1
 - a) FOR Man with God
 - (i) Trees for the aesthetics of the soul
 - (ii) Trees for the food of the body
 - (iii) Tree of Lives for capacity for a created adult to appreciate what God had provided.
 - b) For Man with Satan

- (i) The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
 - c) At the fall the choice was the 1 over the 3.
 - iii. God provided everything so that free will could always choose for the GRACE Plan of God.
 - a. He chose food to keep himself alive
 - b. He chose trees for the eyes developing his culture and aesthetics and soul stimulation.
 - c. He chose the tree of lives giving him capacity thereby appreciating what God had provided.
 - d. However MAN eventually chose the Plan and Policy of Satan over that of God.
 - i) Neither Good and Evil were needed for a relationship with God.
 - ii) When man partook of this tree he instantly knew Good and Evil and was thereby spiritually dead.
 - iii) When the woman partook of the tree she was Spiritually dead but ADAM still ruled the world.
 - iv) When Adam partook of the tree he was not only spiritually dead but a coup DE Tat occurred and Satan was instantly ruler of the world.
 - v) Satan then immediately began enforcing the policy of Good and Evil and said “you know what Good is now so you cannot run around naked any longer therefore you must make clothing”.
 - vi) The background for this is the thinking and policy of Evil.
 - e. That was a CREATION relationship between MAN and GOD
 - f. After the fall man is born without capacity and under Spiritual Death with is Old Sin Nature and therefore the only possible way for him to have a relationship with God is to be BORN AGAIN.
 - i) This is possible because the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross makes it possible for God to make a decision to provide Eternal Salvation for that person and also to bless them in time without compromise his character.
 - g. Free will had to have a TEST and the test was the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - iv. **When a person expresses faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone God is then free** to express his love provide Eternal Life and the basis for time, dying and eternity.
 - a. He can give any believer anything he wants at any time and can give any believer the most unbelievable fantastic things because he is FREE to do so without compromise to his essence.
 - b. He has been freed by the propitiation resulting from the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - c. God is free to MAX any believer when it comes to blessing.
 - v. God is not compromised in any way by blessing the believer in time because Propitiation satisfied the Justice of God and Righteousness of God.
 - vi. Why did God make man thus? TO RESOLVE THE Angelic Conflict and GLORIFY GOD, AND TO VINDICATE THE SOVEREIGN DECISION OF GOD TO CAST ALL FALLEN ANGELS INTO THE LAKE OF FIRE FOR ALL ETERNITY. **Matt 25:41**
- E. The potter, GOD has every right to make from the same lump of volition in the soul of man a vessel for honor or a vessel for dishonor.

1. The person who achieve Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God receives at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God 39 irrevocable assets from God for his Spiritual Life in time and positionally this is being a vessel of HONOR.
 - i. Therefore the vessel of honor is a person who has Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. By providing them the POTTER has taken part of this LUMP and molded out of it a beautiful vessel, ONE of Honor.
 - iii. The 39 assets from God are the molding of HONOR in the clay of a believer.
 2. As a result of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross and the resultant propitiation God is totally free to provide these 39 irrevocable assets and the Filling of God the Holy Spirit for every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ creating a vessel of HONOR.
 3. Neither the believer's carnality nor his reversionism nor the influence of evil detract from what God has provided at his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and what God has made positionally as a vessel of HONOR.
 - i. Therefore ONCE a vessel of Honor always a vessel of Honor.
 - a. This is talking about Salvation for the whole Human Race NOT a castle with varying furnishings within it.
 - ii. You cannot lose this Status Quo of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is the way the potter, GOD has made each believer.
 4. On the other hand the unbeliever is a vessel of dishonor
 5. The unbeliever superimposes his own volition over the volition of God.
 - i. The Clay tells the potter how he is going to be made.
 6. The unbeliever is not willing to allow God to save him and mold him into a vessel of honor.
 7. The unbeliever chooses his own efforts and works for salvation and this is called a vessel of dishonor.
 8. Therefore his OWN WORKS make the unbeliever a vessel of dishonor.
- F. When the person as an unbeliever choosing to ignore the grace Plan of God lives his life according to his own efforts and works then GOD has every right to condemn him to destruction, DEATH and then the Lake of Fire.
1. This is a vessel of dishonor which is useful only to be thrown out and discarded.
 - i. This vessel made himself this way by his own volitional decisions.
 - ii. God offered the pattern for becoming a vessel of honor with the 39 assets for the one choosing Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God but this person rejected this offer.
 2. God is very long suffering for the unbeliever who decides against him.
 3. God gives the unbeliever every possible opportunity to decide for him by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 4. Constant rejection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ means that the Justice of God and Righteousness of God must only recognize what has occurred in the molding the lump of human clay into a vessel of dishonor, wrath and destruction and when his time comes God then says JUDGMENT, the Lake of Fire, throw that vessel into the scrap heap.
- G. We have no right to question what God does or has done to the unbeliever
1. Because God is Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice he has good sense and MUST reject the vessel which has molded itself into one of dishonor for destruction.
 2. The Righteousness of God says NO GOOD to that vessel of dishonor and the Justice of God throws it into the Lake of Fire as junk.
 - i. He does this in order to provide blessing for the vessels of honor.
 3. God knew in Eternity Past everyone who would believe in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and all who would not.

4. At that time he made a sovereign decision and that decision was registered in the Divine Decree.
5. This is a simple paragraph which says, "He who believes in the Son is not judged but He who does not believe in the Son is judged already, BECAUSE he has not believed in the Name or Person of the uniquely born Son of God".
 - i. God provided at that time in Eternity Past by means of the divine decree every thing needed by the believer in time his 39 assets, the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, everything for life, his Super Grace blessings in time and surpassing grace blessings for eternity.
 - ii. NEVER question God his judgment and wisdom and he is infinitely and totally superior to us in every way and he always has all facts while we most often have very little fact.

Rom 9:19-23

v19: Therefore You will say to me, "Why does he (God) still find fault? For then who can or has ever resisted, opposed or stood against his, God's will, plan, goal, intention or purpose?"

Rom 9:20

v20: On the contrary, YOU ARE WRONG, stupid, imbecilic, irrational, idiotic Mankind, HEY STUPID, who are YOU who are impudent, contradictory and answer back with unjustifiable accusations to THE Eternal God? Can what is formed or molded, the arrogant man here the Jew, say to its molder God, "Why have you manufactured or made me like this?" NO of course NOT!

Rom 9:21

v21: Or does not the potter (God) possess power or authority over the clay or wet mud (Mankind) from the same lump of volitional free will clay to make, mold or manufacture, on the one hand a vessel or container for the purpose of Honor and on the other hand a vessel or container for the purpose of Dishonor, YES, of course he does.

Rom 9:22

v22: Moreover, If, as is the case, and it is true, The God; having every right to use his free will, and wishing or willing to demonstrate or show, but you say he has no right to show, his anger or wrath or indignation in divine judgment and to reveal and make known his omnipotent power in the 5th Cycle of Discipline; has endured over a prolonged time with great patience (Ex 6-12) unbeliever vessels of anger or wrath including the Big Blot Out, they having been prepared or equipped for destruction by their own volition in the last judgment.

Rom 9:23

v23: And he, God, did so in order that he, God, might totally lucidly reveal and make known through our perception and inculcation, in order to give another chance for possessing Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, the unique true wealth and true riches of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, which belong to him and are his glory, on vessels of mercy or grace in action through imputation of blessing in time to believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, which vessels he has previously prepared or appointed before hand or ahead of time in Eternity Past, for Glory.

- H. Vessels are used to provide an analogy between Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and capacity for life for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. **2Cor 4:7**
 1. The treasure in this passage is Bible Doctrine in the vessel of the believer.
 2. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul keeps us from tampering with the Plan of God.
 3. Doctrine keeps us from trying to mess up the Plan of God for our lives.
- I. Therefore vessels are used to contrast the believer in Status Quo Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and the believer in reversionism. **2Tim 2:20-21**
 1. Positive believers are metal or Gold and Silver furnishings
 - i. These are vessels of Honor who are under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine
 2. Negative Believers are wood and clay furnishings.
 - i. These are vessels of dishonor who are under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 3. V21 is the believer who is under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and recovers from reversionism will also become a vessel of honor and prepared for the production of Divine Good in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God. **Prov 25:4**

4. Evil and reversionism is taken from the silver and there comes out a vessel for the smith, GOD.
 5. Therefore the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace honors God.
 6. The same emphasis as **2Tim 2:21** the EVIL must be removed and displaced by Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
- J. Vessels are related to Category II Love and always refer to the WOMAN because there is a sense in which a woman without her right man is empty as a vessel. **1Thes 4:4, 1Pet 3:7,**
1. Each Man must know how to possess his vessel in sanctification and honor keeping her away from every other predatory male and it also means his love for her fills her.
 2. Here is a use of sanctification where the Man must isolate the woman who responds to him only from all other predatory males.
 3. Because this type of woman is animated by her response to her right man other males tend to become predatory around her because she is very attractive to them.
 4. The woman is called the weaker vessel because she is empty without her right man.
 5. She is due honor as a fellow heir so that the prayers of the husband and wife may not be hindered.
 6. When a marriage is composed of wrong man and wrong woman they have **very little** chance of having prayers answered.
 7. The woman is empty as a vessel body and soul and the man must fill the empty soul with category II Love of soul rapport while he fills the body with the sexual relationship of true love.
 8. Domestic Incompatibility with wrong man and wrong woman hinders an effective prayer life on the part of these 2.
- K. Shattered vessels are used to describe personal judgment from God. **Rom 9, Ps 31;12**
1. The judgment from God on *David in reversionism* makes him forgotten and out of mind by God.
 2. **Jer 22:28**, Koniah also in reversionism is despised and undesirable and he and his descendants are cast out and judged.
 3. Apostate communicators of Bible Doctrine are also shattered vessels. **Jer 25:34**
- L. Shattered vessels are used also to describe national judgments
1. Northern Kingdom **Hos 8:8-9**
 - i. Assyrians took the northern kingdom under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline in 721 BC
 2. Southern Kingdom **Jer 51:34**
 - i. Nebecannesar of Babylon
 3. Gentile nations in the tribulation **Ps 2:9**

Lesson #45 Series # 469 2Tim 2:21

- I. Recovery from Reversionism:
 - A. When the believer exercises the same volition which brought him into reversionism in order to get out of reversionism he automatically will be moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or into that Status Quo and therefore he is again USEFUL to the master, the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- II. Doctrine of Divine Good:
 - A. Definition:
 1. Divine Good is the production primarily of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or the believer who is growing and close to reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, the one progressing ahead in the Spiritual Life.
 - i. When the believer is growing and progressing in the Spiritual Life toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace there is a minimal production of Divine Good from this believer.

- ii. You do start producing Divine Good before reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace but it is not very impressive until you get there.
 - 2. Divine Good is the most effective Christian production the believer can have in his life.
 - 3. This production has its source from God directly and the mechanics are found in the balance of residence of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- B. There are 3 types of GOOD in Human History:
 - 1. Human Good occurred first and is the production of or from EVIL Satan's policy.
 - i. It comes first after Adam and Ishah partook from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil in the garden.
 - ii. Evil is the thinking of Satan therefore his PLAN and POLICY for ruling the earth in this appeal time of the Angelic Conflict Trial.
 - iii. GOOD is the application of EVIL to experience.
 - iv. This can only be produced by the unbeliever or the reversionistic believer.
 - v. {(ff) ?? Maybe also the carnal believer or immature believer???
 - 2. Moral Good is the observance of the Laws of Divine Establishment
 - i. This can be produced by anyone believer or unbeliever who understands and observes the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - 3. Divine Good which is the production of the growing or maturing believer of the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 4. GOOD is defined by the context of WHICH TYPE is being referred to!!!
- C. The Source of Divine Good:
 - 1. The production of Divine Good occurs only when there is a balance of residence in the soul of the believer.
 - 2. It takes 2 factors to produce Divine Good in the Plan of God:
 - i. Filling of God the Holy Spirit
 - a. This requires the use of rebound consistently for instant recovery from carnality.
 - b. This can be lost through sin but the recovery is instantaneous because all sins were judged in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - ii. Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - a. We begin our Spiritual Life minus Bible Doctrine therefore incapable of producing Divine Good.
 - b. This only becomes a PLUS doctrine because of consistent daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception
 - c. When this becomes a MAXIMUM PLUS there will be maximum production of Divine Good which is the result of being a believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - d. Where there is some Bible Doctrine and then more and more there can be and is a little production of Divine Good starting dribbles and gets stronger and becomes a stream as you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - e. The balance of residence or experiential sanctification is the NORMAL Super Grace life and the place for production of Divine Good.
 - f. When the Royal priest constructs his "ALTAR" in the soul of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then he can produce Divine Good.
 - 3. There are therefore 4 sources of Divine Good:
 - i. Filling of God the Holy Spirit is a source but must be related to some level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

- a. When God the Holy Spirit controls the soul under the Status Quo of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and there is some Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there can be and is an expression of this in production of some Divine Good.
 - ii. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is a source and is required to be at a relatively HIGH level to produce Divine Good:
 - a. The consistent function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception produces an increasing level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - b. This displaces evil and the satanic policies, principles and planning and is therefore a key source.
 - iii. The Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo which results from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine to a MAXIMUM level is also a source.
 - a. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is the point at which the believer has the dynamics of Divine Good.
 - b. In fellowship this believer can ONLY produce Divine Good and when out of fellowship he may not produce much but is not producing Human Good {(FF) this infers that ever other level of maturity in the believer when out of fellowship with less Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can in fact produce Human Good}
 - iv. The Status Quo of Ultra Super Grace adds one more ingredient to the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the balance of residence, which is CONTINUOUS adversity or evidence testing.
 - a. Every function in life for this believer is the production of Divine Good in the midst of maximum pressure and adversity and suffering.
- D. The believer in time was designed to produce Divine Good: **Eph 2:10**
1. This is a part of the Plan of God for the life of every believer.
 - i. He does not produce the same kind of Divine Good as anyone else.
 - ii. After he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace everything he does is Divine Good and upon reaching Ultra Super Grace EVERYTHING he does is Divine Good.
 2. In Eternity Past God knew how much Metabolized Bible Doctrine you would have in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul at every stage of your life and therefore he “prefabricated” all the Divine Good that you would produce from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit + Bible Doctrine in Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace and a dribble before this Status Quo.
 - i. The idea of using famous believers to give testimony is ridiculous and does not produce Divine Good and their testimony is pitiful and does not advance the Plan of God nor cause of God.
 - ii. God does not need people to advance his plan.
 3. All new believers LIKE CHILDREN should be seen and not heard since in the spiritual realm that is exactly what they are.
 - i. Until the new believer has accumulated some Bible Doctrine in the soul he should simply KEEP HIS MOUTH SHUT.
 - ii. Testimonies is a big thing and a PR thing with fundamentalist churches but generally are not efficacious and do not count for Divine Good.
 - iii. The ONLY production that counts is that which is based on something in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is there as a result of GRACE
 - iv. These include:
 - a. Filling of God the Holy Spirit

- i) This is based on the Grace Plan of God and the GRACE principle of the rebound technique
 - b. Metabolized Bible Doctrine accumulated
 - i) this is based on the Grace principle of in perspicacity of Bible Doctrine the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - v. These accumulate to a balance of residence in the soul of the believer resulting in the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - a. The Super Grace believer WHEN HE IS NOT CARNAL always produces Divine Good.
 - b. EVERY time the Ultra Super Grace wiggles his finger it IS the production of Divine Good.
- E. Therefore the production of Divine Good is related to living or Logistical Grace **2Cor 9:8**
1. This is all God has and continues to do to keep each believer alive and the reason we are still here in time.
 - i. This is why we are alive and FEEL GOOD or **ALIVE AND FEEL BAD WHICH MEANS WE REALLY KNOW WE ARE ALIVE.**
 - ii. We are alive by the courtesy of God.
 - iii. When he decides that it is time to LEAVE for each of us MEDICINE has never found a way to counter the sovereignty of God so you will leave this world at that point NO MATTER WHAT MEDICAL SCIENCE DOES.
 - iv. You may be in the best health but medicine cannot keep you here and when it is time to depart this life there is nothing which will keep you here.
 - v. It is also important for the believer to also realize that the OPPOSITE side of this view is also quite pertinent and we must enjoy life and live it to the fullest as that is why we are still alive in the first place because UNTIL it is time for us to depart this life under the Plan of God and sovereignty of God NOTHING CAN REMOVE US EVER.
 2. Therefore LIFE is pretty simple and the only time it gets complex is when the believer gets mixed up with evil and when that occurs he is confused all the time.
 3. Production of Divine Good is actually related to progress in the Spiritual Life therefore it is closely related to the many facets of Living or Logistical Grace since you have to be alive to advance in the Spiritual Life and to produce Divine Good.
 - i. This is ALL the things needed for the believer to be able to take in Bible Doctrine from the simplest necessity to the greatest blessing all related to the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

2Cor 9:8

v8: And the God has the purpose and ability (omnipotence) to cause all Grace to super abound to you (Super Grace Blessings in time), in order that always having a capacity for life, all sufficiency (temporal security) in everything you may super abound or have a super abundance with reference to the production of divine good function.

4. The Abundance from Logistical Grace is having maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - i. When the soul bulges from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine it does so from the elapse of time of the believer being in regular attendance in bible study also a part of Logistical Grace.
 - ii. No matter what you are, who you are or where you are GOD IS STILL ABLE TO PROVIDE ALL YOUR NEEDS.
5. YOU ARE GUARANTEED TO HAVE 'SUFFICIENCY' OF GAS FOR THE CAR TO GET TO BIBLE STUDY, ELECTRICITY FOR YOUR TAPE RECORDER, FOOD FOR YOUR BODY, CLOTHING AND SHELTER, **EVERYTHING** NEEDED FOR GOD TO KEEP YOU ALIVE.

- F. Therefore the production of Divine Good is related to the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception: **Tit 2:7, Col 1:9-10**
1. The believer is an example of production of Divine Good by having soundness of Bible Doctrine.
 2. The believer walks worth in the Lord by Pleasing God in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and producing good as a result of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and constantly growing by means of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 3. Production of Divine Good is related to Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- G. Therefore the production of Divine Good is related to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo: **2Tim 3:16-17**
1. We must understand what is important and what is not and that is what is delineated in this passage
 2. All scripture is beneficial for:
 - i. Teaching Bible Doctrine
 - ii. For giving us conviction with regard to our failures in order that we might understand them and then rebound..
 - a. YOU cannot rebound unless you know you are carnal.
 - iii. For recovery from reversionism when needed
 - iv. Training in righteousness
 - v. To adapt us to Status Quo Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
 - vi. To Equip us for the production of Divine Good.
- H. The production of Divine Good is an issue in the Angelic Conflict **Rom 12:21**
1. In Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace we are COMMANDED to overcome EVIL by the production of Divine Good.
- I. Therefore the production of Divine Good is related to surpassing Grace Status Quo **2Cor 5:10**
1. Whether or not you have great surpassing grace blessings in eternity depends on whether you have produced Divine Good in time which ultimately depends on whether you have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 2. Only Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers have the Divine Good production which is rewardable in eternity.
 3. It is what we do in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God while we are in our human body which determines whether or not we can be rewarded in eternity.
 4. Therefore it is what we do while still in the body based on what is resident in our soul which determines whether or not we can receive surpassing grace blessings in eternity.
 5. If we have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then we can produce things which will result in our receiving decorations which we will have forever WHICH will GLORIFY GOD FOREVER.
- J. The production of Divine Good is related to the believers HONOR **2Tim 2:21**
- III. The continued Job profile of the Pastor Teacher his NEXT objective which he is required to do.
- A. Principle:
1. No pastor can lead a congregation to an objective which he has not attained himself.
 - i. This is to be done by teaching.
 2. Therefore NO pastor can lead his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace unless he has attained it himself
 - i. He surely cannot lead to Ultra Super Grace unless he has attained Ultra Super Grace himself.
 - ii. He cannot help any recovery from carnality or reversionism unless he knows how to do so from his own personal study of Bible Doctrine.
 3. The congregation under the ministry of any Pastor Teacher cannot exceed the spiritual growth of that Pastor Teacher.

- i. If you advance in the Spiritual Life to a high level and then go into a church where you are above the level of the Pastor Teacher and remain there you will regress to the level of the Pastor Teacher under which you are now studying.
 - ii. A Pastor Teacher must really study constantly and cannot sit around and enjoy himself because there are always a few believers who are right behind him and waiting for him to advance more and more and more so they can follow.
 - iii. They are waiting for the next lesson and the Pastor Teacher MUST produce it or lose them.
 4. The Pastor Teacher must reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in order to lead his congregation to Super Grace.
 - i. This demands faithfulness on the part of the congregation to follow him in his lead.
 5. The only difference between the congregation and the Pastor Teacher reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is that the Pastor Teacher reaches it by his own personal study and the congregation must study under the Pastor Teachers teaching.
 6. The Spiritual gift of the Pastor Teacher is the exception to reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace under the academic discipline of the local church.
 - i. This spiritual gift gives him the right to go directly to the word of God and get the doctrine and grow.
 - ii. He is however dependent on others for his training in the languages, history, and many other fields.
 - iii. No man with the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher can go right to the scripture and get the doctrine from it, he MUST BE TRAINED first.
 - iv. These men do not need to read all the commentaries since very few are written well or accurately and the good ones only comment on the accuracy of the text.
 7. The Pastor Teacher can reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace through his own personal self discipline of intensive and consistent study of the word of God.
 - i. He must be more intensive and consistent in his study in order to teach his congregation the doctrine he has learned.
 8. The possession of the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher makes the communicator of Bible Doctrine the exception.
 - i. There are 2 categories of believers with reference to Bible Doctrine.
 - a. The congregation who receive Bible Doctrine from the communicator of that doctrine.
 9. Timothy recovered from reversionism by means of his personal study.
 - i. He had his notes from seminary
 - ii. He had the admonishment of 1st Timothy
 - iii. He had the prison epistles as well.
 - a. Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, Philemon
 - iv. His personal study over a period of 2 years brought him out of reversionism and back to Super Grace.
 10. But his congregation at Ephesus could only recover through his teaching and he had to inculcate them with the Bible Doctrine he had learned by daily consistent teaching under strict academic discipline in their local church.
 11. The assembly of the local church congregation must be under the principle of strict academic discipline to recover from reversionism and advance in their Spiritual Life.
- B. Timothy is a young man and also a Pastor Teacher and to them there are special dangers.
 1. Many people who are YOUNG Pastor Teachers never make it to be OLD Pastor Teachers.

2. These young Pastor Teacher often spend time planning how to be great in their ministry and this leads to neglect of their study time and eventually all they do is plan for their success and advancement as far as the growth of their local church is concerned.
- C. Pride and Arrogance interactions:
1. This leads in the young Pastor Teacher to the abuse of power and authority vested in him.
 - i. A young man with a lot of authority is a very dangerous combination.
 - ii. A great exception was Napoleon who at 23 was commanding GREAT Armies and doing it very well.
 - iii. In effect the young need to learn where and when FUN stops and Authority must take over.
 2. The Pastor Teacher is given authority from God and power from Bible Doctrine teaching and he MUST NOT EVER abuse his authority or power.
 - i. This is how many ruin their ministries.
 - ii. They all want to start at the top which leaves them no place to go.
 3. Connected with this arrogance is popularity LUST which keeps the Pastor Teacher from honesty and integrity from the accurate teaching of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. He does not say things in the teaching of Bible Doctrine which might make him unpopular.
 - ii. When he counsels, which he should not do in the first place, he is not honest with those he is counseling.
 4. Popularity LUST linked with approbation lust makes the Pastor Teacher overly ambitious for renown and fame.
 - i. Instead of being ambitious for power and fame the ONLY ambition a Pastor Teacher should have is to please the Lord and therefore he should be studying constantly.
 5. Most young men entering the ministry want to start at the top instead of using the day by day consistency in studying which is essential for mastery of the word of God and its presentation from the pulpit.
 6. Monetary or Financial Lust is the trap of the Pastor Teacher being out to make money rather than teach Bible Doctrine.
 7. There are many lusts which will trap people of all ages and experiences but in this case it is basically PRIDE, Gate #1 of the Interlocking System of Arrogance, Cosmic Dynasphere I.
- D. The Pastor Teacher young or old is expected to be constantly studying and communicating Bible Doctrine as often as possible.
1. It is arrogance to think that a Pastor Teacher can go out from the seminary and his training and teach a bible class every day.
 2. This has to occur over a period of time and with constant studying and extracting Bible Doctrine from the word of God himself he will be able to teach more and more to his congregation.
 3. The Pastor Teacher must pursue constant study and ultimately spiritual growth

2Tim 2:22

v22 : **Now! {a command} flee from, be escaping from those PRIDEFUL, approbation, financial, power and popularity lusts of youthful immaturity in the ministry, but, in contrast, be pursuing, divine righteousness of constant study and eventual Spiritual Growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, that which is believed namely doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, love through the filling of the Holy Spirit {Romans 5:5, Gal 5:22, 1Cor 13}, prosperity including all categories of the Super Grace blessings, with them in the congregation under Positive Volition that call on the Lord, in prayer, making appeals for aid in court, pressing toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace by consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, namely believer's consistent intake of doctrine in the presence of other believers in the local church, out of a pure Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul filled with the God the Holy Spirit and Bible Doctrine.**

- I. Summary of the responsibilities of the Pastor Teacher.
 - A. To maintain discipline in the local church v14
 - B. To fulfill Priority #1 of the Ministry to Study and Teach v15
 - C. To avoid apostasy, reversionism and evil in the content of his message v16
 - D. 1st parenthetical Principle: The reversionistic Pastor Teacher is no one's right Pastor Teacher v17-18
 1. No Pastor Teacher can lead a congregation past his own level of spiritual growth.
 - E. To constantly make an issue of Bible Doctrine v19
 - F. 2nd Parenthetical principle: The Classification of the congregation v20
 1. The Pastor Teacher may be faithful in his ministry but this does not mean that everyone in the congregation will remain under Positive Volition, Grow to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, or even come all the time.
 2. The Pastor Teacher who thinks all the congregation will show up every time the doors open is in dream land.
 3. It is necessary to classify the congregation and even the BEST Pastor Teacher will have some bad members in the congregation.
 - G. By faithfulness in teaching to produce from the congregation vessels of Honor, believers who make it to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. V21
 - H. By faithfulness in personal study to also become a vessel of honor, reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and beyond v22
 1. No Pastor Teacher can lead a congregation past his own level of spiritual growth.
 2. When a person who has gone beyond the Pastor Teacher in his spiritual growth and keeps attending in the pastors congregation he will decline to the level of the Pastor Teacher and very often go into reversionism.
- II. Responsibility of the Pastor Teacher Point 9
 - A. By keeping his priorities straight to avoid FALSE ISSUES.
 1. It is possible to teach subjects which encourage people to go away from self discipline and cause great disorder.
 2. The Pastor Teacher is his own dictator and must regulate his own life and when it comes to teaching Bible Doctrine he MUST teach whatever the passage contains and NOT something which will cater to people and their sensitivities.
 3. This must be done without regard to whether anyone is interested even if he is not interested.
 - i. A man in relation to a woman is always wrong
 - ii. This principle is based on the woman being a responder in life as per the bible and have many things different in the Spiritual Life of the woman.
 - iii. The man is responsible as the authority in the Human Race and when there is a failure in any relationship between man and woman ultimately the man must take the full responsibility because the woman is the responder.
 - iv. The woman has much told to her by scripture indicating her nature as a responder and therefore her regulator of self discipline must be especially keen.
 - v. At times at least at the beginning of the Spiritual Life women are more discerning than men because they have to be sharper being responders.
 - vi. As responders the woman must be very wary and the man must be very careful because as a responder the woman can be ruined by the man.
 - vii. The woman can only ruin herself if she makes a mistake in marriage and must take responsibility for her initial decision but not for failure after that.
 - viii. The bible always has something different to say to women.
 - ix. Some pastors avoid all passages which are directly related to women and their applications.

4. The pastor must avoid anything which he does not himself understand or which he has not himself learned from his own study.
- B. Summary of Avoiding Foolish and Undisciplined Controversies:
1. These are referring to those functions in life which involve improving the world of Satan.
 - i. There are many things when the Pastor Teacher is not teaching properly the word where they become saturated with grief or guilt and subsequently have a need “to become involved”.
 - ii. Then they become involved with improving the devil’s world by introducing to their congregation “brotherly Love” sermons, Bless the UN or getting a better understanding of communism
 - iii. FOOLISH is the representation of EVIL and the satanic viewpoint
 - iv. UNDISCIPLINED is the lack of relation of the believer with the Pastor Teachers discipline of studying constantly and consistently Bible Doctrine.
 - v. No pastor can go very far astray in his ministry if he studies and analyzes scripture since he will be presenting Divine Viewpoint.
 2. These are functions related to the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil Satan's policy for ruling the world and the pastor who becomes involved in these things falls into this category.
 3. When the Pastor Teacher has his priorities straight with Bible Doctrine first he will stick to studying and teaching resulting in the production of vessels of honor in his congregation, believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 4. Only the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is on the right side of history
 5. Only the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace can carry his generation as a spiritual atlas.
 6. Undisciplined controversies are those things outside of the academic discipline of the local church.
 7. Undisciplined controversies are those functions which advance the plan and policy of the ruler of this world, Satan.
 - i. Many pastors are involved with teaching Fabian Socialism and this is part of the EVIL plan and policy of Satan.
 - ii. When this taught in the pulpit it fulfills the concept of Foolish and undisciplined speculations.
 8. We are on the earth to adhere to GRACE not to advance the policy of Satan, Good and Evil.
- C. The life of every pastor must set as his first priority in life Studying and Teaching Bible Doctrine.
1. The Pastor Teacher must understand what he is doing and what he is teaching in order to fulfill his purpose in his ministry.
 2. Foolish Undisciplined controversies give birth to USELESS Arguments or Battles dividing the congregation because of the Human Viewpoint taught.
 3. The congregation will always be divided by what is taught but the Pastor Teacher must always represent the Divine Viewpoint so that the legalistic believers will understand that they are totally WRONG.
 4. Useless battles and arguments in the congregation squander resources without accomplishing anything which has to do with the objective.
 5. When the Pastor Teacher is presenting Human Viewpoint there are those in the congregation who WILL spot it being ahead of the Pastor Teacher in spiritual growth and have the correct Divine Viewpoint from hearing the information from a different source and this causes a serious problem in the congregation since they cannot go against the authority of the Pastor Teacher.

6. The result is that there will be an expression of this correct viewpoint and this will become a USELESS conflict accomplishing NO OBJECTIVE.
7. In squandering his grace resources the Pastor Teacher becomes involved in crusades to improve the world of Satan and this is a terrible thing.
8. The Pastor Teacher has a right to defend principles of establishment since Laws of Divine Establishment are from God and in the scripture but if he gets away from the truth of this and enters a crusade they often destroy the very freedom by which he is able to stand up in his pulpit without challenge.
9. Very often the pastors in their crusading method will verbalize many anti establishment concepts such as welfare and socialistic concepts and NOT EVEN REALIZE THAT HE IS ABLE TO STAND AND EXPRESS THESE BECAUSE OF THE EXISTENCE OF THE Laws of Divine Establishment.
10. If enough Pastor Teachers expressed their ideas that welfare was a good thing and should be expanded and the government listened to them this would bring in more socialism and t his would ultimately destroy the freedom which allowed the whole thing to start.
 - i. This is squandering of his grace resources and by so doing he becomes a reversionistic casualty when he departs from the objective of teaching whatever the bible teaches which is often related to government and its forms and their activities and when this occurs in the bible he MUST teach it like everything else.
 - ii. He must never become a crusader for satanic principles.
 - iii. The Pastor Teacher is in fact overcome by evil when he does not make an issue of Bible Doctrine both in his personal life and that of the congregation.

D. Summary:

1. The Pastor Teachers top priority must be Bible Doctrine.
2. He must personally grow in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by his personal study of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. No pastor can grow in the Spiritual Life apart from personal study and he is the ONLY ONE who can grow by personal study this being connected to his spiritual gift.
 - ii. The congregation can only grow by being under authority.
 - iii. The Pastor Teacher grows by personal study under self discipline and self regulation and this is his preparation for teaching.
 - iv. The congregation grows by studying the teaching of the Pastor Teacher and being under group & academic discipline.
3. He must constantly and consistently teach his congregation so that they follow the colors to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. This fulfills the Will of God and Plan of God and our purpose for living in this life.
 - ii. The Pastor Teacher cannot teach what he does not know and he must be teaching what any given passage of scripture is in fact teaching.
 - iii. His personality or personal preferences in life is never an issue.
 - iv. The GREATNESS of any person in ANY level of LEADERSHIP, whatever he is personally is never the issue but it is only how he thinks with regard to his position and function in leadership.
 - v. You cannot think EVIL and make any advance in anything at all.
 - vi. Many people have great administrative ability and their personal life never interferes with their administration.
 - vii. We tend, if we don't like the Pastor Teacher for some reason then we may not hear his message and this is what bring trouble to the believer since it is ONLY the message which is important.
 - viii. There have been great generals who were believers like Jackson, Lee, Gustavus Adolphus, etc.

- ix. There have been GREAT generals who were the worst people imaginable totally immoral, etc., Like Caesar, Napoleon, Frederick the Great.
- x. How a man lives his personal life is not always the same as what he thinks and it is only WHAT HE THINKS which counts
- xi. No pastor refuses to teach the word of God because he does not like the congregation or their Personal Lives or personalities or their sins etc.
- xii. Often believers demand perfect standards for the Pastor Teacher and in their minds he must be as close to a PLASTER SAINT as possible in order to listen to him.
- xiii. No one in this world is nor ever has been perfect except the one who went to the cross.
- xiv. Imperfect pastors teach imperfect congregations and it is amazing that they all get to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace where their imperfections are less discernible because of their spiritual growth.
- xv. A personal life is NEVER an issue but ONLY Bible Doctrine is the issue and it is ONLY what you think.
- xvi. It is only through communication of Bible Doctrine that spiritual growth occurs and we engage in bible study to grow personally.
- xvii. We are hear to reach objectives which deal with an unseen conflict and we are here to HURT the devil and hurt him badly and we don't know if he is being hurt but the bible assures us that when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God HE IS.

- 4. The Pastor Teacher receives growth through his own personal study
- 5. The congregation receives growth through the teaching of the Pastor Teacher which includes:
 - i. Self discipline of the Pastor Teacher.
 - ii. Self discipline and Enforced Academic Discipline in the congregation.

III. By determination every pastor must become a consistent plugger in studying and teaching avoiding the pitfalls of the ministry. V24-25

- A. Since the issue in the Spiritual Life is WHAT YOU THINK he must avoid the major mental pitfall of PRIDE.
 - 1. The think that knocks out a Pastor Teacher is WHAT HE THINKS and when he stops thinking Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. We must realize and constantly remain ourselves that LIFE consists of what goes on in the soul.
- B. We must recognize at some point that we are FREE but Old Abe was wrong we are not created EQUAL but are to be treated EQUALLY under the law of our constitution.
 - 1. Most of us always thing of ourselves as FREE and realize that we are among others who are free and we must respect their freedom as well and they OURS.
 - 2. A good neighborhood is where the people think properly and recognize someone else's privacy and property.
 - 3. This is how it is in everything and a good anything is where the people THINK rightly.
 - 4. When you begin to think right you begin to understand what true freedom is about.
 - 5. The idea of being a free spirit is EVIL in itself and satanic where by Satan tries to get everyone to think they can do what they like without regard to anyone else's freedom.
 - 6. Free spirits have to be locked up when they get too free with other people's money, property, or privacy
- C. The Pastor Teacher is NOT FREE but is a SLAVE to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 1. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God God the Holy Spirit giving the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher to a male causes him to be BORN AGAIN a slave.

2. All Pastor Teachers are slaves and as long as they live they are slaves to Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and any Pastor Teacher who does not stick closely to the word of God he is OUT OF LINE.
 3. There is a direct line between the NECK of the Pastor Teacher and heaven and sometimes Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ just gives this line and snort jerk and hangs the Pastor Teacher, sometimes to his death and other times not.
 4. There is no such think as a FREE Pastor Teacher.
 5. EVERY man who has the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher IN THE PULPIT is a slave to Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- D. The Pastor Teacher more than anyone else is a direct slave of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the prince ruler of the church.
1. The Pastor Teacher is directly under Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as a slave but with maximum authority over all the free types sitting in the congregation.
 2. Slaves have to think and if they suddenly become free and have no thinking related to freedom it can destroy them.
 3. When a person is free he MUST understand freedom, property, privacy and everything which goes with these.
 4. When a person is a slave it means that someone else is going to provide for him, food, shelter, clothing, happiness, social life, ETC.
 5. For the Pastor Teacher GOD is totally responsible for his slave in all aspects of his life and therefore the life of the Pastor Teacher is very simple and all they have to do is what God has designed the spiritual gift for that is studying and teaching.
 6. There are only 2 conditions in life which are truly great, SLAVERY or FREEDOM
 7. That which is in between is horrible.
 8. In the United States of America we do not have true freedom because of the encroaching of our federal government but are IN BETWEEN the 2.
 9. In this situation when a people are neither FREE nor SLAVE then EVIL sprouts and grows feverishly.
 10. In the United States of America for a very long time people have been shoving each other aside to see who can do the most good and this all comes from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 11. Being born under Spiritual Death we KNOW evil totally and knowing it we then TEND to do GOOD, knowing his policy we function under it and produce Human Good.
 12. Slavery is an honest condition in life and so is FREEDOM and it is all the hypocrisy in between brought on by our education systems which teach only socialism and EVIL which makes life so very difficult.

2Tim 2:23

v23: **But deviate from foolish demands of the congregation, be excusing yourself from or avoid foolish and undisciplined or ignorant controversies or speculations knowing they give birth to useless battles.**

Lesson #47 Series # 469 2Tim 2:24

- I. Pearl Harbor Day 1975
 - A. All freedom exists because of military victory (Something our government has not ever understood).
 1. Franklin Roosevelt and the whole civilian part of our government were totally responsible for the Pearl Harbor Attack and they all KNEW the Japanese would attack when he cut off their oil supply.
 2. They had not recourse except to attack and neutralize the American fleet before taking over the Dutch East Indies oil fields.
 3. Admiral Kimmel a very capable officer was crucified deliberately in order to protect Roosevelt and his Regime.

4. General Short a fine professional soldier was also crucified again in the interest of protecting Politicians and this certainly was not the first time it occurred and certainly has not been the last.
5. During the tenure of Madison in the War of 1812 he did not even have enough organization to meet any problems though the British would take MONTHS to get to the various places where they could attack the United States of America on land.
 - i. EX: He wanted a general to command the armies but the only one capable of doing so was Alexander Hamilton but he was Dead.
 - ii. Since Hamilton was dead they thought about a Col. Monroe and when they offered it to him he was afraid he would screw it up so he declined because he wanted to be the next president which he was and he declined.
 - iii. From then on they had a bunch of drunken EX Sargent who messed it up totally and finally Andrew Jackson was the only truly successful commander at this time.
 - iv. Tyler who later became president did a fair job around Detroit.
6. We have never been prepared and never been very strong for the military and the reasons are based on the fact that the settlers of this nation originally came here in part in reaction to European warfare.
 - i. War of Spanish succession
 - ii. War of Austrian succession
 - iii. 7 years war
 - iv. It was also very easy for these fundamentalist believers to reach against WAR knowing very little doctrine but being familiar to the horrors of war.
 - v. This went on even when great immigration occurred and these people reacted against European war of a later time or Prussian systems of universal military training.
 - vi. These immigrants who came into this nation ignorant of such things but were allowed to vote immediately (a big mistake).
 - vii. Then Fabian socialism became a great reactor factor and historically the military has always been discredited in the United States of America and in time of peace it is always pushed down and we have never been and never will be prepared.
 - viii. It is however this same suppressed military which is made the toy of politicians which must give up its life and hold the ground until a citizen army can be prepared.
7. The time will come when this will not work and if there is not a fully prepared professional organization in the military there will be NO United States of America.
 - i. You cannot take the “hippies” or the young men of today who have gone through our educational system having been propagandized since their infancy about many things and turn him into a soldier in even 9 MONTHS let along 12 weeks.
 - ii. You cannot take people who are on POT and are dope addicts and always hopped up and people who have for several generations been on welfare and who have never had discipline in the home or school and turn them into an army like occurred in 1941.
 - iii. The time is coming when apart from the Grace of God we are through as a nation and the fact is that in this time 1975 we were already through but did not even know it.
 - iv. Our greatness as a nation and a people did NOTHING except to put communism on a pedestal and as a nation we are DIRECTLY responsible as a nation for more people being tortured and killed than any nation in Human History.
 - v. We are responsible for the existence of communism wherever it is today.
 - a. China directly
 - b. Russian communism when we supported them after they were losing out based on their communist principles shortly after the revolution of 1917.

- c. We kept it alive in Russia, brought it to China, are responsible for it in Cuba and allowed it to take over much of Africa.
- B. On this Pearl Harbor Day in 1975 we were not as smart as we were in 1941 and suffer from many ailments as a people and nation the greatest of which is LACK OF BIBLE DOCTRINE.
1. Every day we live on this earth since 1975 we have had a political Pearl Harbor based on every day that our government cowers down to communists and moslems (Until Mr. Trump).
 2. This is very subtle since we do not have the Japanese who had made a DIRECT attack.
 3. We have 2 systems of communism which are destroying us and today we have islam on 2 fronts destroying us.
 4. For Any president of the United States of America to degrade himself by having anything to do with the VERMIN Of Communism or BOWING to the animals of islam directly demonstrates the FAILURE of our nation.
 5. We are at an all time LOW and the voters are in the vast majority TOTALLY IRRESPONSIBLE AND EASILY LED BY THEIR NOSES.
 6. Our system of median entertainment in all aspect has been demonstrated since before 1975 to be the greatest and most intense area of propaganda that the world has ever known.
- C. Our only protection from this is from the Bible Doctrine we take in daily and we NEED desperately believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace forming the pivot to sustain this nation.
1. Without a greater interest in Bible Doctrine this country is on its way out and we may last a while longer but our demise is inevitable.
 2. {(ff) It is interesting to note the period of time since this lesson where by this nation had a reprieve from destruction based on the number of people who had Positive Volition demonstrated toward Bible Doctrine. I am one of these having begun my interest in Bible Doctrine in 1978 just 3 years after this lesson THANK YOU GOD}.
 3. We since this time seen an amazing encroachment of the varying systems of communism, the revolutionaries, the antithetical Fabian socialists, welfare, anti military, tolerance of islam, abuse of economy, the insanity of our policies both foreign and domestic, the terrible laws passed by congress which are anti doctrinal, anti freedom, and totally anti American.
 4. Yet we slumber on being entertained and deluded and falling into various forms of reversionism and on the 34th anniversary of pearl harbor the government was lower than has ever been and as hard as it is to comprehend in 2016 the 75th anniversary of this tragic occurrence the government was at a historical low but today the day after the 77th anniversary we have some meager correction of our government function but it is being fought against constantly and continually.
 5. Despite our president today and many in his administration we are still on the very brink of total destruction with little if any hope of averting it in the future.
 6. In 1941 the Attack on Pearl Harbor aroused the people of this nation to become the greatest army in history over night and also the MOST victorious.
 7. WE HAVE NOT HAD THIS CAPABILITY SINCE 1975 AND NO LONGER HAVE THE TYPE OR QUALITY OF PEOPLE IN THIS NATION THAT WE ONCE HAD IN THAT GENERATION.
 8. We no longer have the concepts and principles of HONOR and NOBILITY which existed in them nor the flexibility to use freedom and turn it into discipline and discipline into military establishment and military establishment into VICTORY on the battlefield.
 9. We no longer have people who have gone through a depression and faced reality in every basic thing in life and these people today NO LONGER EXIST.
 10. We are no longer American people any longer and we are simply a people going down in history and what occurred in pearl harbor is NOTHING compared to what we have today.

- D. The fact is that as believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who are hopefully advancing in the Spiritual Life WE ARE THE LAST HOPE FOR THIS NATION.
1. In 1975 and shortly after this hope was realized by the increase in Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God by many many believers preserving this nation. THE QUESTION TODAY IS WHERE ARE THEY NOW AND WERE ARE THE YOUNG BELIEVERS WHO ARE ADVANCING?
 2. We are so far gone and Americans no longer look like Americans nor act like Americans and look like something out of the jungle or like European peasants.
 3. There is no such thing as the handsome American who was totally distinct in his appearance, his thinking his attitude in his soul.
 4. We are a collection and conglomeration of every thing bad and horrible.
 5. **The last hope for this nation is found in the the attitude of the believer toward Bible Doctrine.**

II. V24-25 The 10th purpose of the ministry of the Pastor Teacher.

A. The Divine Viewpoint and servant of the Lord.

B. The Slave:

1. Every Pastor Teacher is the slave of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the perfect relationship with the Lord as the master.
 - i. The prefect relationship in life is that of a slave to master when the master is perfect as is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - ii. The Lord is perfect in character and essence and in what he can provide and in POWER therefore to be a slave to the Lord is a perfect relationship in life and this is the Status Quo of the Pastor Teacher.
2. The congregation is free to come and go and move about in life and make decisions as they like, but the Pastor Teacher is NOT free and is a slave and is chained to the word of God and this must be his life above all else.
3. No one can exceed the spiritual growth of the Pastor Teacher and this means that the Pastor Teacher must be ahead of the congregation in spiritual growth and this means that he must LIVE in the word of God.
4. NO ONE can grow spiritually unless he is under a Pastor Teacher who has learned and is teaching Bible Doctrine since NO BELIEVER can go directly to the bible and read it or memorize it or read commentaries on it and grow up in the Spiritual Life.
5. EVERY believer must be under the strict academic discipline of the Pastor Teacher in the local church and this is ORDAINED of God and the only person who can grow up apart from the bible teaching of a Pastor Teacher is the person with the gift of Pastor Teacher which gives him the right to grow from his personal study of the bible.
6. There is therefore a double standard in life but The Pastor Teacher is no better than anyone else as far as the pattern of life is concerned but the fact is that he is a slave to the Lord and the congregation is FREE.
7. The greater the attention of the congregation to the word of God the greater is their capacity for life, their freedom, their dynamics in history as seen under the concept of spiritual atlas.
8. The SLAVE is designed to do his work in studying and teaching constantly and consistently and RULE the congregation.
9. We are free as believers in the local church but are ruled by the slave to the Lord the Pastor Teacher who has the greatest authority in the local church since the last apostle died in 96 ad.

C. The Master:

1. The Lord who is perfect also provides perfect provision for the pastor slave providing:
 - i. His needs
 - ii. His blessings
 - a. Spiritually

b. Temporal

- D. There is no greater GRACE status quo than being the slave of the Lord.
1. No pastor is free from the Lord or Bible Doctrine and no pastor should ever desire such freedom.
 2. For the Pastor Teacher to be manumitted is entrance into reversionism and great personal suffering
- E. This is addressed to all Pastor Teachers but the application can go to the individuals in the congregation as well.
1. It is important to understand that the only source of spiritual growth for any believer is the man who has the gift of Pastor Teacher complying with these passages.
 2. There can be NO spiritual growth aside from the teaching of your right Pastor Teacher.
 3. The Pastor Teacher cannot be in reversionism
 4. He must be a constant student of the word and chained to it for studying and teaching.
 5. He must be a slave to the Lord.
 6. He must properly RULE the congregation.
- F. It is essential that the Pastor Teacher in the local church as RULER of the congregation NOT abuse his power or authority therein.
1. The authority of the Pastor Teacher is not given to him to fight against his enemies in the congregation or those he does not care for.
 2. The congregation must be objective with reference to the Pastor Teacher and realize it is the message not the man in any way which is important.
 3. Here we see the OBJECTIVITY commanded of the Pastor Teacher and he must remember to rule with objectivity and not allow any personal antagonism to enter the picture and he must TEACH objectively as well.
 4. This does not keep the Pastor Teacher from exercising his authority in dealing with those who are recalcitrant or gossips or maligners or in any way infringe upon the privacy and freedom of others in the congregation nor has it to do with trouble makers.
 - i. The Pastor Teacher must wipe out and remove all trouble makers.
 5. The Pastor Teacher is human and like everyone else has personal ideas and prejudices and can intensely dislike members of the congregation.
 6. When the Pastor Teacher gets up to teach it must be totally objective and impersonal and teach what the passage says and not what the congregation needs personally.
 - i. Just so happens that at time these are coincidental.
 - ii. Often what the pastor teaches is personal for him as well and fortunately he has time to compose himself before presenting it to the congregation.
 7. In the communication of the word of God there must be total objectivity and without it there can be NO communication.
 8. Being belligerent toward the congregation removes the Pastor Teachers objectivity.
 - i. One of the pitfalls of the ministry is subjectivity with regard to a congregation and this Pastor Teacher cannot last very long in any place.
 - ii. This is a tragedy since no people get Bible Doctrine in this way.
 - iii. You cannot fight the congregation and teach them Bible Doctrine.
 9. The Pastor Teacher must be FIRM TOUGH IN DISCIPLINE and those who jeopardize the congregation by intrusion on privacy with gossip maligning or judging must be removed by him and he must deal with them vigorously and yet be free from contention and personal antagonisms.
- G. The Pastor Teacher must be gracious in Mental Attitude, to the point of not being human, were you do not react and are totally objective and when you stand before the congregation there are not people which you LOVE, HATE, ADMIRE, DISDAIN they are all just SHEEP.
1. He is therefore not teaching people he knows, likes, hates and is not teaching individuals but a congregation and communicating what the passage says bringing the Bible Doctrine to their souls as a slave should.

2. He is not in any way dealing personally nor individually with anyone in the congregation.
 3. No Pastor Teacher can teach the word of God and cover what the pastor says and be angry and out to get a person in the congregation.
 4. He must have an attitude of gracious objectivity since very often the congregation does not deserve nor have earned such a good lesson or sermon because they are not interested nor are they paying attention.
 - i. This does not mean to be pushed around by the congregation and lie down and let them walk all over you.
- H. If first his Mental Attitude is gracious objectivity then he will be skillful in his teaching of Bible Doctrine.
1. This is the only function of the Pastor Teacher in the pulpit and the primary function of the pastor in which all other functions in life must be subordinated to this function.
 2. A person might be a natural teacher and have learned long ago that you can teach people almost anything and have a teaching gift but this teaching gift is no good if the Mental Attitude is BAD.
 3. The problem with many men who have the gift of Pastor Teacher is not that they cannot teach but that they have the world's worst Mental Attitude.
 4. They are subjective and always competing with everyone and trying to outdo or upstage others, filled with pride and contentions and are subjective disasters.
 5. No one can be skillful in teaching unless he has a gracious objective Mental Attitude and the Pastor Teacher who has the gift of Pastor Teacher will never receive a pulpit to teach from until their Mental Attitude is one of gracious objectivity.
 6. The Mental Attitude must be OBJECTIVE in the personal life before God will ever bring this person to the pulpit and to use the great power and authority God gives to the Pastor Teacher.
 7. The SKILL of teaching will never be seen until the personal life shows vast improvement in objective and GOD cannot and will not ever use subjectivity in their Pastor Teacher.
 8. These men of subjectivity never succeed in being a slave to the Lord.
 9. The Pastor Teacher is slave to the Lord but he IS NOT THE SLAVE OF THE CONGREGATION.
 10. The Pastor Teacher does not serve the congregation but is the Lord's slave and TELLS you what to do when necessary to protect the congregation.
 11. No Pastor Teacher can be skillful in teaching without vigorous and consistent continual studying and he cannot even get to this point when he has hangups in his soul.
 12. In skillful teaching there is a very important facet which has always been overlooked and the Pastor Teacher has to be doggedly devoted to studying constantly and his study habits determine his own spiritual growth as well as the quality of the Bible Doctrine he feeds to his congregation.
 13. Without quality food the Royal Family of God cannot grow in the Spiritual Life nor reach the objectives for which they remain in this life, Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- I. The Pastor Teacher must have incredible patience when it comes to studying and learning the Bible Doctrine to be presented to the congregation.
1. People don't get how much simple concentrated patience it takes to take a passage and do the best job on it ever done, better than anyone ever has done on this passage and they don't care either.
 2. Most believers want to get on with some WILD prophecy or some ecstatic experience.
 3. The Pastor Teacher must get right up day in and day out and do this again and again no matter how badly he has done the presentation of the passage.
 4. The Pastor Teacher must also have patience with regard to the congregation understanding what he is teaching and often must simply reevaluate his presentation and DO IT AGAIN.

5. The Pastor Teacher who teaches true doctrine will always receive maximum opposition from Satanic Policy and plan and organization and this should not obstruct, impede, nor retard the dogged perseverance in plugging persistence in daily study, research and analysis of Bible Doctrine.
6. The Pastor Teacher should never let what anyone thinks effect his attitude and motivation to study and teach.
7. Every member of every congregation enters the local church with SOME evil in their soul having been propagandized from infancy by the ruler of this world with evil concepts of life.
8. It is very difficult to take our preconceived notions and set them aside when Bible Doctrine is taught especially when they are taught by someone who is personally obnoxious to you.

J. Summary:

1. The opposition of evil places the Pastor Teacher into many discouraging situations.
2. The more Bible Doctrine he learns the greater becomes his perception of human folly and national failure.
3. The application of his Bible Doctrine teaching is a constant warning which runs counter to national and collective policy in the devils world.
 - i. The cut back of military establishment
 - ii. The attacks on free enterprise
 - iii. The distortion of the legislative branch of government function in passing laws which abuse and distort and even destroy freedom in the name of the common good.
 - iv. All these are opposition to Bible Doctrine teaching but the Pastor Teacher must persist in teaching the truth.
4. The arrogance of mediocre government violating human freedom, privacy, property and lawful enterprise in opposition to the teaching of the truth but the Pastor Teacher must persist.
5. Pastor Teachers must persist in spite of the apparent triumph of evil for the only hope in any generation is centered in the nucleus of believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and these Super Grace believers cannot exist apart from Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - i. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul cannot exist apart from the faithfulness of the Pastor Teacher in studying and teaching constantly and consistently.

2Tim 2:24

v24 : NOW, the Pastor Teacher, the slave or bond servant of the Lord, ruler of the congregation, must necessarily not personally fight be quarrelsome, bellicose, pugnacious, contentious or belligerent with anyone in the congregation, but, in contrast, he must keep on having the attitude of gracious objectivity face to face with the entire congregation, skillful or able in teaching, persistent, enduring, putting up with or bearing up under or in spite of evil or false doctrine from satanic policy and opposition to Bible Doctrine, without resentment being patient when WRONGED by a recalcitrant congregation,

Lesson #48 Series # 469 2Tim 2:25

- I. Freedom through Military Victory
 - A. Donald Kirby Ross, Lt. Cmdr. USN, USS Nevada, Pearl Harbor, 7 Dec 1941
 1. His courage cannot be explained to anyone not understanding this type of disaster and the Nevada eventually SUNK.
 - B. Wilburn K. Ross Pvt, USArmy G Company, 30th Infantry, 3rd Infantry Division, Sonyok France, 30 Oct 1944.
 1. Broke 9 Assaults and Killed or Wounded between 60 and 100 Germans in 5 hours of combat remaining at his machine gun 10 yards ahead of his company for 36 hours.
- II. Principles:

- A. In v24 the occupational hazard of the Pastor Teacher in the ministry was pointed out as failure to be consistent in studying and teaching AND being sensitive in an abnormal way being discouraged by the pressure of idiots in the congregation and the opinions of evil in the world in general.
- B. In v25 another occupational hazard is presented dealing with PRIDE.
- C. Blind Arrogance is the greatest killer of the Pastor Teacher.
- D. Many Pastor Teachers have removed themselves from service to the Lord through their Pride and involvement with the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
- E. Next to teaching the most frequent use of the authority of the Pastor Teacher is directed toward dissidents or recalcitrant believers in the congregation.
- F. The reversionistic believer who disrupts the congregation MUST feel the sting of the maximum authority of the Pastor Teacher received directly from God.
- G. No Pastor Teacher can handle this authority if he is under the influence of Pride or the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
 - 1. Pastoral Pomposity destroys the proper and necessary use of his authority in the protection of his congregation.

III. The function of the Pastor Teacher as SLAVE to the Lord continued

- A. Grace Orientation is true biblical sense Humility.
 - 1. Self effacement is false humility disguise for PRIDE.
 - 2. True Meekness is Grace Orientation.
 - 3. People who avoid using "I" in false meekness are wearing a facade for their ARROGANCE.
 - 4. People who go around in self effacement thinking they are MEEK in reality they are simply disguising their ARROGANT PRIDE
 - 5. People who use SWEETNESS as a front for arrogance are DANGEROUS and Pastor Teachers who do this do not spend any time in studying and therefore do not produce in the pulpit and do not exegete or analyze scripture and therefore cannot communicate proper doctrinal concepts.
 - 6. No Pastor Teacher can use his authority when under the influence of PRIDE and NO BELIEVER can function in the congregation with PRIDE and Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement.
 - 7. Pride and any Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement is the maximum level of disorientation to GRACE.
 - i. This is one of the most basic and difficult problems in the Human Race connected with the first sin of Satan and then the first sin of the Human Race in Ishah and Adam and is connected with every sin and failure of every member of the Human Race.
- B. Doctrine of PRIDE:
 - 1. Definition:
 - i. It is the basic Mental Attitude of Sin and is the quality or state of self esteem and conceit.
 - ii. It is a lofty self respect and having an opinion of self totally divorced from the reality of Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. It is high esteem of self for some real or imagined superiority
 - iv. Vanity is empty pride in connection with one's person, possessions, attainments coupled with an excessive desire for notice, attention, approval or praise from others.
 - v. Synonyms:
 - a. Conceit
 - b. Egotism
 - c. Haughtiness
 - d. Vanity

- e. Arrogance
 - f. Pomposity
 - g. Vainglory
 - h. Superciliousness
 - i. Megalomania when carried into Psychosis
- vi. The great danger in pride comes from the fact that it is NEVER isolated or alone.
- vii. It is a no pressure sin which always has a counter part connected with it based on the situation:
- a. Arrogance (Pride) and cowardice are 2 sides of the same coin
 - i) Pride is what is seen when there is no pressure on the individual
 - ii) When pressure is put on PRIDE it submerges and hides and up pops cowardice.
 - iii) When the pressure is off cowardice disappears and up comes pride again.
 - b. When you put pressure on pride then it submerges and up comes whatever YOU connect with pride in any given situation.
 - i) This is the mechanic of the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
 - c. Pride connected with Jealousy
 - i) Take a dating situation when the girl decides to date someone else this puts pressure on pride submerging it and up comes Jealousy, envy, etc.
 - ii) Then this puts you into inordinate competition with this individual and you do whatever it takes to put down your rival or destroy him.
 - d. Pride is sensitivity and sensitivity training is simply cultivation of ARROGANT PRIDE.
- viii. Pride is always connected with something else and all Arrogant or prideful people are different and have different counter parts attached to their pride.
2. Pride was the original sin of Satan and the motivator of his fall **Is 14:12-14, 28:14-17**
- i. In addition to his pride Satan was filled with approbation lust very closely related to pride.
3. Pride also became a human sin and it is categorically the BASIC Mental Attitude Sin and becomes the counter part to other mental sins such as:
- i. Jealousy, cowardice as weakness of soul, etc
 - ii. All arrogant people are different under pressure which acts as a sensitivity point hiding the pride and bringing out the counterparts to pride.
4. Counter parts to pride fall into several categories:
- i. Mental Attitude Sins – Jealousy, bitterness, implacability, hatred, anger, antagonism
 - ii. Verbal Sins – Gossip, Maligning, Judging
 - iii. Overt Sins – Vengeance, Revenge even MURDER.
 - iv. The Pastor Teacher being a human is as vulnerable to pride as any other person
1Tim 3:6
 - v. Arrogance is a huge operational hazard of the Pastor Teacher and when they get together often it is to discuss HOW MANY they have in their congregation or how many came forward etc.
 - vi. This puts pressure on their pride and up comes their Mental Attitude Sins and they then criticize the person who is doing better than they are.
 - vii. Or they develop some system to OUT DO the others.
 - viii. This is very bad and common in denominational meetings or conferences and they are simply all hypersensitive.
 - ix. The real tragedy is the Pastor Teacher with pride who is not relaxed at all and he is in great trouble and so is his congregation.

- x. As the Pastor Teacher becomes competitive so does his congregation about their church being better than others etc. **1Tim 6:3-4, 2Tim 3:2, 1John 2:15-16,**
 - a. Loving the world is they way to “eat from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil” today.
- 5. Pride relates to person reversionism, **Ps 10:2-4, Rom 1:30, James 4:4-7, 1Pet 5:5-6**

Prov 16:18

V18: Pride precedes destruction, and before a fall there is arrogance of the spirit

- i. This describes unbeliever reversionism primarily related to the national entity.
- ii. This is when the reversionists get to be too many and there are no Super Grace believers to counter balance them the nation begins to fall apart.
- 6. Pride is therefore related to national reversionism. **Lev 26:19, 2Chron 32:26, Is 9:9,**
 - i. It is related to the fall of the Arab nation of Moab **Is 16:6**
 - ii. It is related to the administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline to the Northern kingdom **Is 28:1-3, Ez 7:10, Hos 7:10-14**
 - iii. We see this in successful athletic teams and individuals who have an ongoing good record and they become arrogant about it and arrogance destroys their Mental Attitude and some other team knocks them off the top just prior to the end of the season.
- 7. Pride in relationship to GOD **1Sam 2:3**
 - i. It rejects the principle that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History **Dan 4:37**
 - ii. The principle of pride related to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ where he strongly condemned pride Matt 19:27-20:34
- 8. Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine insulates the soul from pride **2Tim 2:24-25**
 - i. The Pastor Teacher must study and in so doing he not only protects the congregation but also protects himself from pride as well. **Job 33:16-, Prov 8:13, 11:2**
- 9. Pride and Psychology and this applies to the Pastor Teacher and all the congregational
 - i. Flaws are divided into 2 categories
 - a. Real flaws or failures of character
 - b. Pseudo Flaws in which a persons flair is mistaken for arrogance.
 - ii. A hangup is an obstacle in the normal function of life related to pride and other parts of the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
 - iii. A hangup results in becoming snagged in some form of subjectivity or abnormality.
 - a. All hangups are related to and manifestations of pride
 - iv. Hangups are another counter part to pride and when pride is under pressure the individuals hangups and real flaws are bubbled up to the surface and appear in the life.
 - v. There are 2 kind of hangups to pride as a counter part:
 - a. Blind Hangups as part of Blind Arrogance
 - b. Known hangups from known or obvious arrogance.
 - vi. The symptoms of these hangups are called syndromes and these are symptoms which are typical of a condition.
 - vii. The condition is pride and the syndromes are the counter parts to pride or manifestations of pressure on pride.
 - viii. Hangups are an hindrance to learning Bible Doctrine just as hangups are a hindrance to teaching Bible Doctrine. v24
- 10. Pride rejects the authority of the bible teacher and refuses to attend bible study from one’s right Pastor Teacher or continue to learn Bible Doctrine individually or failure to remain under the ministry of a right Pastor Teacher.

- i. However there are occasions where the proud attend bible class or services and usually the message or subject of study puts them under pressure so that PRIDE is submerged and UP POP their hangups or syndromes.
- ii. These hangups result in resisting Bible Doctrine and this can be any one of an number of syndromes:
 - a. Legalistic Syndrome where their legalism is offended by bible teaching and having come into the congregation in arrogance and everything is OK until the passage being taught HITS their PRIDE HARD and they incensed and UP COMES their legalistic syndrome again interlocking in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
 - b. Guilt Syndrome from feeling badly about past or current failures.
 - c. Emotional Syndrome where one thinks the Spiritual Life is an emotional competition as with Holy Rollers.
 - d. Cowardice Syndrome
 - e. Inadequacy Syndrome when a believer does not understand what is going on in the local church and cannot understand the vocabulary or principles being taught in bible class.
 - i) The positive type wants to know where they can start to learn what is going on.
 - ii) The negative type simply goes back to their OLD home church.
 - f. Socialist Syndrome in 2 kinds:
 - i) Revolutionary Socialist
 - ii) Fabian Socialist
 - g. Liberal Syndrome
 - h. Antisemitism Syndrome are usually conservative people who think that all conservative churches are a haven to antisemitic thinking.
 - i. Anti Establishment Syndrome this is usually seen immediately upon reading about Medal of Honor recipients and the principle of freedom through military victory.

11. Pride and the Laws of Divine Establishment: **Matt 24:12**

- C. Pride is a basic and terrible sin and there are none more prone to it than those in the ministry.
- 1. The slave of the Lord who develops pride is one who stands at the main door to the local church after a service and everyone who passes him feels he must make a positive verbal contribution to his ministry.
 - 2. The problem is that the Pastor Teacher listens to these things and even if he thinks he did not do well after hearing all these people tell him it was a good message he then begins to think it really was good.
 - 3. Many times when a Pastor Teacher does something good for someone and others are aware of it and complement him on his GOOD efforts he begins to think that the people are totally right he really is a GOOD GUY!!!
 - i. He forgets that the voice of the people IS NOT the voice of God but the voice of many Old Sin Natures.
 - ii. This is personal pride and it leads to massive confusion, and the voice of the people is in fact the voice of the Old Sin Nature.
 - iii. People often go to church because they have such an obnoxious personality and have no friends and in most churches the rules say you have to be NICE to everyone.
 - iv. The congregation gets into arrogance and so does the pastor and this goes around and around and the result is a great disaster and the only solution is consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - 4. The command here is to exercise, under the umbrella of humility and freedom from arrogance, corrective discipline over the congregation.

- i. It is very easy for a Pastor Teacher to get carried away with this concept and constantly berate and brace people in his congregation.
 - ii. This disciplinary action is to be used ONLY WHEN NECESSARY and that not too often.
 - iii. The Pastor Teacher is not a DI and is not to exercise disciplinary action on a daily basis but he is to use his authority WHEN NECESSARY protect the other members of the congregation from disruptive individuals.
 - a. These monsters can come in the form of:
 - i) Sweetness
 - ii) Holiness
 - iii) Religious
 - iv) Fanatical
 - b. These MUST be separated from the congregation who function under Positive Volition.
 - c. This allows everyone to come and freely exercise their volition for Bible Doctrine no matter their social, sexual, financial or physical character.
 - iv. The Pastor Teacher must be very careful in the use of his authority however it is necessary to subordinate EVERYTHING in the local church to the teaching of Bible Doctrine and there MUST be order in the assembly of the local church.
 - a. The inculcation of Bible Doctrine and instruction of the Royal Family of God and edification of the believer under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine demand ORDER and DISCIPLINE and SELF DISCIPLINE along with respect for authority in the local church.
 - v. The self discipline of the believer is the way to keep the Pastor Teacher from needing to use his authority.
 - a. You cannot concentrate on what is being taught in a message of Bible Doctrine without respect for the Pastor Teacher or be talking at the same time but you do not have to LIKE the Pastor Teacher and this is the beauty of self discipline.
 - b. Discipline says whether you like the authority or not is inconsequential you simply must be respectful and listen.
 - c. It is much better to have authority than to try to win a popularity contest and the one who is trying to be popular is not doing his job.
 - vi. This does not mean that there must be a rapport between the believer and the Pastor Teacher nor a biblical indoctrination which is important.
 - a. It is the message of Bible Doctrine which demands respect and the communicator of the message should be respected.
 - vii. ONLY the Pastor Teacher is authorized to exercise disciplinary action and he can delegate authority on occasion but he is the authorized one.
- D. Opposition to Bible Doctrine teaching occurs in reversionists who are under the influence of evil.
- 1. There are also times when a believer in carnality will be opposed to some Bible Doctrine teaching disagreeing, or being offended by some doctrinal presentation.
 - i. In this case the believer drops into an immediate Mental Attitude Sins but this can be resolved in a few seconds of QUIET rebound and contention is unnecessary and uncalled for.
 - 2. It is the reversionists who constantly resist Bible Doctrine and though carnality resists Bible Doctrine occasionally this is not in view here.
 - i. The reversionists have their souls filled with evil and have been propagandized by false doctrine from the Cosmic Dynaspheres he then resists the truth of Bible Doctrine and the communicator and authority of the Pastor Teacher as well.

- ii. Bible Doctrine taught disagrees with his thinking and he is therefore totally antagonistic to this since in reversionism these people eat daily from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, Satan's tree of spiritual death.
- E. The reversionistic believer must make a change of thinking toward Bible Doctrine in order to BEGIN to recover from reversionism.
 - 1. Then they must make constant continual decisions
 - i. To put self under their right Pastor Teacher under authority in an academic discipline
 - ii. To concentrate on the message of Bible Doctrine being taught.
 - 2. Recovery from carnality is instantaneous and takes only as long as it takes to rebound.
 - 3. Recovery from reversionism takes a very long time since the Metabolized Bible Doctrine the believer had in his soul has been lost systematically and then replaced by EVIL the plan and policy of Satan and this must be reversed.
 - i. The evil must be removed and replaced again with Bible Doctrine and this takes TIME.
 - 4. There must be a consistent continuous series of good decisions to put self into a local church and take in Bible Doctrine so that over a period of time recovery occurs.
- IV. The Final responsibility of the Pastor Teacher:
 - A. He is to provide a teaching ministry for recovery from reversionism and evil.
 - B. His ministry must provide the mechanics for the believer in reversionism to become aware of his Status Quo along with the Divine Discipline he receives for it and then make consistent decisions to recovery from it.
 - C. There can be no great emphasis on the importance to teaching Bible Doctrine when there is consistent Negative Volition and the influence of evil in the soul.
 - 1. God must therefore exercise constant Divine Discipline and try to wake this believer up to his situation and Status Quo.
 - D. Summary of the 11 responsibilities of the Pastor Teacher: v14-26
 - 1. To maintain discipline in the local church v14
 - 2. To fulfill the #1 Priority of the ministry to study and teach v15
 - 3. To avoid apostasy, reversionism and evil in the content of the message v16
 - 4. The 1st parenthetical principle – The reversionistic pastor is NO believers right Pastor Teacher v17-18
 - 5. To constantly make an issue of Bible Doctrine v19
 - 6. The 2nd Parenthetical principle – the classification of the congregation as vessels of honor, believer who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace vs vessels of dishonor believers who fall into reversionism under the influence of evil v20
 - 7. By faithfulness in teaching to produce from the congregation vessels of honor, believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. v21
 - 8. By faithfulness in personal study to become himself a vessel of honor and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. v22
 - 9. By keeping his priorities straight he is to avoid false issues. V23
 - 10. By dogged determination he must become a consistent plugger avoiding the pitfalls of the ministry. v24-25
 - 11. Therefore to provide a teaching ministry for recovery from the trap of Satan of reversionism and influence of evil. v26

2Tim 2:25

v25: In grace orientation, humility, meekness, and gentleness, freedom from pride and arrogance, when necessary, exercise correction through disciplinary action, toward those reversionistic believers who resist or are in opposition to sound doctrinal teaching, so that perhaps The God may hopefully give to them a consistent change of mind toward Bible Doctrine for the purpose of achieving maximum epignosis or metabolized knowledge of The Truth or Doctrine.

2Tim 2:26

v26: and that they may sober up or come to their senses with total recovery out of reversionism reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, and thus be delivered out from the devil's trap of reversionism, false doctrine and Cosmic DynaspHERE evil, having been totally held captive by evil the satanic policy in the battle of the Angelic Conflict, by him, under Satan's will and authority with reference to his plan, policy and purpose.

Lesson #49 Series # 469 2Tim 3:1

I. Articles:

- A. Tulsa OK News Paper Article about the World council of churches arming blacks to kill whites in the governments of Rhodesia and South Africa the 2 best governments in the world.
 - 1. This article clearly demonstrates that the people sited in it cannot interpret history at all.
 - 2. Their push was "Guns for Guerrillas"
- B. London Times article "Cycle of Discipline" {great article about the proper interpretation of history}
 - 1. This article was about the strength of discipline in past British history.
 - 2. Only highly disciplined people could have established such a great empire with so few men.
 - 3. Victorian England was one of Puritanical Religion and our age is one of permissive agnosticism; Victorian capitalism was Individualistic and ours is bureaucratic; Victorian imperialism required highly disciplined men while our age has seen the independence of the British empire
 - 4. The main 20th century movements of fashion includes everything from Marxism, Libertarian or Demoralizing where man is regarded as mechanistic less than human and irresponsible.
 - 5. This is a reaction to the discipline of past ages and in many areas there have been reversals of the old attitudes of personal and social discipline which have happened in history and are demonstrative of the cycle of human attitudes and is seen in the history of the Old Testament Scripture.
 - 6. *The people of Israel recurrently adopted strict social discipline as a deference against their enemies and then when times were easy fell away from the discipline causing indignation of the prophets and disaster to their nation.*

II. The Wrong Side of History

- A. {started with a GREAT admonishment of some IDIOT who was talking to a girl in the back of the auditorium HOOOOOOOO RAAAAAAAAAAAAHHHHHHHHHHH!!!!; Col Thieme}
- B. Review the doctrines of the Angelic Conflict, Reversionism, Evil, Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil, Laws of Divine Establishment, 5 cycles of Divine Discipline.
 - 1. The concept of the Devil's Trap of 2Tim 2:25-26 is a lead into the devil's trap.
 - 2. The Devil's Trap:
 - i. The Wrong side of History
 - ii. Eating from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
 - iii. EVIL
 - iv. Reversionism
- C. Doctrine of the Devil's Seven
 - 1. Person of the Devil:
 - i. He is the highest of all angelic creatures the ruler of all fallen angels and the greatest creature genius ever to have lived. **Matt 8:28, 9:24, 12:26, Luke 11:18, ETC.**
 - ii. He is a PREHISTORIC Super Creature and belongs to the angelic creation which preexisted Human History. **Is 14:12-17, Ez 28:11-**
 - iii. He will have had 3 falls by the end of Human History **Is 14:Ez 28:Rev 12+20**
 - iv. He is the central antagonist of the Angelic Conflict **Gen 6, Heb 1+2, 1Pet 3:18-22**

- v. He has an organization and being a genius his organization is very unusual which has designed some of the greatest traps for the wrong side of history **2Tim 3**
 - vi. His Table of Organization is pretty well declared in **Eph 6:10-12**
 - vii. He is the original murderer **John 8:44**
 - viii. He is the opponent of Bible Doctrine **Matt 13:9**
 - ix. He is the Enemy of the Church Royal Family of God **Rev 2:9, 13+24**
2. The fact is that the devil is ruler of this world **Luke 4:5-7, John 12:31, 14:30, 16:11, 2Cor 4:4, Eph 2:2**
 3. Therefore the devil has strategy regarding the nations of this world a part of which is to put the entire Human Race on the wrong side of history.
 - i. We must be sure as believers never to step over that line and get on the wrong side of Human History.
 - ii. Since Long before this lesson was taught in the mid 70's the United States of America has been and continues to be on the wrong side of history.
 - iii. There seem to have been 2 attempts to step over this line and pull the country back One not so successful attempt by Mr. Reagan and another ongoing one by Mr. Trump.
 4. Therefore the devil has strategy for the unbelievers in the world which includes:
 - i. Blinding the minds of the unbeliever exposed to the gospel through every form of unbeliever reversionism **2Pet 2, Luke 8:12, 2Cor 4:3-4, 2Thes 2:7-10, Col 2:8, Rev 17.**
 - ii. In many cases religion is the devils Ace Trump Card in this endeavor as seen in the article from Tulsa about the world council of churches and their opposition to good government.
 - iii. People are on the wrong side of Human History because of religion than any other factor except for Fabian Socialism, Marxist Socialism which is revolutionary and Communism
 5. Therefore the devil has a strategy with regard to believers in the Royal Family of God **2Cor 2:11**, and it includes:
 - i. Accusing believers in heaven **Job 1, Zech 3:1-2, Rev 12:9-10, 1John 2:1-2**
 - ii. Sponsoring reversionism in all its forms thereby getting the believer on the wrong side of Human History. **1Cor 10:19-21, 2Cor 11:3, 13-15.**
 - iii. To frustrate the Will of God **2Tim 3**
 - a. Mental Will of God **Eph 4:14** offering people the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil at which TODAY vastly more so than in 1975 more people are eating there than ever before.
 - b. Geographic Will of God **1Thes 2:18**
 - c. Operational **James 4:7-8**
 - iv. Neutralize Bible Doctrine application causing the individual believer to be filled with worry and anxiety leading to other Mental Attitude Sins **1Pet 5:7-9**
 - v. Destroy the focus of the believer getting him to have
 - a. Eyes on people **Jer 17:5**
 - b. Eyes on self **1Kings 19:10**
 - c. Eyes on things **Heb 13:5-6**
 - vi. Getting believers totally involved in the production of Human Good to improve the world of the devil
 - a. The reversionistic believer becomes humanistic occupied with temporal solutions to man's problems, advocating systems to improve man's environment therefore functioning in Socialism, Social Gospel, and Social Action.
 - vii. Inculcation of Fear regarding Physical Death **Heb 2:14-15**
 - viii. Trap of the Devil called Evil **2Tim 2:25-26**

6. Religion is part of the strategy of the devil created by Satan to counter the Plan of God:
 - i. Counterfeit Gospel 2Cor 4
 - ii. Counterfeit Ministers 2Cor 11
 - iii. Counterfeit Doctrine 2Tim 4:1
 - iv. Counterfeit Communion 2Cor 10:19-21
 - v. Counterfeit Spirituality Gal 3:2-3
 - vi. Counterfeit Righteousness Matt 19
 - vii. Counterfeit Modus Vivendi Matt 23
 - viii. Counterfeit Power and Dynamics 2Tim 2:8-10
 - ix. Counterfeit Gods 2Tim 2:3-4
 7. False teachers are part of the strategy of the devil and a large part in the trap of the devil
 - i. Phony and Hypocritical Facade Matt 7:15, Rom 16:18
 - ii. Use Human Public Relations systems and human flirtations to court the unbeliever Gal 4:17-18, 2Tim 3:5-7
 - iii. Appeal to human ego and pride 2Cor 10:12
 - iv. Promote Idolatry as part of the devil's communion Table Hab 2:18-19
 - v. Promote Legalism and Self Righteous Arrogance 1Tim 1:7-8
 - vi. Continue throughout Human History 1John 4:1
 8. The devil's policy is EVIL and there are 3 areas of EVIL
 - i. Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
 - ii. General Doctrine of Evil
 - iii. Application of Evil in the principle of Human Good.
- D. We are dealing with our own nation as we approach the Bicentennial of the United States of America in 1975
1. Never have we been in the United States of America in worse shape before this and never have we been in worse shape as a nation than we are today in 2018
- E. Doctrine of Historical Interpretation:
1. This is one of the most important factors as we develop capacity for life from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and we should become more and more in history and read more about history than ever before.
 - i. Lee & Longstreet at Gettysburg, Napoleon,
 - ii. Just to see historical trends related to great people in history.
 2. Historical interpretation of history can be seen every day in our news media and even our entertainment as seen in the articles referenced above and in almost every article written today in the news media.
 3. Historical interpretation since this lesson has been totally dependent on Human Viewpoint.
 - i. History of France during the Bourbons and its contrast to the French Revolution
 - ii. Historians are conditioned by the period in which they write rather than what actually occurred in the period they are writing about.
 - iii. These people take the time in which they live and superimpose it on the period they are writing about.
 - iv. In France the historians reacted to the things which were occurring in their period of history or could never face reality and thereby ultimately ended up glorifying the french revolution as a deliverance rather than a travesty.
 - v. The biggest problem in reading historian writings is to determine what he may be reacting to in his own period of history and if he is reacting then he cannot be objective and his writing about past history will be terribly divorced from reality.
 - vi. Later in the 19th century historians reacted to failing governments and thereby took the opposite view of past french history seeing the revolution as the suicide of France.

- vii. In the 70's french historians were basically Marxist Socialists which promote violence as a solution to social difficulties.
- viii. The biggest problem is a total lack of objectivity in historians to enable them to do justice to reality and the truth.
- ix. Very few historians who have written about history or taught history in classes have ever been objective enough to present it accurately and objectively.
- x. Facts of history must be dug out of history and presented as facts without interpretation (Similarly the NEWS must be reported in such a way and no longer is at all).
- xi. One of the biggest problems is that People who want to write about or teach history get on the wrong side of history because they are reacting to something and present unreality.
- xii. One of the major reactions of the believer is reacting against:
 - a. Bible Doctrine
 - b. Your right Pastor Teacher
 - c. Academic discipline in the local church
 - d. Personalities in the congregation
 - e. ANYTHING
- xiii. Since this obviously occurs with Historians who have been trained NOT TO REACT to these things still do so it is far easier for the believer to do so if they ignore or neglect Bible Doctrine.
- xiv. Russian Revolution has been glorified by Liberals
 - a. They gloss over the facts and come up with some romantic thing.
 - b. Lenin and Trotsky estimated that when they began their revolution they would get the backing of all the working classes of Europe.
 - c. Lenin thought of Russian as that "backward Asiatic character of the Russian civilization".
 - d. He did not think socialism would succeed in Russia alone without support from western European working classes.
 - e. He gambled that socialism would not stop at the Russian borders but extend to the "highly industrialized and civilized countries of the west the construction of socialism would assume an international character and ADVANCED Europe would help Russia with machines and technical advice and administrative experience and education.
 - f. Russia had the initiative of revolution in 1917 but SOCIALISM never carried this initiative.
 - g. This is where none of these idiots who have been teaching Fabian and Marxist socialism in our schools for 100 years or more will admit that the truth is that socialism has never worked EVER anywhere.
 - h. Therefore the whole world is on the wrong side of Human History except in 1975 the only nations on the right side of history were South Africa and Rhodesia.
 - i. We are and have been a socialistic nation and we have been cracked so badly we are leaking in all areas.
 - j. In 1919 the Bolshevik party set up the communist nationale and by 1921 Lenin knew that he was in a terrible jam and was on the wrong side of history and the Soviet Union stood alone the prodigy of devastation and poverty where more people starved to death and dying and the cities were filled with large starving populations because the communists could not get the farmers to let go of the wheat grown in the country.
 - k. In 1921 they had to readmit capitalism as they have again recently done in 2018 in the "New Economic Policy".

- l. This new economic policy was a simple attempt to bring capitalism back in order to save socialism and to get financial help from other countries to refinance their situation.
 - m. Stalin had to declare by 1924 that the doctrine of socialism from one country to another at the time of the Russian revolution had not worked and there was no Genius person like Caesar or Napoleon just the simple stupid Russian mind and thinking.
 - n. If the Russians could not steal good things or technology from others in the world they would still be in the dark ages.
 - o. Nothing is as bad as the technology in Russia BY RUSSIANS except their cesspool of ideas.
 - p. Zineev Oct 1920 talking to a group of German Independent Socialists at Holly admitted that it was never anticipated that we would have had to resort to so much violence in the civil war.
 - q. The Russians were so stupid and so mismanaged that it was and is inevitable that socialism produces some of the greatest periods of VIOLENCE of Human History.
 - r. Socialism produces violence and revolution ALWAYS.
 - s. BY 1921 the people who this revolution was supposedly for were deprived of their freedoms and rights and the foundations laid for a 1 party system of government in Russia, it began in 1921 and is still in existence today.
 - t. In the violence the Bolsheviks could not determine friend from foe and established “political monopoly of tyranny” meaning they killed off all their opponents.
- xv. The United States of America since before the 70’s has been going the way of England but not as fast as Australia, New Zealand, Canada and other parts of the world.
- a. Cuba went to communism Mexico has not been decided as yet
 - b. We in the United States of America are and have been for a very long time surrounded on every side by socialism and communism and our public schools should have been disbanded back in the 70’s.
 - c. We have had and still have the WORST public education system ever imagined and it is in fact a CURSE because it is connected to Socialism.
 - d. All we are doing in our public schools is training people beyond their mentality and giving them vocabularies and thinking ability beyond their capacity so that they will have an excuse for violence when revolution comes.

F. Historical Interpretation of History:

- 1. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History, Personal, local, regional, national and international in 3 ways:
 - i. Direct control through his divine essence
 - a. This kept the whole of western Europe from becoming socialistic in 1917
 - b. Today it is socialistic but by delaying it the facts were demonstrated that Socialism Never Works.
 - c. We wonder why people can be so blind but it is simply part of the Blackout of the Soul as part of reversionism for the believer and unbeliever.
 - d. The Russians, Chinese and Moslems are all preparing to get us in the United States of America and have been for many many decades.
 - e. The worst thing ever to occur in this nation beyond what Benedict Arnold did was for Nixon and Ford ever to approach and deal with the Chinese communists.

- f. No one sees the terrible nature of socialism especially today despite all the evidence to support this.
 - g. People on the wrong side of history are BLIND to the Truth and cannot in any way interpret history and always DO THE EXACT WRONG THING.
 - ii. Indirect Control through the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - a. Next to understanding the Essence of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as God is understanding the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - b. REVIEW these principles
 - iii. Permissive Control permitting human volition to function in this period of the Angelic Conflict and allowing the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil to continue to function throughout Human History until the Gog revolution.
- 2. The BIBLE is the true key to historical Interpretation
 - i. Historical Interpretation related to God, Unseen Angels and the Visible world of mankind.
 - a. The bible is the only source which clearly defines the SEEN and UNSEEN issues in Human History.
 - ii. Bible Doctrine is the basis for correct interpretation of Human History.
 - a. As you assimilate 2Tim 3 you will have the ability to correctly interpret history.
 - iii. True history is a series of fact about the Human Race.
 - iv. To correlate and interpret these fact requires Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul therefore the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - v. This limits the perspicacity in the field of historical interpretation to his understanding of the Laws of Divine Establishment and his ability to assimilate facts objectively.
 - vi. To correctly interpret history one must understand:
 - a. Evil
 - b. Reversionism
 - c. Apostasy
 - d. and be able to distinguish them from sin and TRUTH as Bible Doctrine.
 - vii. To correctly interpret history one must understand:
 - a. The Angelic Conflict
 - b. The Cross of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - c. The 2nd Advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - viii. To correctly interpret history one must understand The doctrine of Dispensations
 - ix. To correctly interpret history one must understand the Church Age and the Royal Family of God.
 - x. While many historians recognize Rome of the Center of gravity of history they cannot and do not relate it to the 1st advent of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the beginning of the dispensation of the Church Age and this is in itself where many historians go astray.
 - xi. The Establishment student of history cannot understand that while the Greeks made intellectual political contributions to history their genius in literature, drama, history, philosophy is destroy by their reversionism and the Greeks had no vigor over any period of time because they were reversionistically degenerate.
 - xii. One of the greatest men of history a great genius as well was Alexander the Great and while being one of the greatest men whoever lived his genius destroyed him as he could not relate his genius to reality.
 - a. He related his genius finally to the satanic policies of Evil and therefore his human genius began to start 1 world brotherhood functions and within 6 months of that he DIED.

- b. This was Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ overruling will.
- xiii. The Roman Empire is the central lake where all streams of ancient history flow into and all streams of modern history egress.
 - a. Rome stands for government of law and by Laws of Divine Establishment principles and of everyone using his freedom to exercise self discipline as a citizen of a national entity.
 - b. Romans had respect for authority which resulted in stability and more function under the Laws of Divine Establishment than any group of people who ever has lived.
 - c. It takes Bible Doctrine and Divine Viewpoint to see what has happened to Rome and to the Unites States of America.
 - d. The decline of Rome teaches many lessons which apply to the decline of the United States of America and there are many parallels in the 2 histories but Bible Doctrine is the link to these 2.
 - e. It is the conservative in the United States of America who has been so great in the advance of our nation but conservatism lost out when it went counter to Doctrine and when conservatism became Antisemitic is when it ended.
 - f. Antisemitism is responsible for bring such people as Woodrow Wilson and Franklin Roosevelt into our nations history and FDR has done more to advance communism than Lenin, Stalin and Mao all combined.
 - g. He used American power to advance communism in a most fantastic way.
 - h. In the past American conservatives have been landed aristocrats peasantry, industrial capitalistic hierarchies who have adhered to the Laws of Divine Establishment bringing greatness to the nations of western Europe and the United States of America.
 - i. Napoleon wiped out conservative peasants which would have backed him in all his wars.
 - j. The United States of America is going the way of many nations down down and only the fact that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History and we have a REMNANT of a PIVOT in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Self Justification is all that is holding us up.

3. Partial correct interpretations (Impertinent here)

4. How the bible sheds light on obscure historical events which results in correct historical interpretations.

5. Each generation of Human History is sustained by believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace **2Tim 1:5-6**

6. The principle of the wrong side of Human History 2Tim 3

i. The description of the wrong side of history 2Tim 3:1-4

ii. Opposition from the wrong side of history 2Tim 3:5-12

iii. Deliverance from the wrong side of history 2Tim 3:13-17

III. The Description of the wrong side of history 2Tim 3:1-4

A. Reversionism is related to being on the wrong side of history

1. To understand reversionism is to understand the Modus Vivendi of the wrong side of history.

B. There comes a period in your spiritual growth were you must become an interpreter of history and if you do not you will react to wrong historical trends and this will lead you into reversionism

1. We see this in the reactions to socialism and reversionism so rampant in the nation today.

C. When believers do not understand history they react to history and thus become reversionists.

1. Do you worry or get upset about what you hear in the news media or entertainment media and this can be so much of an upset that this will lead you right into the trap of the devil.
 2. If you get to a certain point of spiritual growth and do not understand how to interpret history you will wind up in Reverse Process Reversionism living off the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and the Sin Unto Death.
 3. This happens to many believers who do not understand Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History and then they react to history and thereby enter into reversionism.
 4. Because of failure of the believer and unbeliever to fail to understand and interpret the time in which we live they will react to contemporary history and fall directly into reversionism.
- D. The Royal Family of God must know how to interpret history else they will react to history and end up in reversionism or when the revolution comes buckle under to the revolutionaries.
1. This chapter is a COMMAND to every believer in the Royal Family of God.
 2. Only the believer with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can correctly evaluate contemporary historical events
 3. Only the believer with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul can handle any kind of history future, past or current.
 4. It is imperative that we interpret and understand history BEFORE HISTORY DESTROYS US.
 5. Our Spiritual Life is on the line and we either learn to understand contemporary history and interpret it properly or it will destroy us
 6. Once we react to socialism or communism or islam or terrible shocking events it will take us through all stages of reversionism.

Lesson #50 Series # 469 2Tim 3:1

- I. Gun Control discussion
 - A. On the wrong side of history the people do everything wrong and think in a wrong sloppy manner.
 1. Gun Control has occurred in every country which has been overtaken by communists who advocate execution of those who do not comply.
 2. Gun control ALWAYS results in greater crime when it is instituted.
- II. The Wrong Side of History
 - A. Outline
 1. Description of the Wrong Side of History 2Tim 3:1-4
 2. Opposition from the Wrong Side of History 2Tim 3:5-12
 3. Deliverance from the Wrong Side of History 2Tim 3:13-17
 - B. Reversionism related to the Wrong Side of History: Review Above
 1. This command to all members of the Royal Family of God is to understand contemporary history and be able to interpret it.
 2. If believers do not fulfill this command to interpret and know about contemporary history they will then react to it and this reaction will put them into reversionism which puts them immediately on the wrong side of history.
 3. There is a point in spiritual advance where the believer must be able to interpret contemporary history correctly and this comes from a pertinent amount and content of certain doctrines as 2Tim 3.
 4. Failure to master 2Tim 3 will result in reaction to history and entrance into reversionism and be on the wrong side of history.
 5. Believers in the Church Age as Royal Family of God MUST obey this command and be able to interpret contemporary history else they will fall into reversionism and be on the wrong side of history.

6. Believers often face in contemporary history, disaster and suffering, unexplainable difficulties which shock them and they REACT to these and question the plan and purpose of God and become totally divorced reality and this results in reaction and entrance into reversionism.
 7. This occurred to believers in India during the revolution there and the things which occurred.
 8. This could occur for our nation as well and we may face the same situations and are not in any way excluded from any of the disasters of life and the way all of our government works and the insanity and mediocrity and stupidity and crass mental blindness and failure to orient to realities of the rise and resurgence of communism throughout the whole world and the constant resurgence and advance of islam throughout the world.
 9. This could cause the believers to react and in so doing go straight into reversionism and then are on the wrong side of history.
 10. NO believer can afford to be on the Wrong Side of History for it is misery, tragedy, disaster, heartache and added to this is Divine Discipline for TOTAL misery and total despondency in this believer.
- C. Just prior to the end of any generation, dispensation or the fall of any nation there are always these detailed characteristics present.
1. Every dispensation and fall of every nation terminates with great apostasy and great reversionism and the influence of evil therefore most people being on the wrong side of history.
 - i. The believer cannot ever afford to be on the wrong side of history.
 2. This includes very difficult disastrous times and periods or spheres of time where people are helpless with maximum influence of evil.
 3. Apostasy is a 2 sided coin:
 - i. Reversionism
 - ii. Influence of evil.
 4. When a nation is being destroyed by the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline “hard times” set in and they are characterized by Apostasy.
 5. One of the most influential things in time of disaster is religion and religion is always on the wrong side of history.
 - i. Religion is of Satan himself and his ACE TRUMP card and the most genius system used to distract the believer and unbeliever from God, doctrine and the Grace Plan of God.
 6. The United States of America today is influenced by this system of religion saturating this country and it is totally as always on the wrong side of history and trying to pull the United States of America with them.
 - i. This is part of the satanic trap and once you get into it you are totally propagandized by them.
 - ii. This is the same thing in Socialism, Welfare State Function, Communism, Liberalism all are traps to set to get the people of a nation on the wrong side of history.
 7. When the majority of people are on the wrong side of history it then ceases to exist as a nation.
 - i. It becomes a simple matter of time with great suffering and torture and slavery and everything cruel evil vicious vile and painful occurring to the people before it is finished.
 - ii. This is the ending of people on the wrong side of history as they scream themselves completely OUT OF HISTORY.
 8. There will be in these last times for any nation maximum apostasy, reversionism and the influence of evil and the maximum production of Human Good
 - i. The best example of this is the working of our congress for about 50 years.

- ii. This is the DO GOOD attitude of the congress which has permeated our system of government for a very long time and they simply are trying to control every aspect of life for every citizen.
- iii. The insanity of these people is only exceeded by the insanity of those who have voted for them.

D. Principles:

1. Here is the principle of people caught on the Wrong Side of History and therefore caught up in the maelstrom of disaster.
2. Only the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace can carry his generation and only this one is the dam which hold back the water of historical disaster.
3. Spiritual growth or progress in the Spiritual Life starts in spiritual infancy with the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and carries this believer to the point of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace at which time the believer receives his Super Grace blessings
4. For the Ultra Super Grace believer there is the Intensification of all categories of Super Grace blessings under the maximum pressure from the forces behind EVIL.
5. There are 5 categories of blessing for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace which are essential to understand in relationship to the individual and history.
 - i. Spiritual Blessings
 - a. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine and is maximum category I Love.
 - b. Sharing the Happiness of God
 - c. Capacity for life, love, happiness, blessing, understanding and appreciation of the Plan of God, historical development as it occurs and appreciation of the reality of historical success and failure in any past situation and ability to face any blessing or disaster in life.
 - ii. Temporal Blessings
 - a. Many of these will go right on in spite of historical disaster.
 - b. Wealth, success, promotion, advance in any sphere of life, prosperity in every category, mental prosperity and increased concentration and perspicacity in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, cultural prosperity,
 - c. Laws of Divine Establishment prosperity including maximum freedom, privacy, property protection and also protection from crime, and historical disaster.
 - d. Military prosperity and blessings in all aspects of deployment or barracks duty stations.
 - e. Prosperity in Economic disaster
 - f. Leadership Dynamics
 - iii. Association Blessings
 - a. Being on the right side of Human History the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace has great blessings for those in his periphery.
 - b. This is in the form of Direct blessing from God to those associated with the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Direct blessing from the Super Grace believer to those in his periphery.
 - c. Friends, Family, Loved ones, business, professions, social organizations as clubs or groups, local church missions,
 - d. Geographic blessing for the neighborhood, city, state, and nation, ETC.
 - e. This demonstrates clearly that those on the right side of history are a source of blessing for those on the Wrong Side of History and it only takes

a few on the right side of history to pull those on the Wrong Side of History back into line.

- f. It often only takes a nucleus of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in some area, nation state or city to turn the whole system around because God honors and must vindicate his word wherever it is found and these Super Grace believers have maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- iv. Historical Blessings
 - a. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is the spiritual atlas who carries his own generation in history.
 - b. The Ultra Super Grace believer also becomes a stabilizer for all generations of Human History
 - c. He is on the right side of Human History therefore supports and sustains his generation in history.
 - d. Except for RARE cases of blessing by association this historical blessing system is not perpetuated from one generation to another because EVERY GENERATION MUST STAND OR FALL ON THE BASIS OF ITS OWN REMNANT ACCORDING TO THE ELECTION OF GRACE.
 - e. How a nation or history goes depends on how many Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believers or genius unbelievers are found in that generation or nation on the right side of history.
 - f. This Super Grace remnant is on the right side of Human History in contrast to the reversionistic believer who is on the wrong side of Human History.
 - g. This sets the doctrinal pattern of spiritual heritage of 2Tim.
- v. Dying Grace Blessings

III. The Stages of Reversionism:

- A. The reversionistic believer often get into reversionism because of reaction to contemporary history.
 - 1. We are in our own period of contemporary history and tomorrow they will be HISTORY but Today they are part of our life.
 - 2. Adolescent believers tend to always react to contemporary history and thus enter reversionism.
- B. Reaction & Distraction:
 - 1. The presence of reactor factors in life is the cause for the believer entering into this stage of reversionism.
 - 2. Reactor factors include:
 - i. Discouragement
 - ii. Disillusion
 - iii. Boredom
 - iv. Inability to cope with loneliness
 - v. Overcome by Self Pity
 - vi. Frustration
 - vii. Inability to interpret contemporary history.
 - viii. Rejection of authority of the Right Pastor Teacher
 - ix. Personality hangups with members of a congregation or Pastor Teacher.
 - x. Lack of objectivity or subjectivity when under rebuke or reprimand.
 - xi. All Mental Attitude Sins
 - xii. Operation Vengeance seeking to build happiness by putting another down
 - a. You cannot ever build happiness on another's unhappiness.
 - 3. Distractions luring the believer from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine:

- i. Social, Sexual, sports, entertainment, family, health, gossip, policy, historical.
 - ii. Drug Addiction, Mental Illness, academic or mental incompetence from excesses in the consumption of drugs or alcohol which distracts from consistency in Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - a. The illicit drug trade in this country is now and always has been part of 2 major communist conspiracies and 1 major crime conspiracy to destroy the American people.
 - b. Anyone who pushes drugs is the lowest form of humanity and they should be EXECUTED when convicted instead of being so permissive along with those who commit RAPE and MURDER.
 - c. EVERY great nation in history totally avoided illicit drug use in their rise and function.
 - d. This is part of the vigor of the great nation.
 - e. There is no way a person who uses drugs or excess alcohol when they have gone too far can learn anything.
 - f. Drug abuse destroys the SOUL of the person and THIS IS MURDER
 - iii. For a believer with minimum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul reaction to events of contemporary history puts him directly into the reaction stage of reversionism.
 - iv. This reaction results in reversionism placing the believer on the wrong side of Human History.
- C. Frantic Search for happiness:
- 1. The function of the reactor factors in the life of the believer result in a Frantic Search for happiness.
 - 2. When the believer is reacting he is always looking for happiness getting it where he can, while he can as quickly as he can.
 - 3. The Frantic Search for happiness intensifies when there is a REACTION to history.
 - 4. This is a concentration on Hedonism.
 - 5. This Frantic Search for happiness follows the trends of the Old Sin Nature:
 - i. Asceticism
 - a. Holy rollers trying to get the 2nd blessing or the Gift etc.
 - b. Going to camps, throwing fagots on fires, making one shot decisions.
 - ii. Lasciviousness
 - a. Chasing, seduction Debauchery, Drunkenness
 - b. Sexual aberrations such as nymphomania, lesbianism, homosexuality, ETC.
- D. Operation Boomerang:
- 1. When some of the efforts of Frantic Search for happiness are used for happiness it simply intensifies the reaction of the believer building it up recycling it over and over again.
 - 2. Frustrations become intensified along with discouragement, boredom, disillusion, self pity etc.
 - 3. Those who react to history intensify their reaction to the point of neurosis, psychosis or becoming a member of some satanic organization which will solve all the problems of history.
- E. Emotional Revolt of the Soul:
- 1. Emotion as the female part of the soul is designed to respond to the male part of the sole the Right Lobe Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 2. The emotion in effect revolts against the Right Lobe of the soul and takes over or tries to take over the soul functions.
 - 3. When the woman takes over it is HELL on earth and when the female part of the soul takes over the person is in the greatest trouble.
 - 4. Emotion cannot think at all but can only respond to the thinking of the Right Lobe.

5. Emotion has NO norms and standards, capacity for life, and becomes the tool of the Old Sin Nature and the disaster of the Sin Unto Death **Rev 2:23**
 6. When the emotion gets to the place where it completely controls the soul this is a good reason for the Sin Unto Death. **2Cor 6:11-12**
 7. This is a great handicap to the person on the wrong side of history who has allowed Emotional Revolt of the Soul to put them on the wrong side of history.
 8. People in Emotional Revolt of the Soul cannot take in Bible Doctrine in any way and the reason believers are told to separate from reversionists **Rom 16:17-18**
- F. Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine:
1. This is where the people on the Wrong Side of History get their propaganda.
 2. As a result or Reaction & Distraction, Frantic Search for happiness, Emotional Revolt of the Soul the believer becomes confirmed in his Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine which includes:
 - i. Indifference or apathy to bible teaching from a Pastor Teacher.
 - ii. Too busy for Bible Doctrine class
 - iii. Antagonism or personality hangups with regard to the Pastor Teacher and his authority.
 - iv. Antagonism or personality conflict with other members of the congregation.
 - v. Failure to use the Grace Apparatus for Perception in the local church assembly or individually.
 - vi. Failure to rebound
 - vii. Lack of respect for authority
 - viii. Lack of concentration
 - ix. No Poise
 - x. No objectivity
 - xi. Inability to handle Prosperity which is a warning stage of reversionism when it comes from Satan or a blessing from God for spiritual advance.
 - xii. Disorientation to living grace factors by which God keeps us alive after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God in the world of the devil and provides all that is needed for the spiritual advance of the believer and Negative Volition rejects all of these so that there is a reaction and thus failure to understand history and getting on the Wrong Side of History.
 - xiii. Active campaigning to discredit and destroy the ministry of the Pastor Teacher.
- G. Blackout of the Soul
1. This soul is filled with satanic propaganda called evil because Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine has resulted in a vacuum formed in the soul so what ONLY evil can be entered into it.
 2. This is Demon Influence on the believer, who cannot be demon possessed, where the believer is filled with the EVIL of satanic propaganda. Eph 4:
- H. Scar Tissue of the Soul
1. This a result of Blackout of the Soul and is a blinding stage and results in a hardness of soul where there is no way any Bible Doctrine can get through **John 14:20**
 2. Scar Tissue of the Soul rejects military preparation de-emphasizes national defense **Prov 21:29-31**
 - i. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace correctly interprets history and demands and is vociferous for military preparedness but EVEN then the victory belongs solely to the Lord thus understanding BOTH issues of preparation for war and ultimately the victory belonging to the Lord.
 3. This is a state of revolt against the Lord **Neh 9:16-17, Jer 7:25-27**
- I. Reverse Process Reversionism
1. This is the antithesis of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and the believer has all his priorities totally wrong and is on the Wrong Side of History.

2Tim 3:1

v1: Now, as Royal Family of God, be knowing, learning, comprehending, understanding this necessary interpretation of contemporary history and this doctrine, that in the last days of any dispensation or any nation in history, hard periods or spheres of time of perilous trends, difficulty, stress, helplessness, destruction of Laws of Divine Establishment principles, maximum reversionism, apostasy and extensive influence of evil, will be imminent, threatening, impending disaster.

Lesson #51 Series # 469 2Tim 3:2

- I. The essence or characteristics of reversionism on the wrong side of history
 - A. Any believer who fails to understand Bible Doctrine, fails to understand and handle historical events and the unfolding of history as it occurs in his lifetime WILL fall into reversionism.
 - B. Those in any nation under the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline or at the end of any dispensation will be confronted with great apostasy and without Bible Doctrine to understand and deal with the historical situation they will fall into reversionism.
 1. No one ever survives as an individual being on the wrong side of Human History.
 2. For them this is a life of failure, disaster and failure to cope with life in general.
 3. These people can exhibit psychosis, neurosis and psychopathic under intense suffering and misery simply because of being on the wrong side of history.
 4. It is your Mental Attitude which puts you on the wrong side of history without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 5. Those on the wrong side of history are reversionistic and their thinking is saturated with the influence of evil.
 - C. For the believers without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, the WEAK ones when some historical disaster occurs they will react and when they do they will be on the wrong side of history.
 1. These are WEAK individuals in the soul.
 2. These are reversionists and under historical disaster they always react and get on the wrong side of history and are out of step, under Divine Discipline and totally in trouble for the rest of their lives.
- II. Characteristics of BELIEVERS on the wrong side of history because of NEGLECT or REJECTION of Bible Doctrine and by this neglect they are unable to cope with historical disasters whenever they come along.
 - A. We must consider ourselves whether or not we have these characteristics in our own soul and we must be oriented to life and historical disaster.
 1. If we are offended by crude or vulgar language we are disoriented to reality since LIFE IS VULGAR.
 2. If we are going to be able to handle historical disasters we must not be offended and upset every time someone goes against us in some minor way.
 3. If you don't get your way every time in every situation we will never be able to handle historical disaster.
 - B. Lovers of Self:
 1. Reversionism emphasizes the fact that any person who is so occupied with self because of lack of Bible Doctrine so centers on self that he becomes WEAK and any disaster which occurs he cannot cope with.
 2. He cannot cope with the normal difficulties in life either much less the disasters of history.
 3. Personal Disasters and sufferings occur for each of us which throughout our lives.
 - i. These can come for carnality, blessing, growth etc., and we must be able to easily cope with these.
 4. Historical Disasters include Revolutions as seen throughout history.
 - i. Mutiny of 57 in India
 - ii. Russian Revolution 1917
 - iii. Chinese Communist Revolution

- iv. The problem is HOW are we going to cope with this type of historical disasters.
 - v. WE WILL GET THIS AND WE HAVE THE WEAKEST MOST COWARDLY GOVERNMENT EVER TO EXIST SINCE THIS LESSON WAS TAUGHT AND WORSE TODAY.
 - vi. Behind this passage and these concepts is VIOLENCE, PAIN, TORTURE, RAPE, MURDER and all the disgusting things man can do to man in war and revolution.
 - vii. We have seen these horrible things from the Chinese, Vietnamese, Russians, and today more than any other group islam.
 - viii. These are the things which go with HISTORICAL DISASTER and when this occurs WE MUST BE ABLE TO COPE WITH IT **WITH BIBLE DOCTRINE IN THE SOUL.**
 - ix. We have in this nation Drug Addiction, Organized Crime, Marxist Socialists ETC.
 - x. HOWEVER IF YOU ARE ON THE RIGHT SIDE OF HISTORY NOTHING GETS TO YOU OR PHASES YOU BUT YOU GET TO EVERYTHING ELSE.
 - xi. If however you are on the wrong side of history you will be destroyed spiritually by your reaction to historical disaster.
5. This is a characteristic of reversionism which emphasize Blackout of the Soul, Scar Tissue of the Soul or hardness of heart and Reverse Process Reversionism.
- i. Being a LOVER OF SELF is the sum total of reversionism and the antithesis of true love and capacity for pseudo love.
 - ii. If you love self you love anyone who caters to yourself and is nice to you and dislike anyone who is contrary to these things.
 - a. This give you an immediate false set of standards with which you evaluate everything in life.
 - b. If you are nice to everyone who is nice to you and caters to you this immediately sets you off as being DISORIENTED to life in general and therefore disoriented to the Spiritual Life particularly.
6. The Issue must be understood since the world is crowded and we will rarely get our own way.
- i. This requires the principle of just being thoughtful about everything in life.
 - ii. If you interpret life in terms of how everyone treats you then you obviously don't understand anything about life.
 - iii. You don't have many friends and have a miserable time in life.
 - iv. The BIG issue is that you will not be able to handle historical disaster.
7. This is one of the big manifestations of arrogance and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance.
- i. Capacity for love is replaced by loving self and from this comes the categories of pseudo love which is based on how much someone can do for YOU.
8. The only way to avoid this or recover from it is from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine so that you GROW out of this characteristic or BREAK OUT from too much Divine Discipline.
9. This is a counter part of PRIDE as part of the Interlocking System of Arrogance
- i. When pressure is put on Price as then up pops self love and this gives you a very nasty disposition.
 - a. THIS IS NOT LIKE SCROOGE BECAUSE HE WAS ORIENTED TO THE Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - ii. It makes you out of sorts with everyone else.
- C. Lovers of Money, Covetous (GREED):
- 1. You would be a NUT CASE if you did not love money and realize that money has a lot of things which you can do with it.

- i. Money makes an excellent SLAVE and we all should be and often are enslave money which is rightfully ours as we make it do legitimate things which we desire to do.
 2. There is nothing wrong with liking and having a legitimate desire for money.
 3. This is having priorities wrong and putting money above everything else. **1Tim 6**
 - i. Doctrine of Money
 - ii. The only thing wrong is reversionism in the soul nothing is wrong with MONEY.
 - iii. As long as your soul is right money is going to make a great slave.
 - iv. If the soul is wrong being in reversionism under the influence of evil then money is going to be a CRUEL master.
 - v. It is totally a matter of the condition of the soul.
 - vi. Like anything in life when money comes before Bible Doctrine or any spiritual priority then money is then converted into a principle of EVIL.
 - vii. **1Tim 6:10** “For the Love of money is the root of all kinds of evil”.
 4. The idea that everyone has a price in life is simply NOT TRUE.
 - i. If a person has maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there is NO PRICE.
 - ii. This person would turn down \$1,000,000 even when it was sitting right there in front of him if it violated his principles.
 - iii. There are others as believers who would do anything for that money.
 5. This is “lover of money” is the person involved who would do anything for money, good, bad, right or wrong, or EVIL.
 - i. This is the senator of congressman who would vote for Gun confiscation or Union Support.
 - ii. This will be the congressman who cannot cope with historical disaster.
 - iii. It is tragic that we have so many men in our government on the wrong side of history.
- D. Rotomontades or Gascanade, excessively or effervescently or a profusely proud braggart of himself
- E. Arrogant Proud Ones
 1. Not those who have good poise or self confidence
 2. It is something inside the soul of the individual focused in Gate 1 of the Interlocking System of Arrogance total PRIDE in self and total overestimation of self, vicious pride of the soul.
 3. There are 3 principles which illustrate the genius Satan as ruler of this world
 - i. Pride – His sin
 - ii. Evil – his way of thinking or policy
 - iii. Human Good – His production from this evil.
 - iv. All of these will be mentioned for the person on the wrong side of Human History.
 - v. Here we have had the first Pride
 - vi. We must understand these 3 doctrines in order to understand Satan.
 4. This is an inner arrogance of soul and involvement in the Interlocking System of Arrogance especially under the principles of pride and self love.
- F. Slandorous or Blasphemers:
 1. If you have any of the other factors so far you will be a slanderer of others who compete with you in any way for any reason.
 2. It is directed toward people who compete with your opinion of self and when toward God is Blaspheme.
 3. This is another counter part of pride and when pride is under pressure from some rivalry then slander as a verbal sin pops up.
- G. Disobedient to Parents: **Eph 6:1-3**

1. This is one of the greatest failures in any nation and WEAK people are produced in homes by permissive parents.
2. This is the worst thing any kid can ever do is disobey any order from any parent.
3. The NEXT worst thing is the parent letting him get away with it because this child is weak and never will be strong ever.
4. He has by this violated the most important principle in the world and no matter how unfair or unjust any order from any parent is the worst thing a child can do is disobey his parents.
5. Children should regard their parents as something next to God and implicit obedience is the order of the day no matter how unfair.
6. When you have a whole generation of children who get away with anything in the home because of permissive parents and these children disrespect and disobey their parents rejecting their authority they will reject every authority in life and as adults they will be on the wrong side of Human History.
7. These children will be good for the torture chambers of the communists, crowd bait, slavery under some tyranny, as corpses.
8. The quickest way to get on the wrong side of history is to reject authority and if you reject authority as a child in the home then you will fight authority all of your life and in this God will provide intensive Divine Discipline.
9. Cleanliness is NOT next to Godliness but SELF DISCIPLINE is next to Godliness and there cannot be Godliness without it and it is the KEY to everything in life.
10. You either learn self discipline the easy way in the home and get clobbered a few times but if you learn it here then you save about 85% of all personal suffering you will ever have..
 - i. You can learn it because of suffering under Divine Discipline and punishment the hard way.
 - ii. Permissive parents are the cause of great suffering and in the case of many blacks they often grow up without both parents and a weak home life or without knowing their parents at all.
 - iii. This contributes greatly to the downfall of the individual and the nation.
11. Often the first time any child gets any kind of orientation to discipline of any kind is from Law Enforcement or juvenile jail time and often claim police brutality because of the huge contrast with what their parents have allowed.
 - i. We face these 2 monsters in our society today, permissive parents and children who were never disciplined.
 - ii. If you discipline a child you cannot spoil him
 - iii. If you do not discipline a child giving him anything will spoil him.
 - iv. In Israel if a child in the late teens did not show proper respect and discipline they stoned him to death.
 - v. There never was a crime problem in Israel and never were any jails and if a child was found to be incorrigible they were executed to save the nation problems later on.
12. Children will inevitably become proud about themselves but there is nothing which cuts the pride out of a child faster than a good spanking from good strict discipline.
 - i. Lack of this ruins generations of children
13. It is common sense to have universal military training since this is the ONLY Way some men will ever learn discipline.
 - i. For the GIRLS this will often occur when they marry some great male who although very nice to look at has no discipline or training but is still a child.
14. Rejection of parental authority is the basic reason that people often do not orient to life.
 - i. The biggest problem in orientation to life is lack of having discipline in the home because of permissive parents.

- ii. Whether fair or unfair is not the issue and this does not infer brutality but DISCIPLINE whenever it is needed.
 - iii. An properly adjusted child should thank his parents and his schools for every time he received a good spanking and every time he was required to do something GROSS and unfair and did it this is adjustment to life.
15. There are 2 kinds of children who come out of homes today.
- i. Those who stick with their parents because their parents are going to do something for them because they have nothing of their own to stand on having experienced nor learned any discipline in the home.
 - ii. Those who have self discipline who truly love and admire their parents (there are very few of these).
 - iii. This true genuine love of the child for the parents when he is an adult is rare and cannot ever be derived by parents who are prissy and permissive to the child.
16. The child is still under the authority of the parents as long as they live under their roof no matter the age of either.
17. Your whole life as an adult depends on what kind of authority and discipline existed in your home life.
- i. Parents must be like DIs and are allowed to smile around the holidays.
 - ii. If you as a child respect your parents in childhood you will love them in adulthood.
 - iii. If you love them as a child you will most likely reject them in adulthood.
18. For a child who takes all the discipline in the home and responds to it he is promised a long prosperous life on the earth.
19. Summary:
- i. Under the Laws of Divine Establishment the parents are authority under Divine Institution #3
 - ii. Therefore the parents are the original basic authority in life.
 - iii. Parents are responsible to use their authority to train their children in both function and principle in life
 - a. Both Body and Soul must be trained.
 - b. You have not succeeded in life when you complete toilet training of your child since there are many things yet to be taught into the soul.
 - iv. Consequently parents are not only responsible for food, shelter, clothing and health of their children but also their thinking, Mental Attitude, norms and standards, Poise, Manners, self discipline, respect for authority, respect for privacy, property and rights of other people including other children.
 - v. When you allow your child to go out of the hours you make clear the ownership of the toys of other children.
 - vi. All children are born ignorant of these basic principle of life therefore they must be trained, disciplined and punished until inculcated in the principles of life.
 - vii. Children have to be trained and instructed with respect to freedom, privacy, property and rights of others.
 - viii. Children should be taught love of country, patriotism, respect for law and Law Enforcement, appreciation for the military, understanding of government, predilection for free enterprise.
 - ix. They must be taught objectivity toward leadership and authority discerning between the person and principles.
 - a. If they don't like a teacher in school tough shit she is still the authority and teaches them so learn it.
 - x. All Christian parents have a responsibility in evangelization and doctrinal communications Deut 6:6-9, 7:9

- xi. As children become oriented to the principle of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and the local church classroom they must be taught to recognize and submit to the authority of their right Pastor Teacher Heb 13:7+17
- xii.

Authority		Recipient
God		Creation, Man, Angels
Word of God		Believer
Pastor Teacher		Believer in the congregation
Husbands		Wife
Parents		Children
National Leaders		Citizens of the nation
Teachers		Students
Coach		Athletes and Team
Management		Labor
Police Officer		Citizen
Military Rank		Lower Rank or Enlisted man
Law		Citizen of the Entity
Freedom, Privacy Property		Man

Lesson #52 Series # 469 2Tim 3:2

- I. Houston Tribune, Paul Harvey, Laws Proposed by Congress to Protect Robbers.
- II. The United States of America in mass has for many decades moved onto the wrong side of history.
 - A. If you fail to understand this passage you can react to this Status Quo of the United States of America and enter reversionism and on the wrong side of history.
- III. Review the 6 characteristics of being on the wrong side of history v2.
 - A. Ungrateful, devoid of gratitude Reversionists under the influence of evil have no capacity for life and no understanding of life thus no common sense.
 - 1. These people having rejected authority they have not gratitude, no Scale of Values, no discipline, no capacity for ANY ASPECT OF LIFE.
 - B. To be Anti Establishment
 - 1. This is against any system of authority starting with parents and rejecting any authority except that of self therefore Interlocking System of Arrogance involvement.
 - C. Having NO capacity for Normal Love
 - 1. These people also have absolutely NO capacity for Love in any aspect which puts them into the category of having Pseudo Love which occurs in 2 categories
 - 2. No capacity for love in the ordinary way being purely selfish
 - 3. The abnormal lack of capacity for love resulting in homosexuality, incest, bestiality, lesbians, ETC.
 - i. The Idea that homosexuals should be accepted by society is definitely from Marxist theories.
 - ii. They are not sick have no mental problems and are in a simple state of carnality ie they are sinful.
 - iii. Homosexuality was removed from society in the bible and under the laws of Israel by EXECUTION.
 - iv. Therefore the abnormal types of people simply did not exist and the overall "NORMALITY" of the Jews in Israel contributed to their greatness.
 - v. Abnormality can destroy the smartest people, most vigorous, wisest, best located, superior people in a nation and homosexuality if not STAMPED OUT is one of the many things that will completely destroy any population.
 - vi. Wherever these people who practice abnormal love or abnormal sexual practices there is NO HONOR among these people without honor there is no capacity and without capacity there is no LOVE.

- D. Implacable people who cannot be appeased or reconciled with and are totally impossible to pacify
- E. Malicious Gossips
1. These people have pride and arrogance in the soul and when pressure is put on their pride it submerges and this results in a counterpart emerging and this case has it as GOSSIP which is an attempt to destroy the person who puts down the pride.
 2. This can include many of the Mental Attitude Sins including, Jealousy, envy, bitterness, hatred, implacability, vindictiveness, and these go into action for the verbal sins.
 3. Gossip requires NO BRAINS, FACTS, TALENT, CHARACTER, SELF DISCIPLINE, MANNERS, OBJECTIVITY, POISE, NOR ANY HONOR.
 4. These people are verbally violent persons who use their mouth to destroy you.
 5. They have enough brain power to be dangerous but not enough to be smart.\
 6. It is the worst kind of violence since the weakest sweetest nicest people do this sort of thing and it MUST be eliminated from the local church.
- F. Lack of Self Discipline
1. People who lack self discipline are always on the wrong side of history
 2. A nation of people who cannot regulate self are moving along toward slavery and carry invisible shackles.
 3. When people don't regulate self then inevitably slavery occurs.
 4. Lack of self discipline means no capacity for life and it is needed for all capacities for life and for poise, concentration and to truly be able to enjoy life.
 5. Principle:
 - i. Self discipline provides appreciation for freedom and authority.
 - ii. On the surface freedom and authority seem to be in conflict in history
 - iii. In reality they support each other on the right side of history
 - iv. Freedom cannot exist without authority.
 - v. Authority and discipline are the basis for perpetuating freedom and freedom can not continue without authority and discipline.
 - vi. All freedom under the Laws of Divine Establishment is provided through military victory.
 - vii. Military victory is only possible with STRONG authority and discipline.
 - viii. For a large number of people to enjoy freedom, privacy and property there MUST be authority to protect this freedom.
 - ix. Authority in Law Enforcement and of the Divine Institutions in government, military and Bible Doctrine are all needed for freedom.
- G. Not gentle, fierce savage, violent and brutal.
1. Outside of fighting and WARFARE use of violence is indicative of national failure and individual failure to self regulate and respect authority individually or in a group.
 2. Violence and solving by violence is indicative of failure to solve anything.
 3. Once one person tries to solve things like violence then everyone starts to solve things by violence and this results in situations like the french and Russian and Chinese revolutions.
 4. Brutality and violence is not the way to solve problems and the system of Anglo Saxon law under which we have developed solved problems by sitting down and working out solutions.
 5. Lack of self discipline means no respect for authority which results in brutality and violence
 6. Brutality and violence always shows lack of self discipline no respect for authority and no capacity for life.
 7. A brutal violent person is NEVER a good lover and his brutality indicates he is only concerned about himself and that he is very selfish and cannot control himself.

8. People on the wrong side of history always want to solve their problems by violence and this solves nothing in fact creating MORE problems.
9. Violence creates problems and never solves anything.
10. When too many people get into this situation the nation is in very great trouble.
11. A brutal person is like an animal in the jungle of history without honor or integrity and no blessing and is a poor lover and a poor parent, poor employee, poor friends and very poor soldiers.
 - i. A good soldier under orders are GREAT killers and calm and scientific killers killing a lot of people because he stay calm under pressure.
 - ii. Brutal people are terrible soldiers and freeze on the trigger, jam automatic weapons, lose their range and spray bullets all over without hitting any enemies, get shot up themselves.
 - iii. Freedom was not won by ONE MAN charges of which there is always some in warfare and always will be but it is the calm cool collected smart killer who checks range and aims and systematically kills the enemy.
 - iv. Brutal People are good as Pimps, Assassins, Trigger Men, etc.
12. One of the things which doctrine does for all of us is to eliminate the brutality and retain the toughness.
 - i. You can eliminate the brutality and retain the toughness by being scientific in your application of violence working on combinations of punches and thinking while shooting estimating range and trajectory etc.
 - ii. You will win more fights with your brain than with brutal violence.

H. Despisers or haters of Divine Good

1. There is nothing worse than hating Divine Good.
2. We despise Human Good and must make a total distinction between Human Good and Divine Good.
3. The application of the plan and policy of Satan EVIL to life is by way of Human Good.
4. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil is total spiritual death and neither GOOD nor EVIL was ever needed in man's relationship with God.
5. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was forbidden in the garden and it represents the genius of Satan today.
6. Both evil and good are characteristics of spiritual death.
7. 3 Good's found in the bible:
 - i. Human Good which is application of Satan's policy of EVIL to life
 - ii. Moral Good which is adherence to the Laws of Divine Establishment
 - iii. Divine Good which is the production of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
8. It is the hatred of Divine Good which is in view here and those on the wrong side of history despise Divine Good.
9. Those on the wrong side of history despise any good related to God whether moral or divine good.

I. The essence of those on the wrong side of Human History is a combination of reaction to contemporary history plus reversionism resulting in the development of these characteristics.

1. The function in reversionism includes carnality lusts of the Old Sin Nature production of Human Good and development of these characteristics.

IV. Group Functions which destroy a nation: v4

A. Traitors

1. Every characteristic mentioned in v3 produces disloyalty, improbity, lack of integrity, dishonesty, unfaithfulness, or treason.
2. It develops and set in dishonorable attitude of soul.
3. This is a traitor or dishonorable attitude toward any authority under which you work or serve as in business, friendship, love to the nation.

4. These are all parts of being on the wrong side of history
5. Such a lack of loyalty and integrity causes one to move to the wrong side of history which produces traitors in many categories.
 - i. To the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ – reversionism and rejection of Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. To the local church – the right Pastor Teacher or whatever way you get your doctrine
 - a. This is lacking self discipline and acceptance of the authority of the Pastor Teacher therefore reaction to the Pastor Teacher therefore being traitorous.
 - b. It is a Mental Attitude
 - iii. Treason in the Angelic Conflict results in being a traitor to the Lord by rejecting the grace Plan of God and thereby coming under the satanic plan of EVIL.
 - a. This is the believer becoming a reversionist and under the influence of evil resulting in this believer being servants of Satan and a traitor to the Lord.
 - b. The majority of believers today are servants of Satan having EVIL principles in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - iv. To the nation – having no capacity for freedom, no loyalty or patriotism, sympathy for systems of evil and NO sympathy for law and authority.
 - a. Communism
 - b. Socialism
 - c. Welfare State functions
 - d. In addition there is failure to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and become a salt of the earth believer.
 - v. Treason in the business world – This is extremely common today and the company which pays your salary and provides your livelihood in life is the basis for your loyalty.
 - a. Honor and integrity demands that you be faithful and loyal to that organization.
 - b. Undermining the authority or policies makes you a traitor in this area and PUTS YOU ON THE WRONG SIDE OF Human History.
 - c. This is undermining policy, talking against authority but still accept a salary from them.
 - vi. Treason in human relationship – No capacity for love means disloyalty to friends, unfaithfulness in any field or category of love.

B. Principles of being a Traitor

1. There are many ways of being a traitor
2. Being a traitor in any of the areas makes you a traitor in ALL areas of being a traitor.
 - i. You simply move from where you are to where you go.
 - ii. If you are a traitor in school when you get a job you will be a traitor.
 - iii. This is why the system of authority in china broke down very quickly when the communists had children betraying their parents having been traitors in other areas first.
 - iv. This made it very easy for the Chinese courts to MURDER 20,000,000 Chinese in one (1) short year after the takeover of the communists.
3. The traitor is always on the wrong side of history
 - i. There are other things which make for traitorship
 - a. Arrogance
4. The traitor is disloyal, unfaithful, unreliable, unstable and undependable.
 - i. This is the sneaky type of person who cuts down the policy of a company, and criticizes the CEO etc.
 - ii. This person being disloyal to his company will be disloyal to all those he has relationship with.

5. Learn to spot the traitors and avoid getting involved with them
 6. Disassociation from traitors is essential or eventually you will join them.
 7. Loyalty indicates both stability and capacity for life.
 8. Loyalty and faithfulness is a characteristic belonging to integrity and honor.
 9. Loyalty is part of capacity for life and love.
 10. The antithesis of loyalty is treachery which is being a traitor and traitors are always on the wrong side of history.
- C. To fall forward, meaning to be rash, reckless, thoughtless, precipitous
1. This is being incogitant, inattentive, careless, improvident, negligent, extravagant, shiftless.
- D. To be puffed up, deluded or conceited different from pride but related.
1. There is a PRIDE where a person is so full of useless HOT AIR or BULLSHIT in the soul and constantly trying to explain himself always telling people how great you are.
 2. People who are totally thoughtless and self centered and totally madly in love with self therefore telling others always how great they are so they will also be madly in love with them having magnificent rapport.
 3. If you agree with his evaluation of self as being the greatest in every way then you are in his inner circle and if you disagree they will then destroy you.
 4. These people always resist authority and consider they could do a better job with that authority and never actually can handle the authority.
 5. They inhale arrogance and exhale the puffed up smoke of pride and bullshit about themselves.
 6. These people are so infatuated with self that they use all their ability and all their actions to relay this idea to everyone else.
 - i. Showing them by the way you work
 - ii. By what you think and do
 - iii. You are thus a propaganda machine for 1 constantly trying to put yourself over as the world's greatest person and constantly looking for people who agree.
 - iv. When you get agreement from others they are of course your friend for life.
 7. These people are on the wrong side of history CONSTANTLY EXPLAINING AND JUSTIFYING SELF TO OTHERS.
 8. This is the reversionist and when any person is in love with himself is always terribly insecure unless there are many people agreeing with their evaluation of self as being a great person.
 9. This person has no capacity for life and his constant verbalizing of his greatness is to try to get converts to his entourage of believers.
- E. Lovers of Pleasure more than lovers of God:
1. There is nothing wrong with loving pleasure but it is very wrong to love pleasure more than God.
 2. You are always vulnerable to historical disaster when you love pleasure more than God.
 3. When in this category HISTORY can destroy you and your reaction to history will put you into reversionism.
- F. Principle:
1. This is a perfect description of the reversionist who is inevitably on the wrong side of history
 2. it is normal to love pleasure but spiritually abnormal to lover pleasure more than God.
 3. This describes a believer who has LOST his Scale of Values.
 4. This believer on the wrong side of history as will all on the wrong side of history has WRONG priorities.
 - i. Beginning with attitude toward Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. Without Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and a consistent attitude of Positive Volition you cannot love God at all since you must have maximum

Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to know and then love God.

5. Lack of Bible Doctrine causes this one to become a lover of pleasure more than a lover of God.
 - i. You would be weird if you did not love pleasure and we all do if you have capacity for life.
 - ii. But loving pleasure more than God brings trouble.
6. Hedonism where pleasure is the chief good in life and one's chief duty is self gratification, causes the believer to become a slave to the details of life and puts you on the wrong side of history. Prov
 - i. Human or historical greatness
 - ii. Money
 - iii. Success
 - iv. Social and Sexual life
 - v. Friends
 - vi. recipients of maximum flattery
 - vii. Respect from evil
 - viii. Possession of material things
 - ix. Exercise of maximum authority without the ability to do so.
7. Historical fame and greatness is no substitute for the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict with its Super Grace blessing for the believer.

2Tim 3:2

v2: For reversionists in any nation under the 5 cycles of Divine Discipline or the end of any dispensation having intensive apostasy, will inevitably become lovers of self in Self Righteous Arrogance, lovers of money in Greed Lust willing to do anything for money, overtly Proud Braggarts, Involved in the Interlocking System of Arrogance with an inner arrogance of soul, Slanderous Blasphemers, Disobedient with reference to Parents, ungrateful, devoid of gratitude ones, anti establishment ones

2Tim3:3

v3: Ones with no capacity for love resulting in abnormal affection pseudo love of selfishness or abnormal sexual activity; implacable; unpacifiable, irreconcilable, malicious gossips; without self discipline lacking self control and mastery of self; savage, violent, brutal; despising haters of both Moral and Divine Good not loving the Plan of God,

2Tim 3:4

v4: Traitorous, dishonest, treasonous, disloyal, treacherous; rash, reckless, precipitous, thoughtless; having become conceited, puffed up with hot air bullshit deluded pride from self love, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God,

Lesson #53 Series # 469 2Tim 3:5

- I. The Wrong Side of History:
 - A. Latin Phrases:
 1. Quinon Proficit Deficit == He who does not advance goes backward
 - i. Even though a believer may be under Positive Volition at the present time if the spiritual Status Quo is not up to facing a disaster when it occurs he can react to that disaster and enter reversionism in an instant and thereby be on the wrong side of history.
 - ii. Therefore if you are not advancing in the Spiritual Life then you are going backward or "reverting" into a Status Quo like the unbeliever.
 2. Why do you laugh change but the name and the story be told of yourself.
 - B. Godliness:
 1. Paul in the prison epistles is writing in Status Quo Super Grace and in the pastoral epistles Paul again is writing but now in Ultra Super Grace Status Quo.
 2. Definition:
- II. Opposition from the WRONG side of history 2Tim 3:5-12
 - A. The Apostles or Evangelists of EVIL v5-7
 1. There are in every generation apostles or evangelists of evil and they are Satan's most effective recruiters in the Human Race.
 - B. Godliness:
 1. Paul in the prison epistles is writing in Status Quo Super Grace and in the pastoral epistles Paul again is writing but now in Ultra Super Grace Status Quo.
 2. Definition:

- i. (gr) Eusebia == duty toward God == the balance of residence of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is characteristic of experiential sanctification, Super Grace.
 - ii. Laws of Divine Establishment and human authority are needed for the function of godliness **1Tim 2:2**
 3. There must be historically certain circumstances whereby Positive Volition can express itself in the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - i. This is what we have now and at various periods of history such as in the time of the Antoine Caesars and the Victorian era of Britain
 - ii. Laws of Divine Establishment and authority are essential for the option of expression of Positive Volition toward God, Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and Bible Doctrine
 - iii. Because of these things there is human freedom and because of freedom the believer can assemble in a local church under a Pastor Teacher and grow in the Spiritual Life.
 4. Godliness is related to knowledge of Bible Doctrine **Tit 1:1**
 - i. Epignosis or full knowledge of Bible Doctrine is related to the concept of godliness or Super Grace.
 5. Therefore Godliness demands discipline **1Tim 4:7**
 - i. Review Self Discipline related to spiritual growth through the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception eventuating in “godliness” or Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 6. Godliness is profitable for both time and eternity
 - i. Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace blessings and Surpassing Grace blessings **1Tim 4:8**
 7. The basis for godliness is the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at the 1st advent where he is now seated at the right hand of God the Father. **1Tim 3:16**
 8. Godliness is distorted by reversionists under the influence of evil. **1Tim 6:3-5, 2Tim 3:5**
 - i. This is where we see Pseudo Super Grace which is a form of Blind Arrogance where pride, reversionism and evil all meet.
 9. The great gain of true godliness **1Tim 6:6** is the Super Grace blessings in time including Dying grace blessings and surpassing grace for eternity.
 10. Godliness is attained under the principle of Living or Logistical Grace 2Pet 1:3
 11. Godliness is declared to be a Christian virtue 2Pet 1:6-7, 3:11 and 2nd to the highest virtue.
 12. Godliness always when used by Paul suggests the Status Quo of the believer as being Super Grace and at times Ultra Super Grace.
- C. Principle:
 1. This passage shows us that this eternal pseudo godliness is Satan’s copy of Super Grace and his attempt to distort godliness by reversionism and evil.
 - i. He has counterfeited everything possible in the Plan of God and this is one of those things including temporal blessings.
 - ii. This does explain some situations of prosperity and power in this life but NOT all of them.
 2. This is the means by which those under the satanic command are able to succeed in evangelism of evil.
 3. Satan has a pseudo Super Grace blessing package in which he emphasizes not the spiritual nor association nor historical nor dying blessings but ONLY temporal blessings.
 - i. Rewards, power and influence for those who serve him and carry out his policy of evil.

4. To communicate the plan, policy and rewards of Satan he must have a few apostles and numerous evangelists of evil who are reversionistic believers or unbelievers.
5. To approach the believer successfully they adhere to EXTERNAL forms of godliness in order to set up a rapport with believers under Positive Volition.
 - i. This is what occurred in the communist take over of China
 - ii. The United States of America had a large number of missionaries and they admitted that they were duped by the communists but it was because of their limitations in understanding of Bible Doctrine.
 - iii. Therefore they spent a great deal of time trying to improve the Chinese villages and cities where they were stationed in their missionary activity and consequently when the Chinese communists came in they were surprised to see the communists destroy all the whore houses and that the prostitutes disappear and the opium dens closed and any thing which might be classified as den's of iniquity were all shut down.
 - iv. The missionaries were trying to do just this thing for about 100 years instead of what they should have been doing and because of this the missionaries got on the radio and urged their converts to get behind the communists because they were doing great things for the people.
 - v. Unfortunately behind this came the regular regime with its torture and enslavement and murders and people's court and these missionaries then had a great shock.
 - vi. This is the function of the evangelists of evil who move in to an area under the form of "godliness" and then distract and subvert the believer with Positive Volition.
 - vii. These are some of the nicest moral clean cut people and they will get you every time.

D. Truth about these people:

1. They are believers on the wrong side of history, and are snared by rapport with the evangelists of evil
 - i. This is the external form of godliness, piety or morality but this is simply a hypocritical facade for EVIL or the doctrine of Demons.
2. The evangelists of evil offer great rewards from the ruler of this world by advancing the cause of Good and Evil, the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
 - i. Evil is his policy, genius and plan and Human Good is the application of that plan to experience.
 - ii. These rewards are forthcoming for Satan does have limited ability but greater than any human to provide and duplicate and counterfeit certain areas of Super Grace blessings.
 - iii. Faust is a superficial presentation of this concept
3. the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil is the satanic plan and includes morality as seen in operation fig leaves the first example of pseudo godliness.
4. The power of true godliness or Super Grace is maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
5. Satan's system of evil or application of this system as Human Good inevitably removes or rejects or squeezes out the application of Bible Doctrine.

E. The believer who follows these evangelists of evil will eventually renounce Bible Doctrine and become influence by evil and involved in producing Human Good.

1. Satan does not desire to lead you down the path of some immorality or some area which society rejects such as becoming a dope addict or drunk or prostitute.
 - i. Some believers go this route but his objective is to make you a SWEET, MORAL, UPRIGHT CITIZEN of your community filled with brotherly love and human

kindness and have your riding the bandwagon for every bleeding heart Human Good objective.

- ii. Under the influence of evil and producing Human Good you SQUEEZE out that which is important Bible Doctrine.
2. Our inner power comes from the balance of residence of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
3. Believers under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace will always AVOID these evangelists of evil.

III. Doctrine of Separation:

- A. These evangelists of evil often use this concept to advocate that the believer separate from worldliness and they don't know what either worldliness or separation is.
- B. Principle of separation **2Tim 2:3-4**
 1. Pleasing our commanding officer and as part of the Royal Family of God we are soldiers of Christ and are in full time Christian service.
 2. In full time Christian service there are certain traps and snares and hazards such as:
 - i. For any military man to think as a civilian is a SNARE
 - ii. As members of the Royal Family of God means we must think like Royal Family of God and this means we can no longer think like a civilian here an unbeliever or ruler of this world.
 3. Separation or lack of separation is based on the content of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of your Soul.
 4. The ideas which you entertain can cause you to compromise the Lord while other ideas will separate you as unto the Lord to please him your commanding officer.
- C. Military analogy
 1. Being in the military represents the believer under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine on a consistent basis.
 2. Civilian life is comparable to the believer under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine and under the influence of evil.
 3. The consistent self discipline of the believer under Positive Volition causes him to constantly regulate his life with rebound, maintaining Filling of God the Holy Spirit and making constant decisions to expose self to Bible Doctrine teaching of his right Pastor Teacher.
 4. By following the colors to the high ground of Super Grace and on to Ultra Super Grace the believer under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine pleases his commanding officer, the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 5. The overall principle of separation is in effect a positive attitude toward Bible Doctrine which results in having your thinking and priorities straight in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Right Lobe.
- D. Definition:
 1. Separation is the consistent function of self discipline and Positive Volition in the daily intake of Bible Doctrine resulting in clear thinking and having the right priorities.
 2. Separation then is the action or function of always choosing for the Lord and his policy rather than choosing for and associating with Satan and his policy.
 3. All true separation is based on maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul therefore godliness or Super Grace.
 4. The action of separation is based on the thinking and application of Bible Doctrine to experience.
 - i. This is the Royal Priest constructing the altar of the soul.
- E. Therefore when the bible speaks of separation in a basic sense it is always FIRST separation from reversionism .

1. Separation is an attitude of mind and thinking Divine Viewpoint and utilizing the Divine Viewpoint in your life to the place where you can actually KNOW with whom or what to associate or NOT to associate.
 - i. Apostasy is a 2 sided coin, one side being reversionism the other side Evil.
 - ii. If you are in reversionism as a believer you cannot separate from anything being part of the satanic crowd.
 - iii. If you are a believer under Positive Volition and advancing in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you generally are separated by virtue of application of the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 2. The basic issue in separation is NOT carnality and there is no passage indicating that the Old Sin Nature is cut out in life.
 - i. Carnality is not the major issue but it is REVERSIONISM, **2Tim 3:5**
 3. What rejects Bible Doctrine is where separation begins since the #1 priority for the believer MUST be Bible Doctrine and everything in opposition to that rejects Bible Doctrine and therefore the basic separation concept is separation from reversionism.
- F. As an application of Separation principle other believers become involved:
1. Separation from certain carnal believers whose carnality will inevitably lead to reversionism.
 - i. Incest is a perfect illustration and this is why the believer in 1Cor 5:10-11 is because of his incestuous sex with his mother.
 - ii. This is carnality but is INCEST carnality but all of those associated with him thought it was a good idea and there was a little incest crowd rising up in Corinth.
 - iii. Obviously if you hook up with these people and like the idea this is a carnality where confusion spreads and Bible Doctrine is choked out therefore reversionism begins.
 - iv. You can work your way out of anything with Bible Doctrine and if it does not work out then DEATH will part you from it.
 - v. There are some areas of carnality where Bible Doctrine gets choked out and Incest is one of these.
 2. All believers are carnal in one way or another and we don't separate from each other or all believers since there would be no one left to associate with. **1John 1:8+10**
 - i. You don't separate from carnal believers since this is GOOFY and where many people get all mixed up and where evangelists as Pastor Teachers in a local church are not effective.
 3. Separation is a Mental Attitude and related to Bible Doctrine and using this you separate from anything which will distract you from Bible Doctrine.
 4. Separation from reversionistic believers **2Thes 3:6, 14**
 - i. This believer has rejected Bible Doctrine and has a nice personality and you like him and have rapport with him but he rejects Bible Doctrine and is sweet, loving, kind, pleasant but does not want anything to do with Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. We are by this passage to separate from every believer who leads an UNDISCIPLINED LIFE He rejects Bible Doctrine and does not engage in the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 5. Separation from religious reversionism **Heb 13:13**
 - i. We are to separate from denominations and independent organizations which are not the local church and do not comply with the principles of the local church.
 - ii. These are often traditionally accepted and part of the life of a nation and you are to go outside the camp or the local church
 - iii. The independent fundamentalist organizations and holy rollers as examples who are OUTSIDE the correct functions of the local church
 6. Separation from emotional reversionism

- i. This includes EMOTIONAL Holy rollers, tongues groups, do good liberals, legalists, victorious life groups, and all other reversionistic believers who suffer from Emotional Revolt of the Soul **Rom 16:17-18**
 - ii. Doctrine which we have learned is the basis for deciding separation from others or other groups.
 - iii. The problem with these Emotional Revolt of the Soul is found in their rejection of Bible Doctrine **2Cor 6:11-12** where emotion dominates their soul in reversionism and they phase out Bible Doctrine.
7. There is also a principle of separation from unbelievers
- i. The believer is in this world but not OF the world and is God's ambassador to the world.
 - ii. The Royal Family of God in time lives with and among the unbelievers and are not separated from them.
 - iii. The principle is that the Royal Family of God only separates from the unbeliever where Bible Doctrine is compromised or where conformity means reversionism **1Cor 6:14, Rom 12:2, 1John 2:15-17**
 - iv. The ultimate key to separation is based on Bible Doctrine and what opposes it.
 - v. The world includes a large number of satanic systems and thoughts and these we MUST reject and never fall for these things.
 - a. Loving the world includes things which oppose or reject Laws of Divine Establishment in any way.
 - b. Anti military, pro United nations, pro communists, Anti Rhodesia or South Africa,
 - c. This is impossible to comply with until we have a maximum of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - d. Loving the world means loving or becoming involved in any policy of Satan which is operative in history.
 - e. Socialism, Welfare state functions, communism, islam, religion in any form.
 - f. If you don't have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul then you will not understand what the WORLD includes then you cannot understand and interpret contemporary history and sooner or later you will react to it and enter reversionism and this will destroy you.
 - g. YOU Must learn to interpret history from the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul or you will react to history and this will take you into reversionism.
 - h. THIS IS THE WRONG SIDE OF HISTORY.
 - i. Social action, social action GETTING involved are the things we must avoid.
 - j. When you love the things of the world the "LOVE OF THE FATHER" is not in you and the love of the father is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - k. The more Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the greater becomes the love of God the Father since the only way to know God the Father is through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - l. Lusts of the flesh; eyes; pride of life seen in Russian, Chinese and Cuban communists and the state department of the United States of America or any country trying to solve its problems by socialism or welfare state function;

- m. We need simple laws if you murder you should be killed immediately after convicted without regard to what condition you were in mentally since you have to be mentally ill to kill someone who is about to wreck their own life.
 - n. When someone violated your privacy or defaces your property or takes a life this is when the law should come into effect, NOT when you dump hot coffee on yourself and ask for 1,000,000 dollars in settlement.
 - o. Laws should be strong but today they are weak and if congress rescinded every law done since the Taft-Hartley law and do nothing for 10 years this country would be like paradise.
 - p. The things of the world is satanic and the world is passing away meaning EVERY DAY WHICH GOES BY SATAN HAS LOST ANOTHER DAY TO TURN IT AROUND but being a genius he will try again tomorrow and the next day and the next.
 - q. Satan is constantly trying to turn this around but is constantly failing.
 - r. The believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and goes on to Ultra Super Grace and into dying grace into surpassing grace blessing and reward FOREVER.
 - vi. The Believer DOES NOT MARRY AN UNBELIEVER.
 - vii. Certain business partnerships with an unbeliever are prohibited in partnerships but NOT IN CORPORATIONS.
 - viii. Certain social organizations or brotherhoods if they keep you from Bible Doctrine must be separated from Bible Doctrine.
 - ix. When conformity leads to reversionism the believer must separate from the functions which lead to distraction from the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
8. Therefore separation from religion is commanded **2Cor 6:15-17**
- i. Let the Lord bless you as a believer and don't try to get blessing from satanic commendations of religion.
9. Separation related to social Life:
- i. From the fast crowd **1Pet 4:3-4**
 - a. Lusts, drunkenness, phallic involvement.
 - b. You will reach a point when the believer under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine must apply Bible Doctrine and separate self from this crowd.
 - c. These people react first with astonishment then antagonism and express hostility through slander and maligning.
 - d. These people feed on attractive young girls and they follow actors, singers, athletes, and they wind up as luses or tramps or both.
 - ii. From a superficial social life or the apostate fun crowd **Jer 15:16-17**
 - a. This is separation from the fun party crowd which have false Scale of Values and superficial and are definitely not pro Bible Doctrine.
 - b. They emphasize the details of life and stimulate hedonism and mediocrity and borrow short term fun for long term payment of misery.
 - iii. From violence and criminal activity **Prov 1:10-19**
 - a. This is our current gang function where the children younger and younger enter gangs and work for criminal organizations for robbery and violence.
 - b. They have no Scale of Values, capacity for life nor respect for freedom, privacy, property or authority and the only things which they respect is VIOLENCE GREATER THAN THEY ARE WILLING TO PERPETRATE DIRECTED AGAINST THEM AND WHICH MUST BE USED TO CURTAIL THEIR ACTIVITIES.

- c. Metabolized Bible Doctrine is what warns the believer to separate from criminals and this believer sees the trap of crime and therefore stays out of it.
- d. This applies to all crime and involvement with drug and alcohol abuse as well.
- e. Sooner or later those who pick up the SWORD of crime perish by the SWORD of justice in capital punishment.

2Tim 3:5

v5: religious, having from the past and continuing to hold to the external mold or form of Piety or Pseudo Godliness although they have denied, disregarded, renounced or repudiated the inner inherent power of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of that same experiential sanctification of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace, also be turning yourself away or avoid these reversionistic evangelists of evil.

Lesson #54 Series # 469 2Tim 3:6

- I. The Wrong Side of History Continued:
 - A. Those believers not capable through Bible Doctrine of interpreting contemporary history in light of the Angelic Conflict will sooner or later react to some historical event or disaster and will therefore enter reversionism.
 - 1. May factors of reversionism are related to the believer not being able to cope with historical reality.
 - 2. Historical Facts can only be understood in light of Bible Doctrine and the impact and question of this passage is ARE YOU ON THE RIGHT SIDE OF HISTORY?
 - B. We have faced the disasters of elections and that we have betrayed millions of people to communism than any other, and the people of this nation think more like the typical communist in Russia than does the communist in Russia
 - 1. They look for some system of capitalism to bail out their situation constantly while we have the best form of capitalism since Rome and we are destroying it.
 - 2. Never in the history of any nation going into decline have we had so many people running the government and working in all areas of government administration who are totally divorced from reality.
 - 3. We have for a long time lost any concept of our national destiny as it relates to other nations and above all as it relates to God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit.
 - C. Review the passage
 - 1. It begins with a concept of Cognizance and this is the most important thing in the Plan of God and the only reason we are here as believers in the Church Age.
 - 2. The believer on the wrong side of history reacts to history and enters reversionism and there are 18 characteristics of such believers.
- II. Historical Disaster is designed by God to separate the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or moving toward it with Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine from the believer who is negative toward Bible Doctrine or in reversionism and overtaken by evil.
 - A. When the believer is overtaken by historical disaster and has neglected or rejected Bible Doctrine he then reacts to the situation and his reaction becomes his means of entering reversionism.
 - 1. This would not be possible were it not for the fact that the rule of this world, Satan, has in the Human Race a large cadre of those in reversionism who are called apostles or evangelists of evil to recruit believers with Negative Volition into reversionism and the Cosmic Dynaspheres.
- III. Reversionistic Evangelists of Evil and their infiltration of the Royal Family of God souls.
 - A. The believer who neglects or rejects Bible Doctrine and who is overtaken by historical disaster and reacts to it and enters reversionism are on the wrong side of history.
 - B. Silly Women:

1. With regard to Ishah in the garden the serpent convinced her that there was nothing wrong with the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and it would make her as smart as God was knowing Good and Evil.
 2. The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil is Spiritual Death and cognizance of Human Good and evil which is satanic policy is exactly Spiritual Death.
 3. Up to this point the woman did not have anything in her soul but a minor dissatisfaction and when this was linked with the temptation of arrogance to be as smart as God and knowing what God knows ie. Good and Evil was enough to turn her away from God.
 4. Gen 3, 2Tim 3:6 the woman is used to illustrate succumbing to false doctrine and false concepts (Although Men also do) and it is from Gen 3 we get many phrases used here to illustrate “silly women” which refers to any MALE or FEMALE believer in some stage of reversionism.
 5. Satanic Doctrine is Called EVIL and they succeed as evangelists of evil and are highly successful with concepts of Brotherly Love, Welfare of others, appeals to emotion related to altruism, and this lures many many believers into the system of bleeding heart liberalism for the improvement of the Devil’s World.
 - i. Bleeding Heart Activity is manifest overtly at Christmas more than any other time and this is the season for many to get hooked on these things.
 6. These people are perfect at worming their way into affections of those who are under Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine and even though you are aware of what they are doing you succumb anyway.
 - i. These are the kind of people with whom you would have instant rapport even knowing what they stand for.
 7. They infiltrate areas where the word of God is accepted and even where Bible Doctrine is being taught and they are successful in turning people away from it.
 8. In the Angelic Conflict the SOUL of the believer is the battleground for the Angelic Conflict.
- C. The local church did not meet in public buildings for the first 300 years of the Church Age and they met in homes or caves when persecuted. Acts 5:42, Rom 16:45, 1Cor 16:19, Philemon 2
1. There were public buildings for the local church until the Roman Church became that which it is a denomination but only local churches in homes.
 2. As long as there were local churches there never was a customary meeting in public buildings and the first public meetings were with the Roman catholic church and the Greek Orthodox Church also began this way into denominations.
 3. Denominations are a sign of failure to understand what the word of God teaches for spiritual growth which is the local church whether it meets in a building or home, public or private, inside or outside or wherever it meets it has a congregation made up of BELIEVERS.
 4. The local church is not a place for evangelism which is to be conducted OUTSIDE of the local church by individual members of the Royal Family of God and those who have the spiritual gift of evangelism.
 5. The local church should not however neglect the unbeliever who wanders into the local church by any means and should express the gospel but the local church is NOT the place for evangelism.
 6. The impact of the local church has been lost in our time since many local churches are pastored by evangelists and the real impact of the local church is in the fact that the congregation is made up primarily of those believers under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and interested in Bible Doctrine.
 7. This requires a group to be taught by a Pastor Teacher 2 or 3 at least and some administration by deacons and the final authority is with the Pastor Teacher who is responsible for TEACHING Bible Doctrine to the congregation and setting administrative policy based on his teaching.

- i. When the believer leaves his congregation and goes to another he must never criticize the new Pastor Teacher and never try to correct his teaching but if they are dissatisfied they must leave without any disrupting.
 - ii. God will provide incredible discipline for the one who tries to disrupt the authority of a Pastor Teacher since the Pastor Teacher is directly responsible to God and not the people.
 8. The key is to simply STAY with the ministry of your right Pastor Teacher and avoid all these problems.
- D. When the Pastor Teacher fails to communicate Bible Doctrine or the congregation fails to respond they become weak spiritually
 1. One of their big problems is MONEY and they have to go outside biblical principles to raise money and they ask and beg for money for the local church functions.
 2. No congregation should ever ask anyone for money and the only thing that should be done is to give opportunity to give as a part of worship.
 3. When this is done correctly without making money an issue then if the money is not there the congregation just fades out and the local church closes.
 4. In order to get people in to get more money they start other things aside from teaching Bible Doctrine and they set up "PROGRAMS" for youth and adults and eventually they must have a gym and then a recreation building etc etc, and by this time Bible Doctrine disappears and there comes a collection of Pastor Teachers all with separate designations and they have to join with other churches to gain strength and this is how denominations originally began.
 5. Then there is a reaction to this system and how we have gotten campus crusade, the YMCA and others where in their reaction they set up a system without the Pastor Teacher and NO board of Deacons and no academic discipline based on teaching of Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Their system is based on what they can DO for God and it may include evangelism or other things worthy or unworthy but all is based on works for God.
 6. By this means the whole concept of the local church disappears as it did in the middle ages and there eventually occurred signs of awakening as with the valdencians, in the Netherlands, and the Pyrenees etc.
 - i. Today this has occurred today with the Tongues movement and "grace" churches, and others.
 7. Sooner or later these evangelists succeed in distracting believers from Bible Doctrine and pushing them into reversionism.
- E. Satan eventually converts many believers who reject Bible Doctrine
 1. The ones who do the capturing are the evangelists of evil for Satan.
 2. The believer taken captive are "silly women".
- F. The Little or Silly Woman
 1. This refers to a woman whose brain has shrunk to the size of a PEA and whose emotion has expanded to a basketball size.
 2. She is all emotion and NO sense and being a responder she is in great trouble.
 3. In relationship between the man and woman the MAN is always to blame since the woman is a responder.
 4. When a woman is ruined it is because a MAN has led her that way having superficial rapport with her.
 5. In reality while the woman has free will and in spite of her exaggerated opinion of self given by woman's lib females the woman is NOT TO BLAME, since ultimately the man makes the decisions.
 6. The man makes the decision to marry some female and even if trapped he still made the decision and the woman makes a decision as a responder but inevitably it is the man's fault when there is a woman at fault.

7. A Man can ruin another man in business and a man can ruin a woman in a romantic relationship and in these situations the MAN must take responsibility.
8. First all women have free will and are natural responders but are also very crafty, clever, wise and in some cases very honorable and some cases dishonorable and in the majority of cases very stupid.
9. Wise women have great capacity for love and ability to recognize a relationship for what it is and never blame the man for their own decision and these are very rare and most often the result of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
10. There are those who are simply trying to make it based on the superficialities of life and when these disappear it never occurs to them that their real being is in the soul.
11. Silly women have 2 things which make the incredibly silly:
 - i. The Worst arrogance the world has ever seen
 - ii. Arrogance which is so often criticized in the man was FIRST IN THE WOMAN THE FIRST INCIDENT OF ARROGANCE IN THE HUMAN RACE.
 - iii. This is the woman that is so filled with their self importance and where we often get female pastors.
 - iv. Women are never given the gift of Pastor Teacher and cannot ever handle it.
 - v. Since they have learned Bible Doctrine from some pastor and they go out and tell others how smart they are constantly and if you don't recognize how good these women are they pout and fluctuate from arrogance to self pity pouting.
 - vi. When the woman is in her arrogant stage you cannot bear to be around her and when under self pity pouting you cannot stand to be around her.
 - vii. This woman may have great intelligence and perspicacity and expresses her arrogance through this means.
 - viii. They man have great beauty and express arrogance that way or through a great personality.
 - ix. These always overshadow her volition which is submerged in the emphasis of some other aspect of her person, beauty, brains, or personality or some combination of these.
 - x. Her volition is so submerged that she has poor judgment about men, investing, business, almost everything in life except her specialty, beauty, brains or personality.
 - xi. When she is neglected she is very unhappy and forces them into pouting and this submerges their volition and this means judgment is impaired and they lack Bible Doctrine for making decisions and use their neglected status, or arrogance for decisions.
 - xii. These women are therefore VULNERABLE to some male or who appeals to and takes them away from being neglected pouting or arrogance.
 - a. Some male tells the woman how good she is or gives her so much attention she does not have time to pout or is not alone enough to pout.
 - b. When a male does both of these together her judgment is further destroyed.
 - c. Her judgment was first destroyed by arrogance or pouting and also by someone appealing to either one.
 - xiii. If a man appeals to an arrogant woman this blinds her volition which is blinded by arrogance in the first place.
 - xiv. If a man appeals to a woman by giving her attention to alleviate her pouting this removes her pouting but this makes her so occupied with the one who soothed her that her volition is not correct with regard to that person.
12. There are literal silly women which we do not have here and the phrase "silly women" does not apply here to ONLY women but is used in a spiritual sense for any believer

whose volition is not working clearly or properly on the basis of good judgment from Metabolized Bible Doctrine.

- i. In other words you are a potential “silly woman” if you neglect Bible Doctrine.
- ii. If you neglect Bible Doctrine you are vulnerable to any system of evil or Human Good or any of the satanic policies involved in Evil.
- iii. This is therefore an EXCELLENT analogy and this believer is vulnerable to ANY system of false Bible Doctrine and how many believers are recruited into a system for whitewashing the world of Satan.
- iv. Maybe you are pouting because of being neglected by your local church and when someone comes along and gives you attention from some group which is going to change everything then you are vulnerable or they appeal to your desire to change the world and you join their crusade in arrogance.

13. Vulnerability in this connection is FAILURE TO INTERPRET CONTEMPORARY HISTORY.

- i. These are those believers on the wrong side of history who are miserable, disoriented to reality and under great Divine Discipline.
- ii. Any favors he gets is from Satan and when Satan provides gifts he expects payment reciprocally in the form of efforts and this **believer** is vulnerable to this whole package.
- iii. The only thing which protects all of us from becoming “silly women” is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
- iv. Silly women are reversionistic believers who are in 1 or more stages of reversionism and are passed Blackout of the Soul and now have EVIL in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which has replaced whatever Bible Doctrine they had learned.
- v. With evil in the soul they suffer from Blackout of the Soul.
- vi. The “Silly Woman” is one without judgment and vulnerable to many things in life which no woman should be vulnerable to and is therefore a perfect description for any believer who is under Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine which of course leads to being on the wrong side of history.
- vii. There never was a silly woman who ever had any happiness and a few moments of happiness may come her way but she will have a life of misery.
- viii. She has free will and is a responder and never responds to the right thing and never uses her free will properly and makes bad decisions because she has bad judgment.
- ix. Bad judgment is equivalent to lack of Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and without Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you make constant and consistent decisions which pull you further from the Lord and the objective of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Ultra Super Grace and Dying Grace.

14. When judgment is bad you make mistakes in life and for the believer here called a “silly woman” who is under reversionism he also accumulates sins which would not be accumulated if there was consistent spiritual growth.

- i. There are Growing Sins where believers can be carnal or spiritual whether they are infant, adolescent or mature.
- ii. We never get away from sin but there is always instant recovery from keeping short accounts and using rebound immediately.
- iii. However in the reversionistic believer there is accumulation of reversionism in it’s 8 stages with its Divine Discipline as warning, intensive and dying Divine Discipline, and also there is accumulation of carnality without use of rebound.

G. Laden with Sins is Accumulation of carnality in reversionism without use of rebound.

1. We all commit sins but as believers we should be using rebound procedures to recover from then BUT, in reversionism where there is lack of use of rebound there is a piling up and overloading of sins in the believer.
 2. When judgment is impaired and rebound is neglected as a result, then the volition is used to get into massive areas of sin that ADD to the Divine Discipline of reversionism.
 3. Reversionism carries Divine Discipline in varying intensities and when carnality is added to this with its requisite Divine Discipline the misery is intensified but added also to this is Self Induced Misery which makes this believer's life absolutely and totally miserable.
 4. The believer who neglects Bible Doctrine and rebound intensifies the carnality and the Divine Discipline which accompanies the carnality
 5. Instead of becoming alert to adverse circumstances and contemporary history he is totally blind to history and therefore history always destroys him.
 6. One historical disaster and this person is totally destroyed and totally vulnerable to every failure in life.
- H. Review the structure of the Old Sin Nature:
1. Sins motivated from the Old Sin Nature include
 - i. Mental which always accompany reversionism
 - ii. Verbal to destroy others
 - iii. Overt sins even including murder.
 2. When this is put together with reversionism the JUDGMENT of this individual is clouded and obscured so that the individual involved in this is unable to break out of it.
 - i. They have used their volition incorrectly for so long they can no longer see the means of breaking out of this pattern.
 - ii. After the improper use of volition for a prolonged period of time the person has no judgment and therefore cannot break out of the destructive system.
 - iii. Society has set us systems to break out of these patterns WHICH DO NOT WORK and medicine has come up with the only therapy outside of Bible Doctrine which takes a person and isolates him from society since he cannot be in society having destroyed his own volition.
 - iv. Then through the various medical therapies in isolation to get this person back to normal
 - v. The ONLY other way to break out is to use your own volition to break out and this is a perfect analogy to a person in reversionism.
 - vi. The reversionist has tried everything imaginable and has destroyed his volition and sometimes this is so bad he becomes psychotic and neurotic and has to be put away by medicine to restore him to the place where he can use his volition again.
 - vii. The reversionist takes a LONG time using his own volition to break out of reversionism with a minimum of 2 years like Paul and Timothy and these were GREAT people.
 - viii. Breaking out is a difficult thing and it takes a great effort to do so since there are many excuses to get back into this area of failure.
 - ix. These are "SILLY WOMEN" and there are very few people who can decide to consistently come to bible class and focus on Bible Doctrine above all else.
 3. It is only the job of the individual believer to decide if this applies to his situation.
 - i. If as a believer you decide you are in a situation where you think this applies to you then YOU must make the decision constantly and consistently to focus on Bible Doctrine and make Bible Doctrine your way of life.
 - ii. Repentance from reversionism is a series of decisions day in and day out.
- I. If any thing can irritate both men and women it is to think someone is "leading them around".
1. Women like to call themselves "free spirits" or today "Liberated Women" and men always say they will "DO it my way".

2. Women are not constructed to be free spirits and no matter how beautiful they are there never was one who was designed to be a free spirit.
3. A Woman cannot be a responder and be a free spirit and God gave to the woman VOLITION but for a different reason and a woman has to use her volition more than a man to watch to what she responds.
4. This is what is so GREAT about a woman getting her right man since then he can do this for her and tell her who to see and not see.
5. A woman on her own is a responder and as such she cannot be a free spirit and this is what is so ludicrous about the women's lib movement which is simply another satanic system of control and anti god.
6. The best thing which can ever happen to a woman is to get with Bible Doctrine and use this as her judgment basis or get her right man and use him as her judgment or both.
7. The problem comes when a woman is under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and her husband is not and therefore she now has 2 sets of judgments and a smart woman can handle this by realizing that:
 - i. Where the prerogative of the right man exists she follows implicitly his orders and instructions
 - ii. Where Bible Doctrine and the Will of God for her life exists she follows that.
8. None of us like to think we are being led around especially men.
9. Women are tougher than men in the soul while men are physically tougher than women.
10. God protects the woman in her soul because she is basically insensitive while the man is highly sensitive in his soul.
 - i. When a woman is unfaithful to a man the man is so hypersensitive about this he is incapable of good sex.
 - ii. A woman however can know of a man's unfaithfulness and still respond to him beautifully and this is a toughness of soul.
11. God protected the responder with a toughness of soul greater than that of the initiator who is more sensitive of soul than the responder.
12. The woman must use her volition to GUARD the sensitivity of her Right Man's soul and her judgment says to her that she must stay away from men who would seduce her so that she will not destroy the sensitivity of her right man's soul.
13. She therefore must use her volition to make decisions in this regard.
14. The man can be unfaithful to a woman and she still loves him and still will respond to him although not immediately but she does because being a responder she responds to her right man and because she has a toughness of soul that the man does not have..
15. When this toughness of soul is distorted and you get something like "women's Lib" then there is great trouble with women acting like a man.
 - i. This is a distorter of the responder of the woman and tramples the sensitivity of the man in every way.
 - ii. Even the way a woman dresses and looks can trample the sensitivity of a man.
16. It is important for men to understand women and vice versa.
17. The woman wants to choose to whom she is going to respond and does not like others telling her to whom she is going to be responding.
18. Men may accuse a woman of flirting (which she may do on occasion) but this is very irritating to her when she is not since all of her body and soul response is toward the man who is accusing her and therefore she resents it totally.
 - i. This is the man saying "this guy is leading you around by the nose" and she gets upset because she thinks "NO you are the only one allowed to lead me around by the nose".
19. IN effect everyone has a period of resentment when someone implies or suggests that someone is leading them around by the nose contrary to their volition.
20. This means that you feel that your volition is NOT involved and in fact it is not.

- J. Satan has varied systems of Evil Evangelism something to lure everyone away from Bible Doctrine.
 - 1. There are many categories of lusts and some lust is for every person and the satanic evangelism is toward whatever LUST weakness appeals to you.
- K. This all adds up to the fact that any time historical disaster overtakes a believer he is totally destroyed.

2Tim 3:6

v6: For out of or among these apostles of apostasy or evangelists of evil are those which worm or creep or insinuate themselves into those same houses, Local Churches, in order to sell satanic doctrines of evil, and take captive or captivate silly women or reversionistic believers in the systems of Evil and False doctrine, because they have been piled up, burdened, overloaded and overwhelmed with sins from poor judgment and as a result saturated with misery from Divine Discipline and Self Induced Misery and led on or carried away by evil as prisoners of reversionism and by various kinds or categories of Lusts.

Lesson #55 Series # 469 2Tim 3:6

- I. Silly Women Continued
 - A. Those who are reversionists or vulnerable to it and to false teaching and apostasy are Always Learning but never being able to come to the knowledge of TRUTH.
 - B. When we started out in life everything we learn we had to learn from someone else.
 - 1. It is failure to recognize this that starts a course of great arrogance and gives people that proud view of self that somehow by their own ingenuity learned anything.
 - 2. People often think they can learn from themselves but they must learn from others.
 - 3. The principle is that there is always someone in this world who is stronger, better looking and smarter than you are.
 - 4. We learn always from someone who knows already.
 - C. To get on the wrong side of history the reversionists learn the unknown parts of EVIL but never the TRUTH of Bible Doctrine.
 - 1. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God you are minus Bible Doctrine and also minus some concepts of evil needed to understand reversionism.
 - 2. There is a great deal of evil to learn it being Satan's policy for this world therefore the evangelists of evil are working on us constantly with their information.
 - 3. The interesting thing about evil is that those who are drifting toward and entering reversionism are always learning EVIL but never able to come to a knowledge of TRUTH by this means.
 - 4. Absolute Truth is Bible Doctrine from scripture which is totally antagonistic to EVIL.
 - 5. This EVIL then enters into the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and forces out all the truth of Bible Doctrine.
 - 6. First you KNOW EVIL and then by knowing evil you understand how to perform Human Good
 - 7. Being filled with evil you immediately become Satan's servant as a BELIEVER and you need not be demon possessed and the only ones who need to be demon possessed are those who are going to perform unusual "supernatural" activities for Satan like pseudo healing and speaking foreign languages etc.
 - 8. The only humans who can be demon possessed are unbelievers since the believer is protected by the Indwelling of God the Holy Spirit.
 - 9. The believer makes an excellent servant of Satan since it only takes saturated EVIL in the soul influencing the believer and as a result they CANNOT learn Bible Doctrine because they do not have any Frame of Reference and constantly without the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and not being exposed to Bible Doctrine there is no way for them to learn Bible Doctrine as the truth.

10. In any of the 8 stages of reversionism there is no learning of Bible Doctrine and recovery must begin with rebound and then many many painful exposures to Bible Doctrine to get out of reversionism
 11. In reversionism as a “silly woman” believer there is inability to understand anything from the bible.
- D. There are stages by which Bible Doctrine is taken from scripture and transferred to your soul.
1. First it must go from the bible pages to the Pastor Teacher.
 2. He then must go in front of a congregation group and present that doctrine to those assembled who are concentrating on his message.
 3. If you do concentrate then the doctrine goes into the Human Spirit and then to the Left Lobe of the Soul as GNOSIS.
 4. This GNOSIS must go from the Left Lobe of the Soul to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul by means of Faith and Filling of God the Holy Spirit.
 5. This is the ONLY WAY for the believer to get away from serving Satan.
- II. V8-9 describe the OPPOSITION to those who have rejected Satan's plan and policy and production and are on the right side of Human History as a believer advancing or having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
- A. To be on the wrong side of history is to serve Satan as ruler of this world.
1. Satan has a policy and plan of rulership of this world called EVIL.
 2. Satan has a system of production called Human Good
- B. Satan’s whole system is called Good and Evil and this was in the garden the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil
- C. As a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ there are 2 things which we do not need to function in the Plan of God.
1. Evil in the soul
 2. Production of Human Good in the life.
 3. Both are part of the system of Satan and represent the great genius of Satan.
- D. Even though is an incredibly GREAT genius and ruler of this world HE CANNOT CONTROL HUMAN HISTORY.
1. To be a servant of Satan is to be on the wrong side of history and though he is ruler of the world he cannot control history in the world.
 2. The ONLY Way to be on the right side of Human History is to be a believer advancing in the Spiritual Life moving toward and entering the Status Quo of Super Grace advancing toward Ultra Super Grace after that and experiencing dying grace at the end of life on this earth to enter eternity and receive surpassing grace blessings.
- E. When a person is on the right side of Human History he is in for a great deal of opposition.
- F. 2 of the greatest people in Bible Doctrine ever known are shows to us in v8 and through to the end of this chapter.
1. All believers in the Church Age who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and hold Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace establishing their command post and maintaining it become a spiritual atlas holding up their generation in Human History.
 2. As goes that Super Grace believer so goes that generation in history.
 3. Paul is different than this and his impact is far greater in that as a believer who have reached Ultra Super Grace he holds up many generations of history and in fact changes history.
 4. At least 3 men have had this distinction in the bible:
 - i. Moses the first leader of the NATION OF ISRAEL who came out of Egypt born of the exodus.
 - a. He went to Super Grace and then Ultra Super Grace after reversionism.
 - b. He wore the mantle of incredible pressure for 40 years (evidence testing) but had incredible blessing during this whole time.

- ii. Jeremiah was also another in Ultra Super Grace who wore the mantle of opposition for more than 40 years but also had continuous blessing during this time.
 - iii. Paul was also the same with the only difference being that he only wore that mantle for 6 years.
 - iv. These men are stabilizers in Human History
 - a. Jeremiah was a national stabilizer of history.
 - b. Moses and Paul while Jews are international stabilizers of history.
5. There are 2 people who were unbelievers who are ultra genius stabilizers of history.
- i. Gaius Julius Caesar
 - ii. Napoleon Bonaparte Born in Corsica and thought like a Roman and his original language was Italian and picked up french later on.
 - iii. Both were Romans and have some common characteristics both had multi genius capacities.
 - iv. Both related their multi genius to history and could correctly interpret history and see the fallacies of history in which they lived and had the ability to correct them.
 - v. Caesar had 5 years to change history and Napoleon had 20 years to do it.
 - vi. Both were hypersensitive and accused of arrogance by those who write history, along with other great men like MacArthur, Patton, T. Roosevelt.
 - vii. Those who write history are the opponents of those who make history.
 - viii. Napoleon was a very clean, neat and well groomed in his dress as was Caesar and both were fanatical about it and being extremely neat but simple dressers.
 - ix. Napoleon was extremely strong in his ability to produce incredible nervous energy and would get very little sleep and in 1 year dictated to his secretary over 100,000 letters in addition to everything else he did such as winning battles and organizing France with the Napoleonic code as in Louisiana.
 - x. He set up a system of government in France which held them for over 100 years and changed the map of Europe and the thinking of western civilization and the system of warfare.
 - xi. His greatness still has its effects today and was despised as are most great men and had great capacity for friendship but rarely had a true friend and he LOVED one woman very much but her unfaithfulness damaged his sense of love that he became like Caesar a chaser and seducer of women.
 - xii. Caesar was the same way and both these men who were anti hippy and there were some high ranking officers in napoleon's army who had very long hair and He made them cut it and both these men were as Manly a man as ever there was.
 - xiii. Caesar set up a system of administration which carried Rome for over 300 years and his system carried Rome like Napoleon's system is STILL carrying France.
 - xiv. France is a very volatile nation and people and Napoleon hated this nature and set up a system which stabilized France even to today.
 - xv. Both of these men are stabilizing rods which run from their time through all history and these 2 along with Moses and Paul are the greatest stabilizers of ALL of Human History.
6. This must all be related to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controlling history.
- i. Whenever a person is a stabilizing rod of history they will receive incredible opposition in their time.
 - ii. Satan despised both Caesar and Napoleon as much as he despises Moses, Jeremiah, and Paul in history.
 - iii. Both Napoleon and Caesar related all their functions to the Laws of Divine Establishment and brought it back to history by the use of their power and are more despised today by liberal historians than any other people in history.

- iv. There is a rabid satanic inspired hatred of both of these men by liberal historians and if Satan hates these 2 so much who used their genius related to the Laws of Divine Establishment so that God used both of these unbelievers in a special way then obviously if these men can be continuously attacked so much by Satan even after they are LONG dead and part of Satan's future domain in the Lake of Fire.
 - v. In the Lake of Fire there are 2 people Satan will avoid both Caesar and Napoleon who were a thorn in the flesh of Satan.
 - vi. Everything Caesar and Napoleon taught was ANTI revolution and pro Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - vii. It was Caesar who ended the 100 years of civil war in Rome and it was Napoleon who killed at least 200 people in the 25,000 to 50,000 mob which attacked the french government in France.
 - viii. Those dead people brought order back to France and ALL revolutionaries MUST be shot down right were they are standing and this is the only Christian attitude.
 - ix. Satan's system tries to do everything by REVOLUTION and CHANGE {(FF) another prediction of the future in the United States of America which we OBSERVED between 2008 and 2016 with the change promised by the black asshole we had in the most honorable office of president of our United States of America}
 - x. Satan is therefore a very frustrated person and when ever there are people like the unbelievers Caesar and Napoleon or the believers like Moses and Paul these people will receive continuous opposition from satanic sources.
 - xi. Many great men in history are hooked up with demonism but the opposite is true of both Caesar and Napoleon and they demonstrate that multi genius individuals who link into the Laws of Divine Establishment can change history and these did so permanently.
7. There are therefore 4 men who have changed history forever and there is no one in the United States of America who fits into this category.
- i. The Unites States of America is not the kind of nation which will ever produce a great world leader.
 - ii. We have had a very few great national leaders and the nation itself is PRONE toward mediocrity and when most of the believer who reached Super Grace are removed there is the greatest mediocrity in statesmanship and military leadership.
 - iii. The exception is in business and some of the greatest man in business ability in the world have come from the United States of America.
 - iv. It is the phenomenal business genius of Americans which has carried this nation in every other aspect of national life and function and this shows the Lord's great sense of humor
 - v. While the United States of America is great in our thinking and does have a place of greatness in history where the United States of America shines the most internationally is in BUSINESS and MISSIONARIES and this is a great record but who is writing history books about either of these.
 - vi. {(FF) Again another interesting quirk of history showing the great direction of the Lord and great sense of humor in our current president being a GREAT man of BUSINESS and now leading this nation.}
 - vii. We will never seen any great Americans in history books since in world views we do not produce any men of great statesmanship as demonstrated by the fact that when we became a world power we are so naive and stupid that others use our attitude to make their come back.
 - viii. Communism and even England are still in existence because they have ridden on the back of the United States of America who put them in power or kept them there.

- ix. The industrial activity in France, Italy, Germany, Russian and today CHINA exists because they rode on the back of the United States of America because we have the most pitiful naive individuals in the area of statesmanship.
 - x. If we can ever get together just one generation of believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and understand the 3rd chapter of the book of Timothy we could turn this nation around.
 - xi. It would be wonderful to see come out of the United States of America a statesman who rivals Caesar and Napoleon and turns the nation and all of history around.
- G. There are 2 believers in history who impacted all of Human History from their time even through to and beyond our time they being Moses and Paul.
- 1. Jeremiah impacted the Jews tremendously and the Chaldeans but MOSES and PAUL have had influence on every segment of the world and every race in the world at some time or another and act as stabilizers for world history.
 - 2. Jannes and Jambres would be UNKNOWN to us except they were in opposition to Moses when he went back to free the Jews.
 - 3. When Moses went back to Egypt to free the Jews he had opposition directly from Satan, Demons and Humans.
 - 4. God the Holy Spirit focuses our attention on the human opposition to the greatness of this Ultra Super Grace believer, Moses.
 - 5. Jannes and Jambres were 2 demon possessed wise men of the Egyptian court
 - 6. Egypt had in ancient history developed a phenomenal culture and were the first to develop a phenomenal wisdom in Architecture, math and other sciences next came Persia in the field of science and Athens in Philosophy in 5th century BC.
 - 7. Egypt at the time of Moses was the center of culture in the world and were famous in Art and sciences and had great understanding of math and chemistry and astronomy and based on this a system of navigation and were in touch with many areas of the world like India and others.
 - 8. These men were NOT magicians these were wise men who were of great scientific ability and super PhDs and had won great degrees in scientific research and also as unbelievers were demon possessed and linked their great genius with demon possession.
 - 9. These men were dignified, cultured demon possession which manifested itself in great vocabulary and scientific discovery such as in the are of physics were they had developed concepts of light and were very close to the discovery of ELECTRICITY and harnessing it.
 - 10. These men had made great strides in science and other area but also in subservience to SATAN.
- H. When Moses faces Jannes and Jambres who were men of genius in many fields it is the greatest battle of genius in history.
- 1. These 2 were in the court of Amenhotep II and were opposed by Moses and his brother Aaron (who had just enough brains to stay alive and was not very smart at all).
 - i. Aaron was a very nice man of great talent while Moses was the one in the family of great genius along with his sister who also had a great brain.
 - ii. Aaron was so talented and he was an artist that he produced the greatest art of Jewish history but Moses destroyed it because it was an IDOL not because of jealousy as the liberals try to say.
 - iii. It is satanic how certain parts of the information in the bible are distorted to deceive and delude people about the actual facts of the bible.
 - 2. Just because a person has ARTISTIC talent does not mean they have brains or common sense and all talented people are admired for their success in their field.
 - i. The worst person in the world and the twice disoriented person is the one who thinks he is talented in a field and is not.

- ii. Talent is nice if you have it and wonderful if you harness it but is absolutely useless without a stabilizer.
 - iii. Talented people have no capacity for life and is why there parties are frantic with great quantities of alcohol and drugs and why the go from party to party.
 - iv. If you are a talented person in some area of art remember that YOUR TALENT can destroy your life and it takes capacity for life developed from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul before you can even join the Human Race much less get on the right side of history.
3. Aaron was talented but never quite made it in the Spiritual Life.
 - i. He would get with Bible Doctrine for a while and then leave it and he was easy to persuade and a very nice guy.
 - ii. When Moses left he took over and he was talented in Art and Voice and was one of the all time great singers and his ancestors are some of the greatest singers in history.
 - iii. Others related to Aaron and related to him were great in other fields and God in doing a very smart thing made Aaron the high priest and his progeny.
 - iv. He was talented and his sons were very talented and God took this talent and linked it with the priesthood for Israel to keep it in line and stable.
 4. Moses is unique in history and did not need talent and was the greatest person who has ever lived outside of Paul.
 - i. These 2 men will show us how to be on the right side of Human History as men of genius and Ultra Super Grace believers.
- I. The Opposition to Moses:
 1. Jannes and Jambres the scientific genius' of Amenhotep II

Ex 7:11

v11: Then Pharaoh Amenhotep II also called for or summoned the wisest of men even the demon possessed sorcerers; and they also, the ones who had extra natural powers of Egypt, did unusual things by their satanic empowered secret arts.

Ex 7:22

v22: But these sacred scribes of Egypt skilled in the special scientific shorthand language of hieroglyphics, did the same by their secret arts; so Pharaoh's Right Lobe remained hardened, and he would not listen to Moses and Aaron; as the LORD had said.

2. When Aaron threw down his staff and it became a snake and Moses did also these 2 men of the Pharaoh did the same thing.
3. In the throne room of Amenhotep II in this case are the representatives of God, Moses and Aaron and God along with Jannes and Jambres and Satan and demons
4. They also had prophetic ability given by Demons as priests and writer of hieroglyphics and they were considered to have “magical” powers which were demon powers.
5. Their names are found in 2Tim 3 but not anywhere else in the bible.
 - i. Their names had been passed down to the Roman empire and one of the Latin writers mentioned them by name Rome having a extensive relationship with Egypt and Egyptian history had been and is one of the best preserved histories of man.
 - ii. In this time Pleny who lived at the same time as Paul and wrote famous letters to the emperors knew of these 2 men and mentioned them by name.
 - iii. Oppuleus a few generations later speaks of both Moses and Jambres as famous “scribes” of antiquity.
 - iv. There were mentioned in the 2nd century BC by followers of Pythagoras both Jannes and Jambres as well calling them Scribes of hieroglyphics or GREAT scientists of their day.
6. Jewish traditions regarded these 2 as being from the sons of Balam to soothsayers of their day.

- i. They were considered part Egyptian and part Semitic with some other inferences which cannot be proven.
- 7. The fact is that they were the chief human opponents of Moses at this time and Amenhotep II was out contention here because he was not that smart though his father Thutmose III was a genius having grown up with Moses.
 - i. Amenhotep II knowing he could not handle Moses he called on Jannes and Jambres to handle Moses and this was a very high level battle and many witnessed it but very few understood what was actually going on.

2Tim 3:7

v7: These reversionists, always learning false doctrine from some evangelist of evil who is a teacher and so they are never able to come into a full epignosis knowledge of the absolute truth of Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

Lesson #56 Series # 469 2Tim 3:8

- I. Reversionistic Apostles of Evil continued:
 - A. The reversionistic opposition against the great men of Bible Doctrine and Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace often comes in the form of religious activity.
 - 1. This is Satan's great thrust in the field of counterfeit worship ideas called "RELIGION".
 - 2. All opposition to believers in Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace has religious trends and tendencies.
 - B. Religion:
 - 1. Definition:
 - i. Religion is Satan's answer to spiritual growth and his counterfeit for the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace life of blessing and reward.
 - a. Satan has great power and is ruler of this world with his own system of rewards for those who serve him well.
 - ii. It is a part of Satan's plan and strategy and is the ACE Trump Card in his deck of strategic planning.
 - iii. It is the WORST thing that ever happened to mankind in history and it is a soul destroyer.
 - iv. It epitomizes Satan's policy of Evil.
 - v. It is not the same as Christianity and Christianity is NOT a religion like moslemism or world council of churches functions are.
 - a. In Christianity there is a GRACE relationship with God and religion has NO relationship with God.
 - vi. Therefore religion and regeneration are opposing forces in the Angelic Conflict being antithetical and mutually exclusive.
 - vii. In religion MAN by his own efforts seeks to gain the approbation of God through his work, power, talent or ability and therefore it is always a form of reversionism under the influence of evil and always includes some system of legalism.
 - viii. On the opposite side in Christianity God Seeks and finds man through the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and from the point of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God on in the life of the believer it is strictly a matter of Grace.
 - ix. Christianity is a relationship with God through regeneration while religion is a relationship with Satan through reversionism.
 - a. It is possible for a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to be religious as a reversionist.
 - 2. Essence of Religion:
 - i. It has its own gospel 2Cor 11:3-4 and it is a gospel which seeks to convert others to EVIL the policy of Satan.

- ii. It has its own doctrine 1Tim 4:1 the doctrine of Demons and he has a systematic system of teaching by which his followers are inculcated with satanic policies and inspired to perform satanic activities.
- iii. Religion has a system of ministry 2Cor 11:13-15
- iv. It has its own communion table 1Cor 10:20-21 and is a system of idolatry.
- v. It has a system of Self Righteousness Matt 19:16-28.
- vi. It has its own system of pseudo spirituality Gal 3: 2-3
- vii. It has a pseudo Super Grace system Matt 23:1-35 which has its pseudo rewards directly from Satan.
- viii. It has a very strong system of human dynamics regarding a greater life and benefit for all 2Thes 2:7-10
- ix. It has a variation of gods which are representations of the same person Satan 2Thes 2:3-4

C. The religious opposition from Jannes and Jambres toward Moses

1. This did not come from their genius but when they threw down their staffs they were turned to serpents allegedly cobras by Satan.
 - i. However the Cobras of Moses & Aaron's rods ate those of Jannes and Jambres.
2. Weak Aaron was paired with super genius Moses against Jannes and Jambres the genius men of the court of Amenhotep II.
3. There is a comparison between this ancient history and modern history.
 - i. There is an exact parallel between ancient and modern history and if we are to interpret contemporary history we must understand all historical interpretations of the past.
4. There is in the immediate generation of Paul some people JUST LIKE Jannes and Jambres who were in the generation of Moses.
 - i. They are exact duplicates in Paul's generation and by implication this occurs in every generation.
 - ii. Satan always has some extremely brilliant people who under demon influence or possession are phenomenal people with a dynamic impact in history and make history.
 - iii. These servants of Satan under his leadership are great people in their day and in opposition to Ultra Super Grace believers.
 - iv. Therefore Jannes and Jambres are reproduced in every generation where Ultra Super Grace believers are HOLDING history.
5. The 2 greatest believers in Human History were constantly and intensively opposed by reversionism and evil.
 - i. Those on the wrong side of history always oppose those on the right side of history.
 - ii. Those on the right side of Human History are composed of believers who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 - iii. Those on the wrong side of history are composed of the unbelievers who are genius and believers both in reversionism who have allowed themselves to become stupid.
6. This is where there is great dissension between believers.
 - i. The idea of brotherly love is commanded under certain very narrow and limited circumstances between believers.
 - ii. However some of the worst people you will ever encounter are believers who you will meet again in heaven.
 - iii. Some of the most arrogant people you will ever meet are believers in reversionism and they are the strongest opposition to Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers.

- iv. **If you as a believer are not under strong enough Positive Volition and do not accumulate enough Bible Doctrine you will be unable to interpret contemporary history and react to historical disaster in contemporary history and be unable to explain it and flip into reversionism and end up on the wrong side of history where you will spend your MISERABLE life before being taken home to be with the Lord where things will improve for you but never as they should have being deprived of surpassing grace blessings and be a peon on someone's plantation of eternity.**
 - v. There is no equality in heaven once you get past the Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good.
 - vi. There will be some of the most magnificent inequalities in eternity that God has ever created and there will be believers with phenomenal rewards and some who are without any rewards but NO ONE will be unhappy in heaven.
 - vii. The truly sad thing is that in the Protocol Plan of God there is no excuse for inequality in time or eternity and the inequality in eternity results from failure of the believer in time to be under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine making it Priority #1 in life.
- D. The pseudo Ultra Super Grace satanic followers are the ones in every generation who oppose the believer who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
- 1. Every generation will have 1 or 2 Ultra Super Grace believers and a few dozen Super Grace believers who will be opposed by the most brilliant men of the age who are believers or unbelievers in reversionism who are under satanic policies of evil and demon influence.
- E. Summary:
- 1. There are 4 great men of superior multi genius in Human History.
 - 2. 2 are believers and 2 unbelievers
 - 3. Most men or women of genius are totally divorced from reality and do not influence history with the magnitude of their perspicacity.
 - i. Some wind up psychotic some become drug addicts, some have menial jobs but they never quite catch and orient to reality.
 - ii. Genius without orientation to reality is TOTAL disorientation.
 - iii. To have genius is NOTHING and the dumbest guy on the street is more competent than a genius without reality.
 - iv. Genius divorced from reality is a total zero.
 - 4. Great men of genius in Human History are diversified in their genius expression and superimpose their genius on history so that they influence their generation and all generations after.
 - i. There are 4 outstanding examples of this and they have had an overriding influence on history from their life on through history.
 - ii. Almost in the top 4 is Alexander the Great an unbeliever and David a believer and a few others.
 - iii. The top 4 are totally superior and they were all men of multi genius and were able to apply their genius to history because they never lost contact with reality.
 - iv. One maintained attachment to reality by being one of the most famous party boys for the first 40 years of his life before he really started to work, Gaius Julius Caesar.
 - a. In this period he kept close contact with reality but never used his genius except to seduce some magnificent woman
 - b. After age 40 he turned history around by applying his genius to very diversified areas.

5. Of the 4 greatest men of genius in Human History 2 are from the ancient world and 2 in more recent history but NONE of them are contemporary.
 - i. Aside Churchill was NOT a genius albeit a great man.
 6. The 2 unbeliever are Caesar and Napoleon
 - i. They were not only men who completely influenced history to the present time but had no morals at all.
 - ii. While they had not personal morals they had MORAL GOOD in that they were oriented to the Laws of Divine Establishment and say the need for function under the Laws of Divine Establishment in the Human Race.
 - iii. Many people have discovered God's Laws of nature who are not believers and not clean livers which they delineated so that we have academic subjects like physics, chemistry and geology etc.
 - iv. In the same way Napoleon and Caesar discovered the Laws of Divine Establishment even as unbelievers and in their conduct in their personal lives most believers would throw up their hands in horror.
 - v. They are however the ones who made it possible for all men to exist and for the believers to hold up their hands in horror.
 7. The 2 believers Moses and Paul
 8. It is fitting that Moses and Paul both being on the right side of history as Ultra Super Grace should have phenomenal satanic opposition from those on the wrong side of history.
 - i. David had great opposition and Satan in fact stood up to oppose David but he is not quite in the same class as Moses and Paul.
 9. Satan himself is on the wrong side of history and HE is a creature of ultra super genius the greatest ever created by God.
 10. Satan's apostles and evangelists are also on the wrong side of history.
 11. Therefore they are intensely antagonistic to anyone on the right side of history.
 12. Therefore since all believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace are on the right side of history the evangelists of evil are opposed to all believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - i. However their opposition intensifies and becomes constant continuous opposition if the believer happens to be in Ultra Super Grace like MOSES and PAUL in the context.
 - ii. These 2 had constant opposition from satanic forces which is the highest distinction a believer can receive in this life.
 - iii. To be like Moses and Paul in Ultra Super Grace and have constant opposition from Satan and wear a mantle of continuous suffering and intense opposition and to have intensified enjoyment from the Super Grace blessings provided at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 13. Since Moses and Paul are the greatest Ultra Super Grace believers it is fitting that their names should be in this historical dissertation of the wrong side of history.
- F. Satan picks only the most brilliant kinds of people for opposition to the Ultra Super Grace believers.
1. Some opposition to the believers in Super Grace is obvious is the kind which brings out a laugh from your sense of humor.
 2. Brilliant opposition causes you to think and Satan ONLY uses the most brilliant people to oppose the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 - i. When you get opposition from a smart person which makes you think you have to pause and consider before you act.
 - ii. Before you go after brilliant people, if you are not smart enough to make them think you are going to be the court jester and a buffoon and NEVER go out

to oppose smart people with an imbecilic mind or on the basis of arrogance saying you are stronger, better looking or smarter than they are and YOU WILL LOSE OUT EVERY TIME.

- iii. If you do not consider this and go after in opposition Smart people you will become the laughing stock of that person and anyone who is intimate with them if you are not smart enough.
3. It is far better to simply take in Bible Doctrine and forget about them as your vendetta will end up in the JOKE column and will never produce any opposition which is serious and never get anyone to think seriously.
 - i. Many tend to do this because of being petty and they take in Bible Doctrine because they are petty and arrogant and most arrogant people oppose almost everyone, anyone who crosses them or is in competition.
 - ii. Some people are simply that way naturally and tend to go on a vendetta for people who oppose them.
 - iii. So learn from Bible Doctrine, FORGET the vendetta since you have to be very smart to go on a vendetta in the first place and when you go on a vendetta everything will eventually bounce back and crush you in the end anyway.
4. Don't bother to attack people smarter than you are since you will receive Divine Discipline and become the object of their mirth when it was not your intention to provide humor for them.
 - i. This is another reason why pettiness and inordinate competition and going on vendettas is a total waste of time which could be used to increase the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
5. Vengeance is mine I will repay says the Lord.
 - i. Being petty means the person thinks that everyone who is not for you is against you and this is simply NOT TRUE.
 - ii. This complex results in about 90% of the misery they have is of their own making.
 - iii. The 10% Divine Discipline is still tough but it does not take away the misery since 90% is what you cause yourself.
 - iv. The good news is that most believers who take in Bible Doctrine consistently realize that they are not smart enough for vendetta functions and rely on the Lord for their comfort.
 - v. Some believers still take this concept out of context and when they FEEL opposed they say that Satan is after them but his response is "The Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ I know and Paul I know but WHO THE HELL ARE YOU?!!!"
6. If you really want to get into a situation of opposition in life then you just have to keep taking in Bible Doctrine constantly until Satan says to some smart apostle of evil "Go get him" and maybe he will send some smart person to get YOU and then it is a real honor and you will enjoy this very much.

G. The Analogy:

1. The person who is petty is always on some vendetta and going to get even and going to out do someone else and be competitive
 - i. These people have incredible Self Induced Misery plus some Divine Discipline and their object of opposition is always someone who is better in every way than they are and they spend their whole life focused on what they cannot stand or control and all they do in fact is provide blessing for this other person and provide them great humor.

2. Satan's emissary are always genius types and also were not stupid or dumb and had great personalities and had CORRUPTED MENTALITIES therefore when they went out for Moses who was smarter than they and had greater power than they had behind them they would up in this Self Induced Misery and incredible Divine Discipline and it was just as if they were not smart at all but as dumb as the most insignificant petty people imaginable.
3. There is nothing worse than a petty stupid person in any crowd going after someone smarter and always end up hurting themselves.
4. Here we have the opposite situation were these 2 men were GREAT genius' and great in every area of life but they wound up the same way because they were going after the Ultra Super Grace Moses.
5. In all of Human History has there ever been a successful attack on an Ultra Super Grace believer EVER.
6. The Ultra Super Grace believer wears the mantle of total opposition with nothing but great blessing just as the smart person being attacked by the petty person just chuckles at the clumsy attempts to hurt him.
7. There is nothing worse for a genius than to be in the same class as a stupid person BUT genius and stupidity become equal when the genius attacks the Ultra Super Grace believer just as if he were a little petty person attacking someone smarter than he.
8. The application is that LIFE is too short to compete with or go against or try to hurt someone else and YOU NEVER CAN BUILD HAPPINESS ON SOMEONE ELSE'S UNHAPPINESS.
9. Doing this is time wasted and LIFE is too short for going on a vendetta.

H. Principles:

1. There is no excuse for the believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ being on the wrong side of Human History.
 - i. The word REPROBATE means DISQUALIFIED ONES and there is nothing worse than being smart in life or having some ability or talent and disqualifying the use of your talent ability or intelligence with regard to the impact you could make in history.
 - ii. The only real impact which will ever occur in Human History will always be linked up with Bible Doctrine since through Bible Doctrine Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History.
 - iii. Because Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History in order to qualify to be one who can effect Human History you must be a person focused on Bible Doctrine as a believer.
 - iv. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul qualifies the believer for Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace blessings and also qualifies for IMPACT in Human History.
2. Grace has provided everything necessary to be on the right side of history
 - i. Saving or Salvation Grace
 - ii. Living or logistical Grace
 - iii. Super Grace
 - iv. Ultra Super Grace
 - v. Dying Grace
 - vi. Surpassing Grace
3. Grace is the Plan of God and represents his perfection and genius.

4. In the previous chapter in 2Tim we see the importance of self discipline in regulating our lives to conform to grace.
5. This self discipline requires innumerable decisions regarding Bible Doctrine.
6. Constant consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine plus self discipline to regulate the life with regard to Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine results in both victory and divine blessing of Super Grace.
7. Those who hold Status Quo of Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace till death also possess the eternal blessings we call surpassing grace.
8. While every believer has a Super Grace blessing package designed in Eternity Past the rejection of Bible Doctrine disqualifies that believer from receiving the 5 categories of these Super Grace blessings.
9. Note therefore rejection of Bible Doctrine disqualifies the believer from receiving in time:
 - i. The believer in Super Grace receives a 5 category blessing package designed for him in Eternity Past.
 - ii. The Ultra Super Grace receives the mantle of constant suffering and opposition which intensifies the blessings and enjoyment of his Super Grace blessings.
 - iii. The disqualified one which is in reversionism and under the influence of evil is MINUS the 5 categories of Super Grace blessings for time.
 - iv. Category I == Spiritual Blessings:
 - a. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ Category I Love.
 - i) The disqualified one is MINUS this blessing.
 - ii) The Ultra Super Grace believer has the maximum Category I love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and his suffering intensifies the blessing from it.
 - b. Capacity for life, love, blessing, happiness, etc
 - i) The disqualified one is minus this blessing which intensifies his misery in life.
 - ii) The Ultra Super Grace believer under maximum pressure and opposition has an intensified capacity for all aspects of life and is a stabilizing rod for all of Human History.
 - c. The ability to face any adversity or disaster.
 - i) The disqualified one on the wrong side of history is torn apart by disaster.
 - ii) The Ultra Super Grace believer can handle any disaster or adversity and enjoy life at the same time and there is no historical disaster to meet the dynamics of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - v. Category II == Temporal Blessings:
 - a. Wealth Success, Promotion, Prosperity of all kinds, Leadership Dynamics
 - i) The disqualified one although he may receive these things from Satan will eventually LOSE all of them.
 - ii) The Ultra Super Grace believer has these blessings all intensified in life.
 - iii) A prime example of all of this is MOSES who had a great intensification of this blessing although surrounded constantly by pressure and opposition.
 - vi. Category III == Blessing by Association:
 - a. All those in the periphery of the believer in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace receive blessing directly from God or overflowing from association with the believer.

- i) The Ultra Super Grace believer has incredible blessing for those in association with him.
 - ii) The disqualified one on the wrong side of history does not qualify for this blessing at all and all of those associated with SUFFER Terribly because this one is on the wrong side of history.
 - a) The ones said to be in opposition to Moses “Their corpses were strewn over the desert”
 - vii. Category IV == Historical Impact
 - a. The Super Grace believer stabilizes and supports his generation.
 - b. The Ultra Super Grace believer is a spiritual atlas for his generation and also a stabilizing rod for all of Human History.
 - c. The disqualified ones on the wrong side of history do not qualify for this blessing and are found in the trash can of history.
 - viii. Category V == Dying Grace Blessing
 - a. The Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers will have the greatest experience of life at the point of dying
 - b. The disqualified ones on the wrong side of history all die with great suffering and horribly and miserably.
- 10. It simply does not pay to get on the wrong side of history and all who neglect doctrine will be on the wrong side of history and if you do not keep up with Bible Doctrine consistently ONE SIMPLE historical disaster will cause you to react to it and BOOM you will be on the wrong side of history and moving into reversionism.

2Tim 3:8

v8: Moreover, just as or in the same manner or way as Jannes and Jambres who opposed or resisted Moses, so also these religious type reversionistic evangelistic apostles of evil on the wrong side of history antagonistic to believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace, who keep on opposing, resisting and rejecting, to their disadvantage, the truth of THE Bible Doctrine, they are men of depraved or corrupt mind or having been destroyed or corrupted in their mind, and worthless and disqualified with reference to the blessing, with regard to the body of Bible Doctrine, which they have rejected.

Lesson #57 Series # 469 2Tim 3:8

- I. The Wrong Side of History -- The worst thing which could happen to any believer
 - A. Often believers who are under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine often get on the Wrong Side of History not because they lack the desire for Bible Doctrine nor Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul but because historical disaster or catastrophe occurs at a time when they have not assimilated enough information and they therefore react to history.
 - 1. This is extremely important subject for believers and it is very dangerous to be sleepy about Human History
 - 2. We live in history every day and we are in history and may even make history but meanwhile we MUST understand history, that this is the devil’s world, the Angelic Conflict, the fact that there will be historical catastrophe and disaster AND it does NOT require any reaction on your part.
 - 3. Most historical disaster or catastrophe will reach us and those we love or in our periphery and the tendency will be to react and if we do then we will be on the wrong side of Human History and if we end up on the Wrong Side of History the rest of our life will be one of concentrated total misery.
 - B. This passage is directed toward believers and is a warning.
 - 1. We can be a spiritual atlas as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace holding up our own generation

2. If we are persistent after reaching Super Grace we can go on to Ultra Super Grace and become a stabilizing rod for all generations.
3. The alternative is being on the Wrong Side of History as a reversionistic believer.

II. Evangelists of evil continued:

- A. They are filled with self importance and have the concept that life cannot exist without them and they are bolstered up by satanic power and some have extra natural powers delegated by Satan and others are ones of sheer genius under the influence of evil.
- B. They have some impact in they society or generation being celebrities or famous in some way and along with this Status Quo they are carried away with their own self importance.
 1. It never occurs to them that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls Human History and that they will have NO IMPACT beyond their own day.
 2. Remember the 2 great men of genius who impacted history beyond all others had extremely tragic ends and a prime example of one person who is remembered in history but because of a MISQUOTE is Brutus who was the leader of the assassins of Caesar.
 3. In their own generation all the great people whom had a relationship with Caesar are now totally unknown but knowledge of Caesar is widespread even to today.
- C. Because Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls history the action and influence of these celebrated people functions in their own generation and then disappears from history.
 1. However, Believers on the right side of Human History have the 5 categories of Super Grace blessings but if they reach Ultra Super Grace these are intensified.
 2. Believers on the wrong side of history have the exact opposite situation with continuous constant misery of all kinds and every kind of disaster and pain and tragedy and heartache the sum total of suffering and then they are cut off and their influence proceeds no further.
 3. People who make a splash in their own generation from function under the influence of evil not only disappear from history after their own generation and make no further progress but in addition if they are unbelievers they have the Lake of Fire and if believers they have a miserable life until they die the Sin Unto Death.
- D. Principle:
 1. This refers to reversionistic evangelists of evil both believers here and unbelievers by application.
 - i. These are on the Wrong Side of History and may be famous for a moment, celebrities, well known for a short time but they completely and totally disappear from history after their time.
 - ii. These on the Wrong Side of History who opposed Paul in his day are about to begin to oppose Timothy now and most of these judiasers are totally unknown in history today.
 2. Opposition of this type can advance only so far until God cuts it off. See Job.
 - i. Especially if you ignore the opposition and don't try to take care of the problems yourself.
 3. There are many ways to cut off opposition to those on the Right Side of History.
 4. These people function long enough to TEST believers under Positive Volition and to oppose believers who have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace as part of the Angelic Conflict
 5. Then they disappear and buried under the deluge of Divine Discipline.
 - i. They like the praise of men and be flattered and hear how good they are.

- ii. They like to hear others say how great they are so they don't have to do it themselves.
 - iii. Then he discredits them in the eyes of their flatterers.
- E. These people have limited ability to oppose believers and only during their own lifetime because they lack understanding and sense even to the point of psychosis being totally divorced from reality.
 - 1. They live long enough to regret the folly of their actions
 - 2. There is here an analogy between the vast opposition in the court of Amenhotep II and the time of Paul and Timothy.
 - 3. In all of the counseling given to Amenhotep II Jannes and Jambres were the only men smart enough to even begin to oppose Moses.
 - 4. They had power but not perspicacity and POWER MINUS PERSPICACITY is not power at all.
 - 5. Perspicacity minus power is a great weapon and a dangerous one and when both are together this is the greatest weapon of all.
 - 6. Many wanted to discredit Moses but they were unable to figure a way to do it not being smart enough but these 2 were the only ones who could even begin to oppose him.
- F. This is an example of the opposition of EVIL to believers like Moses, Paul and even possibly Timothy.
 - 1. Satan throws everything possible at Moses and Paul and did not succeed and did the same with Jeremiah and did not succeed and there is a distinct possibility that Timothy may reach Ultra Super Grace and also experience this.
 - 2. In every generation it is possible and likely that some people reach Ultra Super Grace and in so reaching they will face the greatest possible opposition and they are well known in the court of Satan.
 - 3. Ultra Super Grace is open to any in any generation and is a possibility for anyone who hangs in with Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine long enough.
 - 4. It is interesting that ALL Ultra Super Grace believers all had a period of reversionism from which they recover and move on to Super Grace and then Ultra Super Grace
 - i. Moses had 40 years of reversionism
 - ii. Paul had his Jerusalem reversionism
 - iii. Timothy had his period as well.
 - iv. Jeremiah also had his period of reversionism.
 - v. All the believers who reached Ultra Super Grace fell into reversionism and recovered and never looked back and never let their failures keep them down and became the great people of their generation of history and in some cases in all generations of history.
 - 5. Don't be concerned by your failures in life and at times YOUR failures are exaggerated by your "FRIENDS" and this is what comes from those "FRIENDS".
 - i. Friends, acquaintances, Those who despise you, try to make something out of your failures even though you have considered them and resolved them with rebound and never look back.
 - a. This is often what happens in Christian circles with divorce.
 - ii. Legalism constantly tries to keep one from breaking out of any failure and usually they are nothing more than CARNAL failures whereas the real issue is reversionistic failures.
 - iii. The reversionistic failure is the serious problem and especially where your reaction was Asceticism and you have Self Righteous legalistic reversionism where there is very little carnality and where you live a PERFECT MORAL life with very little carnality.
 - a. See the Rich Young Ruler who lived an exemplary life but ended up in the Lake of Fire.

- iv. A little arrogance and great morality can make for the worst type of reversionism since not even your friends will warn you about your failures and how terrible you are.
- 6. You can in all cases recover from reversionism and even reach Ultra Super Grace but realize you will have great opposition in that recovery.
 - i. These people in opposition make no progress because their lack of sense and reality as evangelists of evil and people will see that they are so RABID in running down the Ultra Super Grace believer that they are not believed.
 - ii. Don't waste your time running down any other person being petty and trying to discredit others just ignore the problems of others.

G. Principle:

- 1. The opposition from the Wrong Side of History is covered in the lives of the 2 greatest men of Human History who were ones of great spiritual genius, Moses and Paul
 - i. Paul is the contemporary
 - ii. Moses is the historical representation cited from 1500 years in past history.
- 2. Both men had great opposition but it was neutralized by the Grace of God and because Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls history
 - i. he permits opposition to these Ultra Super Grace believers as an HONOR where these believers wear the mantle of satanic evil opposition which intensifies the blessing and enjoyment of Super Grace blessing package in time.
- 3. Therefore opposition is a sign of spiritual progress when the believer is under consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.
 - i. Otherwise it is a sign of Divine Discipline.
- 4. The analogy between Moses and Paul leads to a quick summary on how to meet and defeat such opposition.

III. How to Meet and DEFEAT the opposition:

- A. There is now a contrast set up between Jannes and Jambres who followed Moses only to foster revolt and TIMOTHY who followed Paul to reach Super Grace and carry the load for the next generation of history and possibly reach Ultra Super Grace.
- B. With Timothy in Ephesus and Paul in prison he follows Paul with is mentality for reversion recovery.
 - 1. He is now still moving through Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace.
 - 2. In this passage there is a 1 verb summary of the entire 3rd chapter of Philippians which when Paul wrote this he was in Rome and Timothy and Aphroditis were with him.
 - i. Phil 3 is the great passage dealing with the objective of Ultra Super Grace.
- C. Timothy like Jannes and Jambres was on the Wrong Side of History but he recognized the authority of Paul who rebuked him in mass in 1st Timothy and in recognizing this authority he followed Paul with his mind and made recovery from his reversionism.
 - 1. In all his spiritual growth followed Paul with his mind to his peak of Super Grace but when he was in Ephesus he dropped down into reversionism and in his recovery which started with 1st Timothy he again followed Paul with his mind.
 - 2. He accepted the rebuke and the authority and did not pout or get resentful or hypersensitive and was NOT subjective and he took it like a man.
 - 3. Anyone in reversionism male or female can benefit from Timothy and he took his rebuke and changed his attitude again toward Bible Doctrine and moved back in 2 years to Super Grace and is moving toward Ultra Super Grace.
 - 4. Timothy did not have a problem of arrogance else it would have been much more difficult to recover.
 - 5. Arrogant people are very petty and pout and resent the authority of one who gives it to them straight when they fail.
- D. QRF principles:
 - 1. Study intensively the doctrines you have learned.

2. Pauline theology is exceedingly ahead of everything else in the scripture and Paul was way out ahead of his generation and in fact every generation in history.
 - i. While God the Holy Spirit gave this to Paul he was the first man who taught it and the concepts belonged to him and many would try to steal this along the way in history to arrogant to realize that it belongs to someone else.
 - a. Academically dishonest people are some of the greatest thieves in life.
3. Timothy had the documents of Paul's teaching and history tells us that he was custodian of the prison epistles and copies of them.
 - i. Having these and reviewing them was his secret to getting through reversionism and recovering to Super Grace.
 - ii. NO ONE can recover from reversionism apart from the intensive study of Bible Doctrine under the authority of one's right Pastor Teacher.
 - iii. **EVERY BELIEVER IS THEREFORE DEPENDENT ON THEIR RIGHT PASTOR TEACHER AND NO OTHER (PERIOD).**
4. The only way to go from the Wrong Side of History to the Right Side of History is under strict academic discipline with doctrinal communication.
 - i. This is what occurs when mixed up liberals get some doctrine and become oriented to Bible Doctrine with ability to understand contemporary history and therefore conservative.
5. The manner of life of the Pastor Teacher reflects strict academic discipline and focus oriented to Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization and application of Bible Doctrine and teaching it.
 - i. Timothy has made recovery from reversionism by emulating Paul's strict academic discipline and focus on Bible Doctrine.
 - a. Plutarc "Concerning Instruction of Children"
 - ii. The teacher knows the subject and communicates it to the student so that they who knew nothing now know something and can graduate from his class becoming more than the nothing which they started in the class as and are not something.
 - iii. (gr) Agogos == Pedagogos == Pedagogy == DISCIPLINE.
 - iv. (gr) Paidagogia == content == Bible Doctrine; This is taking the nothing in your class and to make him something you infuse into his pea brain something which causes his brain to expand THIS IS TEACHING.
 - v. Under strict discipline is how this must occur.
 - vi. To stand up under the academic discipline which is REQUIRED for learning you had to respect the authority of the "pedagogue" and had to listen to his content and as a result you learned 2 things, WHAT WAS TAUGHT & THE IMPORTANCE OF RESPECT FOR AUTHORITY.
6. (gr) Ago is a common verb is taken to mean to lead but originally it meant to EDUCATE or TRAIN and Agoge means academic discipline.
 - i. Consider why Plutarc's books remain to this day if not for the expansion of the knowledge of Greek for the Pastor Teacher here R. B. Thieme JR.
7. Paul when he wrote had "lesson plans" and he stuck to his lesson plans since the Bible Doctrine was provide to him by God the Holy Spirit the presenter and preserver of the whole canon of scripture in all of history.

2Tim 3:9

v9: but they, reversionistic evangelists of evil, will not advance one step nor make any progress further in their opposition for their lack of Common Sense understanding and judgment, madness, psychosis, total divorcement to reality, will be obviously evident to all their former admiring flattering contemporaries who are positive to Bible Doctrine as also that opposition of those men, Jannes and Jambres, those court magicians came to be.

- I. Wrong Side of History Continued:
 - A. The recovery from reversionism and regaining the Right Side of History position for Timothy was the result of studying the doctrines presented to him by Paul over the years.
 - 1. This indicates that Paul was the right Pastor Teacher for Timothy and therefore the source of his recovery and you cannot recover from reversionism apart from the communication of Bible Doctrine from your right Pastor Teacher.
 - 2. It also requires the application of self discipline and concentration for recovery to occur.
 - B. (gr) Pistis == Faithfulness
 - 1. That faith in trust and reliability resulting from the consistent intake of Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. Paul was faithful in teaching the Bible Doctrine which is essential for a believer to recover from reversionism and move out of the Wrong Side of History.
 - i. Timothy was reliable, faithful and stable in his intake of Bible Doctrine from his right Pastor Teacher Paul.
 - C. One of the keys to the proper communication objectively of Bible Doctrine is steadfastness including stability and endurance.
 - 1. This stability is one where the Pastor Teacher has no right to have any illusions about people or to be bitter or disenchanted by people.
 - 2. This requires stability and endurance.
 - 3. Patience is stability in the individual and endurance of others.
 - 4. The Pastor Teacher must have stability when he sees the instability of the people in his congregation and he must endure while GOD deals with these people and simply go on with his business of teaching.
 - 5. He must be patient with his congregation and endure their growing pains and therefore must have stability and endurance.
 - 6. No pastor can really afford to be quite human and is a result of having the gift of Pastor Teacher.
 - D. Principle of steadfastness:
 - 1. The Pastor Teacher must be NOT quite human because the congregation got there first and they are all too human
 - 2. The congregation will have points of instability and of peeling off from Bible Doctrine and coming back and getting with Bible Doctrine only when things are tough seeking counseling, etc.
 - 3. It is always to the advantage of the Pastor Teacher and congregation when he has these attributes even in part.
 - 4. The Pastor Teacher must have a total Relaxed Mental Attitude regarding his congregation in spite of the problems of humans in a group.

John 14:26, 16:12-15, 1Cor 2:9-14, James 1:21-26, 1John 2:27

- E. Patience is not the what is found in the person you can run all over and they take what you give them and say YES DEAR is NOT the patience here in this passage.
 - 1. This is the Pastor Teacher who endures hardship, pain, annoyance, put up with the bad habits of the members of the congregation who are in or leaning toward reversionism and temporarily rejecting Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. It is to undergo, bear, sustain opposition and criticism or annoyance of any kind and to do so without giving up, running away, backing off or letting anyone run over you.
 - 3. All of these characteristics belong to Paul and should belong to any Pastor Teacher who does his job correctly and this is what the Pastor Teacher must be if he is ever going to teach so that he and his congregation can grow and make progress and recover from reversionism.
 - 4. He does not have to be a bleeding heart liberal or a goody two shoes or social pimp of the local church and is not a psychologist and NOT anyone's crutch.
 - 5. He IS the highest authority in the local church and keeps on studying and teaching consistently.

6. Therefore the Pastor Teacher must have tenacity in studying and teaching Bible Doctrine to the congregation even when they are temporarily under Negative Volition and he must be indefatigable with regard to his putting up with the failures and swings of the congregation.
7. He must do these things without deviating from his primary purpose of studying and teaching Bible Doctrine and providing grace policy for the local church.
8. He must do all this in spite of any foibles or failures or attacks or opposition from any one or group in the congregation.
9. Patience as we understand and us it today is NOT what is here and what we understand of patience today is the way that
 - i. It is a weakness and the way in which men allow their wives to bully them
 - ii. The way smart women run over dumb men sit and take it.
 - iii. It is the way that parents think they are supposed to put up with all the failures of their children instead of correcting them
 - iv. THIS IS NOT WHAT IS HERE IN THIS PASSAGE.
 - v. It is not today either a biblical nor human virtue and is only the means by which people avoid what they cannot handle.
 - vi. The man who allows the woman to run over him in order to not make a scene in public is NOT PATIENT but in fact is a yellow coward.
 - vii. This is what happens under the children who have been brought up under the concept of permissiveness.
- F. Recovery is from intensive study of Bible Doctrine under great self and academic discipline because of the steadfast tenacious studying and teaching of Bible Doctrine by the Pastor Teacher.
 1. Learn to distinguish between the Pastor Teacher doing his job vs Arrogance.
 2. Learn to distinguish between CONFIDENCE and Arrogance.
 3. You cannot recover from function under or association with weak people.
 4. Don't allow your emotion or feelings to get stirred up by the teaching of the Pastor Teacher.
 5. You don't recover from anything by leaning on a weak person and the more you do so the weaker you are.

II. Opposition to Paul the greatest Ultra Super Grace believer in Human History:

- A. Between Moses and Paul their contribution and stabilization of history is unmatched and both are in context here.
- B. Persecutions by Satan and People.
 1. Many people imagine they are being persecuted but his is simply paranoia.
- C. Both Paul and Moses were persecuted by Satan, Demons and People both unbelievers and believers and by everyone on the wrong side of history and misunderstood and rejected by many with some great exceptions like Timothy.
- D. The subject is now changed from HOW Timothy recovered from his reversionism to the opposition, annoyances and pressures that Paul endured.
 1. No one ever helps his congregation out of reversionism without having to face pressures and opposition in and outside of the congregation and he must use the things he communicates in order for the spiritual growth and recovery of the congregation from reversionism.
 2. NO pastor ever takes his congregation beyond his own place of spiritual growth therefore every pastor must ASAP get to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or start with a church full of MORONS (something not very hard any more).
 3. The Pastor Teacher must grow ahead of his congregation leading them in growth and they must follow him.
- E. Timothy recovered under the authority of the ministry of Paul but Paul had to be persistent under suffering, pressure, adversity, opposition, annoyance of every category or there would not have been a ministry under which Timothy could recover.

1. Those with the gift of Pastor Teacher must understand and be ready for the idea that there is going to be a lot of suffering related to human weakness, foibles and failures.
- F. The pastor must endure verbal and Mental Attitude attacks and antagonisms of all categories and this is a part of the package of the gift of Pastor Teacher and is WELCOME since it forces spiritual growth, developing steadfastness and no pastor can be indefatigable until he ENDURES these attacks and Grows by them.
- i. This is why the Pastor Teacher cannot be quite human.
 2. Like Moses Paul endured more pressure than any believer who ever lived and these 2 wore the mantle of enshrouding maximum pressure in Ultra Super Grace.
 3. Some pastors have actually resigned their local church because they had a misunderstanding with the board of deacons or they did not like them or the ladies missionary society annoyed them.
 4. The Pastor Teacher must learn that there are no groups of people who are NICE they simply APPEAR to be nice on the surface until they are stirred up with a little accurate doctrine.
 5. For the Pastor Teacher who understands this and functions properly under his spiritual gift when the congregation is annoyed with him or does not like him HE CANNOT CARE LESS, it is INCONSEQUENTIAL TO HIM.
 6. When his teaching is criticized it is of no concern to him since the congregation is not that important in this area but he must care deeply what GOD thinks about what he is doing.
- G. The Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace may be described as indefatigable, incapable of being worn out or worn down by opposition hence unwearied, untiring, unremitting in studying and teaching and the other general functions of the ministry.
1. It is beautiful when the Pastor Teacher gets to THRIVE on persecutions and by so doing he goes right on and causes people turn their attitude around and get with Bible Doctrine.
 2. When the Pastor Teacher is sitting under his package of Super Grace blessings and all this annoyance is occurring around him and it OBVIOUSLY does not bother him at all then people eventually get the idea and follow his steadfastness to recovery and growth by taking in Bible Doctrine from him.
 3. You can only recover from taking in Bible Doctrine from someone who is steadfast under opposition and pressure.
- H. Sufferings:
1. Like anyone else the Pastor Teacher brings Undeserved suffering on himself because of the function of his Old Sin Nature but that is NOT what is referred to here.
 2. This is Undeserved Suffering for blessing of the Super Grace believer on the right side of history.
- I. Principle:
1. The 2 words, persecutions and sufferings are categories of adversities which represent opposition from EVIL Satan's policy and for the Ultra Super Grace pastor from possibly Satan himself or high ranking demons, from members of the congregation and from outside the local church, in fact every type of opposition you can think of including family and every possible and conceivable source.
 2. This suffering is opposition FROM the Wrong Side of History.
 3. There are many ways in which the Wrong Side of History offers opposition, annoyance, deterrence, pressure to the believer and Pastor Teacher.
 4. Illustration:
 - i. During his first missionary journey when he came to Galatia and into Antioch, Iconium, Lystra and also Darby but did not have a problem there.
 - ii. For Paul there was a build up of persecutions and the same people persecuted him starting at Antioch and went with him to Lystra and Iconium and picked up more and more opposition until in Iconium they stoned Paul to death.

5. This occurred on the missionary journey of Paul of Acts 13.

Acts 13:45+50

Acts 13:45

v45: But, When the Jews {unbelievers with negative volition} saw the crowds they were filled with Envy or Jealousy, and they began contradicting, speaking against, criticizing the Bible Doctrine spoken by Paul (Rejection) contradicting and blaspheming or they reviled or lied about him.

Acts 13:50

v50 : But the Jews stirred up and aroused the prominent religious women, and the leading men of the city, and instigated persecution against Paul and Barnabas, and expelled or drove them out of the city limits.

6. These Jews were unbelievers who had distorted the Mosaic Law into a system of great legalism and were jealous and contradictory slandering Paul in the city.
7. If you want to oppose someone get a prominent woman on your side and she will start gabbing and will do a greater job of leading a revolt than any man ever could and this is what these Jews did.

Acts 14:1-7

Acts 14:1

v1: And it came to pass that in Iconium {city in South Galacia}, that they {Paul and Barnabas} went both together into the synagogue of the Jews to evangelize, and spoke in such a manner with the result that a great multitude both of the Jews and also of the Greeks believed.

Acts 14:2

v2: But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the minds and instigated mob action from the Gentiles, and poisoned their minds or embittered them against the brethren, Paul and Barnabas and John Mark.

Acts 14:3

v3 : However they spent a long time, abode or lived and stayed in that unpleasant city under friction or pressure, speaking with confidence depending on the Lord, Who gave testimony or kept witnessing on the basis of the Word of His grace, and granted, according to his plan, constantly giving them signs or miracles being done by their hands for the Jews and wonders or miracles for the Gentiles to be done constantly at their hands.

Acts 14:4

v4 : But the multitude of the city was divided. Some were with the Jews and some with the apostles.

Acts 14:5

v5: And when there was an assault or violence attempted by both the Gentiles and also the Jews in a conspiracy with their rulers, to abuse and to stone them, Paul, Barnabas and John Mark

Acts 14:6

v6: they were warned of the conspiracy and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the surrounding region

Acts 14:7

v7: and there in steadfastness they kept on preaching the gospel.

8. They went into Iconium into the synagogue and they had a great evangelistic thrust and many believed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ both Jews and gentiles.
9. The Jews in Antioch went to Iconium and gathered more opposition and conspired to stone him now moved to Lystra to persecute him MORE.
10. Paul was in fact killed but God resuscitated him and brought him back from the 3rd heaven 2Cor 12:1-4 where he states that he had been in the 3rd heaven and was not permitted to communicate them.
11. It was not time for Paul to depart from this earth and therefore the Plan of God is greater than physical death which is Satan's greatest weapon and nothing can hinder the Plan of God in the life of the believer but the volition of the individual himself.
12. This is a case of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controlling Human History directly.

Acts 14:19-21

Acts 14:19

v19: But the unbelieving Jews came from Antioch and Iconium to this area, having persuaded, convinced or won over the mob of people or multitudes that Paul not a god and stoned Paul to death and dragged his body out of the city (Jewish legality), having a firm conclusion that he was dead.

Acts 14:20

v20: But, while the disciples stood round about him, suddenly he {Paul} rose up resuscitated from death, and entered into the city. And the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.

Acts 14:21

v21 : And when they had preached the gospel in that city {Derbe}, and had taught technically or trained many disciples who were under Positive Volition accepting the academic discipline, they returned again to Lystra, then to Iconium, and finally to Antioch.

13. Persecutions at Lystra ended with Paul being stoned to death.
14. The Lord took him to the 3rd heaven but did not allow him to remain since his job was not done but prohibited him from teaching about what he had seen.
15. He went to Derbe and evangelized many and then in steadfastness returned to Lystra, Iconium and Antioch to teach more doctrine and evangelize more disciples.
16. In this journey Paul Met Timothy so that when Paul mentions the great persecutions Timothy knew all about it.

J.

2Tim 3:10 (QRF for when we enter reversionism)

v10: But you having followed faithfully and closely with the mind, studying intensively for recovery from reversionism and advance into Super Grace moving toward Ultra Super Grace, MY doctrine, taught in presentation in public assembly as a mode of instruction of Bible Doctrine of the predetermined plan of God, MY guidance and instruction under self and academic discipline and MY presentation organization in preparation of lessons of the body of doctrine, MY faithfulness and MY reliability, steadfastness, stability, endurance, patience, honesty, lack of Mental Attitude Sins, constancy, fidelity and affection to the Lord transcending all human failures, MY unshakable and immutable resolution in teaching the body of Bible Doctrine, MY restraining from avenging wrongs toward self or the steadfast patient endurance of evil, MY Relaxed Mental Attitude and Impersonal Love for Mankind charity, MY ability to endure and remain relaxed under pressure of opposition and criticism and annoyance without giving up or succumbing to self pity.

Lesson #59 Series # 469 2Tim 3:11

- I. The Wrong Side of History continued:
 - A. At the time of his 1st missionary journey Paul was presented with such intense persecution but was able to bear it without suresuscitated cowardice or self pity.
 1. In fact the judiasers in Antioch, Iconium and Lystra were so against him that they ultimately stoned him to death and he was resuscitated by God.
 2. Then after this intense persecution Paul did not succumb to cowardice because of this opposition but in fact RETURNED to Lystra then Iconium and Antioch after having been to Derbe.
 - B. From this intensive persecution of the mantle of maximum opposition from Satan and his forces for the Ultra Super Grace believer, GOD rescued Paul delivering him for a long ministry.
 1. In this situation there is for the Ultra Super Grace believer maximum pressure but intensification of all blessing and enjoyment of life.
 2. NO pressure in life when you are in Ultra Super Grace can do anything but ADD to the intensity of your blessing and enjoyment and as the pressure increases the blessing increases.
 3. The greater the pressure the greater the blessing for the Ultra Super Grace believer.
 4. This was the case for Moses who had pressure for 40 years of his life and maximum blessing at the same time.
 5. This is the situation for Paul as well.
- C. The Principle of v11 the suffering format:
 1. Format of Deliverance:
 - i. At Antioch Paul escaped unharmed.
 - ii. At Iconium Paul was warned and escaped.
 - iii. At Lystra Paul was STONED to death and resuscitated by God the Father.
 - iv. All of them are deliverance for Paul by God the Father.

- v. His soul and spirit left his body and went to be with God the Father in the 3rd heaven and he had a nice look around there (1Cor 11, 12:1-4) but God the Father sent him back by resuscitation.
2. The passage of v11 will not permit the conclusion that Paul was delivered at Antioch and Iconium and NOT Lystra because the context used the Culminative Aorist tense (gr) ruomai.
 - i. It was obvious that he was delivered in Antioch and Iconium since he escaped unharmed but not so obvious at Lystra.
 - ii. They are however parallel situations for the Ultra Super Grace believer.
 3. Paul was rescued or delivered in ALL 3 places and situations.
 - i. **Some people will not agree thinking that if things do not stop hurting they are not delivered but sometimes you are delivered through the hurting and sometimes the hurt is ended and sometimes it is a combination of both.**
 - ii. **Many think they are still under fire but are not but don't know it not being far enough along spiritually to tell the difference.**
 4. At Antioch and Iconium Paul was delivered from the violence of stoning but at Lystra Paul was delivered THROUGH the violence of stoning.
 5. At Antioch Paul was under pressure but was delivered from actual physical violence
 6. At Iconium Paul was under persecution but was warned and therefore delivered from actual physical violence
 7. At Lystra Paul was stoned to death but was delivered through God's resuscitation directly.
 8. Paul hauled himself out of town in Antioch and In Iconium Paul was warned by friends and they delivered him in Iconium AT LYSTRA it was DEATH and RESUSCITATION by God himself and therefore a miracle and was therefore delivered through all 3.
 - i. Most people think that getting out of a situation unscathed is deliverance or getting out by means of being warned of the situation is deliverance.
 - ii. **It never occurs to them that you can be delivered THROUGH the whole thing hurting the whole time and still be delivered.**
 - iii. **When the Lord did resuscitate Paul the question is whether Paul was bruised and aching after the stoning or was his body perfect? NO SPECULATION NECESSARY!!!!**
 9. Therefore God delivers the believer FROM suffering but also at times THROUGH suffering.
 - i. What makes life so interesting is that we GET BOTH.
 10. The believer cannot and must not question the judgment of God in his deliverance.
 - i. Whether he chooses to deliver you FROM or THROUGH suffering we must have exactly the same attitude.
 - ii. A CHILD says make it stop hurting but as an ADULT you simply bear the suffering.
 - iii. If you are delivered FROM the suffering that is pleasant for you.
 - iv. If you are delivered through suffering then you will be in suffering the whole time and must have exactly the same attitude.
 - v. Therefore FROM == THROUGH in Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace and occasionally just before reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - vi. Most believers pray to be delivered from an unpleasant situation but NONE pray to be delivered through the suffering.
 - vii. In Ultra Super Grace this believer frankly does not give a damn which way it occurs since he will have suffering constantly anyway and be delivered every time.

- viii. This was MOSES and is PAUL here and they were always under pressure and it made no difference HOW they were deliverance since they possessed something which meant constant deliverance.
 - ix. Greater was the inner pressure and blessing from their Super Grace package of blessing than the mantle of pressure and opposition which surrounded them.
 - x. There cannot, will not and never will be a collapse of Super Grace blessings for the Ultra Super Grace believer.
 - xi. In this situation it makes no difference which way the deliverance occurs since he still has blessing through either and in both cases the blessing is intensified.
 - xii. To the Ultra Super Grace believer SUFFERING is inconsequential and about as routine as the air we breathe and they can care less about suffering.
11. Sometimes it furthers the Plan of God to deliver FROM Suffering but sometimes it furthers the Plan of God to deliver THROUGH suffering.
- i. When God is deciding he is glorified and you are blessed and do not try to get away from it.
 - ii. Never try to avoid or get away FROM suffering when he intends to deliver you THROUGH suffering.
 - iii. If a woman is married to a man who is totally intolerable she wants to be delivered FROM him having met many who are better than the one she selected.
 - iv. God may have set up for her to be delivered THROUGH the marriage and therefore there is no way to JUSTIFY Poisoning him, Divorcing him, accidentally backing the car over him, forgetting to turn off the gas while he was sleeping.
 - v. Everyone wants to be delivered FROM suffering but until you grow up enough to let God decide things will be difficult for you.
 - vi. The Ultra Super Grace simply says “Not a problem God, YOU decide on the method of deliverance, I will simply enjoy seeing how it works out”.
 - vii. There have been some people like that in history since we find their history in the bible but NO ONE ever understands them but human understanding is not a prerequisite for anything worth while.
 - viii. The more people who don’t understand you the better off you are and the Ultra Super Grace believer could not care less which way God uses for his deliverance.
 - ix. For the Ultra Super Grace believer the fact is that either is perfectly acceptable to him since any time he is under pressure he receives intensified blessing therefore it makes no difference to him how the deliverance occurs.
 - x. When you have enough Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace everything is opposite and it does not make any difference if there is disaster or pressure whether you are delivered from or through it.
 - xi. This is normal for the Ultra Super Grace believer to have pressure and whatever is there today will most likely be DIFFERENT pressure tomorrow and it does not make any difference to them.
 - xii. To be clear this is NOT fatalism which has NO enthusiasm because Ultra Super Grace has TOTAL enthusiasm.
 - xiii. In both cases of deliverance GOD is glorified and the Ultra Super Grace believer is BLESSED to the maximum and delivered.

II. Perpetuation of Satanic Opposition for Ultra Super Grace believers

- A. There is a difference between Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - 1. Some people reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super Grace and HOLD there and ultimately receive dying grace blessings.

2. Some people reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and KEEP ON MOVING AHEAD in the Spiritual Life toward and reach Ultra Super Grace and also receive dying grace blessings.
3. There are some, unfortunately, who crash at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and regress and go out under the Sin Unto Death.

B. The highest point you can reach in the Spiritual Life is Ultra Super Grace and then when life is over you have moved through

1. Positional Sanctification being placed in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit.
2. Experiential Sanctification reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace
3. Receiving the Resurrection Body is Ultimate Sanctification.

C. Satanic Opposition toward the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believer WILL exist in every generation.

1. The Ultra Super Grace believers always receive persecution from satanic forces and systems who are on the Wrong Side of History and this is the HIGHEST honor which God can give to the believer in time.
2. This is the mantle of opposition later called Evidence Testing.

D. Principle:

1. Opposition from the Wrong Side of History continues in every generation for the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers.
2. This opposition or persecution is directed partially toward the believer in Super Grace but constantly toward the Ultra Super Grace believer who has achieved the ultimate in tactical victory.
3. Both the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believer glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and both are in the tactical victory.
4. Therefore both Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers must be attempted by satanic forces and systems to be neutralized, discredited and removed from their lofty Status Quo of Spiritual Tactical Victory.
5. Therefore all the forces of HELL angelic and human are concentrated against them, the Super Grace believer part of the time and against the Ultra Super Grace believer ALL the time.
6. The continuation of the function of these believers under the Grace Apparatus for Perception plus the Super Grace blessing package provide insulation against all who are on the Wrong Side of History.
 - i. Satan
 - ii. Demons
 - iii. People
7. Therefore with suffering and pressure from the forces of evil under the command of the ruler of this world, Satan God in grace has provided the perpetuation of both protection and blessing whereby the opposition of those on the Wrong Side of History is neutralized AND furthermore whereby the opposition merely intensifies the most fantastic blessings.

III. The concluding Paragraph v13-17 DELIVERANCE from those on the Wrong Side of History.

A. Ultra Super Grace is the final objective in life and is the cause which changes history.

B. Doctrine of Suffering:

1. General Causes for suffering in life for believer and unbeliever.
 - i. Loss of health wealth, property money loved ones anything of value to the loser.
 - ii. From people, gossip, austracism persecution violence crime war
 - iii. From privation, hunger thirst, cold, heat, earthquake, natural disasters, accidents of any kind.
 - iv. From administration of the law apprehension as a criminal or law violator, tried and sentenced.

- v. Social Suffering of loneliness, rejection, austracism, disapproval.
 - vi. Mental suffering, from Mental Attitude Sins, neurosis, psychosis or any psychopathic condition.
 - vii. From Rejection of Authority including Love, divorce, failure in Adulthood because of rejection of authority in childhood, being fired, dishonorable discharge, loss of citizenship, excommunicated, Cut from a team, expelled from school, ETC.
 - viii. From reversionism resulting in reaping what you sow.
2. Basic Categories of suffering:
- i. In time
 - a. Unbeliever rejecting the Laws of Divine Establishment and has Self Induced Misery and unbeliever reversionism
 - b. Believer Point 4
 - ii. In eternity
 - a. Unbeliever has the Lake of Fire forever **Rev 20**
 - b. Believer has no eternal suffering no matter how terrible he was in life. **Rev 21:4**
 - i) Once the believer dies there is no more suffering ever in eternity, however he gets all of his suffering now in time.
3. The premise of Christian suffering:
- i. All suffering is designed for blessing **1Pet 1:7-8, 4:14**
 - ii. The exception is Divine Discipline **Heb 12:6**
 - a. The Lord can only express his love for you when you are taking in Bible Doctrine.
 - b. If you are not taking in Bible Doctrine then the Love of God is expressed toward you in Divine Discipline and therefore YOU LEARN the HARD WAY.
 - iii. The exception can be removed:
 - a. For Carnality with rebound procedure use **1John 1:9, 1Cor 11:28-31**
 - b. For reversionism with recovery by consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - iv. Therefore cursing is turned to blessing for the believer **Rom 8:28**
4. The categories of Christian suffering:
- i. Disciplinary or Deserved Suffering
 - a. From Divine Discipline **Heb 12:6**
 - i) For carnality **Ps 38**
 - ii) For reversionism **Eccl.**
 - b. By association which is peripheral **1Cor 12:26, Rom 14:7m, 1Sam 21**
 - i) You suffer by association with someone with whom you MUST be in contact with.
 - c. Caused by wrong priorities **SS Eccl**
 - d. From Guilt the worst kind and with the least excuse. **1Tim 1:5-6, 1:19-20, 3:9, 4:1-2, Tit 1:15**
 - i) These people are in a difficult spiritual situation but are also STUPID.
 - ii) Guilt is a Heinous Sin and also a CRIME against Self and you do nothing but HURT self and you never do anything to solve anything.
 - e. From national discipline **Lev 26, Is 33, 59, Hosea**
 - f. From rejection of Right Man Right Woman **Ex 16, 23, Jer 12:7, 15:7-12, 17-18**
 - g. From failure to isolate sin **Heb 12:15**

- h. From Loss of Grace norms and standards **Jer 2:24-25**
 - i. From War and Revolution
 - i) As a believer fighting in the army you will NOT suffer it is civilians who get this suffering.
 - j. From Reversionism **Ps 77**
 - ii. Blessing or Undeserved Suffering
 - a. To glorify God in the Angelic Conflict **Job, Luke 15:20-21, 1Pet 1:12, 3:17**
 - b. To learn obedience and self discipline **Heb 5:8, Phil 2:8**
 - c. To demonstrate the sufficiency of Grace **2Cor 12:1-10**
 - d. To develop faith for function in the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) **1Pet 1:7-8**
 - e. To accelerate the construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul and leading into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace James 1:1-6
 - f. As a means of witnessing for Christ **2Cor 3-4**
 - g. To help others who suffer **2Cor 1:3-5**
 - h. To learn the value of Bible Doctrine **Ps 119:67-71**
 - i. For the advance and impact of Bible Doctrine **2Tim 1:12-14**
- 5. Family Suffering:
 - i. It is portrayed in **Ex 20:4-6, Deut 5:8-10**
 - ii. There is a 4 generation family curse **Ex 34:3-7, Num 14:18**
 - iii. The mechanics of this curse **Prov 30:11-17**
 - iv. The law of culpability is involved in it **Deut 24:16**
 - v. The problem of children falls into 2 categories:
 - a. Parents must be fair to children **Deut 21:15-17**
 - b. Parents must discipline them but by the teen years if the child has not responded to parental discipline and are proven by law of Israel to be incorrigible they are to be executed **Deut 21:18-22**
 - c. The Jews executed their incorrigible teen aged children and had no crime either.
 - vi. Bible Doctrine breaks this 4 generation curse **Deut 7:9, 6:6-13, 11:18-21, Ps 100:5**
 - vii. There is such a thing as a children's gimmick which is using children as an excuse to avoid bible study **Jer 31:15, Num 14:31**
 - viii. The triumph of children with Bible Doctrine **Lam 3:21-31**
- 6. Economic Suffering:
 - i. Inflation is part of the 4th cycle of Divine Discipline **Lev 26:26**
 - ii. You must be solvent in a depression **Gen 41**
 - iii. Depression is a test for the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) **Gen 12:10, 1Pet 1:7-8**
 - iv. Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the answer to depression rather than money in the pocket **2Chron 20:9**
 - v. Divine Viewpoint is needed to survive economic disaster **Ps 33:17-20**
 - vi. Depression is part of Divine Discipline to test both the nation and individual reversionist under the influence of evil **Ps 105:16, Jer 11:22**
 - a. Depression is a GOOD thing not a bad thing as it cleanses the nation so that only the high quality remains after the depression.
 - b. This is clearly seen in the history of the United States of America in its rapid development of an top high quality army of 11,000,000 men in World War II.
 - c. This was one of the greatest armies of history and they were not professional soldiers.
 - vii. Paul's teaching in time of depression intensifies depression **Jer 14:13-18**

- viii. God protects the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace during depression **Jer Job 5:20, Rom 8:35**
- ix. Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the solution to depression consequently advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace restores the economy. **Is 37:30-31**
- 7. God can only demonstrate his love to believer in time **1Pet 4:14-16**
 - i. Therefore there is no suffering for the believer in eternity and there is no suffering for the believer in the Plan of God
 - ii. Divine provision for suffering is greater than any pressure in life and Super Grace is the Status Quo where this is experienced.
 - iii. The Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers are qualified to weather any storm of life.
 - iv. There is no suffering for the believer in eternity
 - v. There is no suffering too great for the Plan of God
 - vi. Divine provision for suffering is greater than any pressure of life ie Bible Doctrine.
 - a. The more doctrine you have the greater is your ability to cope with pressure of life.
 - vii. Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace is the Status Quo in which you experience this.
 - viii. The Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers are qualified to weather any storm of life through maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 8. The unique sufferings of Christ **Is 53**
- 9. The reason for the suffering of the Pastor Teacher **2Tim 2**
 - i. Perpetuate Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ **2Tim 2:8**
 - ii. Disseminate Bible Doctrine **2Tim 2:9**
 - iii. Fulfill the grace objectives of Life as a believer in time **2Tim 2:10**
- 10. The principle of Ultra Super Grace suffering:
 - i. The Ultra Super Grace believer receives as the highest decoration in time the mantle of continuous Undeserved suffering as opposition from Evil systems and all satanic forces.
 - ii. This mantle is called ‘participation in his sufferings’ or ‘fellowship of his sufferings’ **Phil 3:10**
 - iii. The mantle of 2 such Ultra Super Grace believers is found in **2Tim 3:8-12**
 - iv. The sufferings of the Ultra Super Grace believer are the highest honor any believer can possess in time
 - v. The sufferings do not mean NO blessing but in fact mean GREATER blessings for they intensify the blessings of Super Grace.

2Tim 3:11

v11: All persecutions including religious and satanic from the Wrong Side of History, and general undeserved sufferings such as or which came into existence or happened to me, Paul, during the 1st missionary journey at Antioch of Pasidia, At Ico'nium and At Lystra, such persecutions, the mantle of persecution for the Ultra Super Grace believer, which I underwent endured, bore, sustained under opposition and annoyance without giving up and succumbing to cowardice or self pity, and yet out from all of the categories of suffering and opposition the Lord God the Father, himself, snatched me out, rescued or delivered me from these difficult situations.

2Tim 3:12

v12: Furthermore now also all Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers who keep desiring to continue living godly lives in Ultra Super Grace through consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization and Application of Bible Doctrine resulting in a balance of residence in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, in Christ Jesus, WILL be pursued and suffer persecution by all satanic forces and systems for no reason.

- I. Freedom through military victory:
 - A. Freedom requires Authority
 - 1. Without authority there can be no freedom and under freedom the individual must have self discipline in order to regulate his own personal life so that others can have their own privacy, property and freedom to carry on in life just as we all should have.
 - 2. There is no freedom apart from authority and discipline.
 - B. The greatest manifestation of our freedom which we have under the Laws of Divine Establishment is that every bit of freedom we enjoy at any time is courtesy of the military.
 - 1. It is the military which makes the sacrifices needed professionally and when in time of need an enemy must be confronted.
 - 2. On battlefields our freedom was born and there it is sustained.
 - 3. Without the military we would not have the right to assemble and study Bible Doctrine.
 - C. Frank D. Peregory, Tech Sgt, 116 Infantry, 29th infantry division, June 8, 1944, Grancance France.
 - D. Manuel Perez Jr. PFC Alpha Co, 511th Parachute Infantry, 11th Airborne Division, 27 Dec 1945, Luzon Philippines
 - E. George J Peters, Pvt, G Co. 507th Parachute Infantry, 17th Airborne Division, 8 Feb 1946, East of the Rhine Germany
- II. Phil 3 written during Paul's first imprisonment is related to 2Tim 3 written during Paul's last imprisonment just before his death.
 - A. Review Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
 - B. The Ultra Super Grace Objective:
 - 1. Priority perspective of Super Grace v1-8
 - 2. Parenthesis of Grace Orientation v9-11
 - 3. Final Objective in Live Ultra Super Grace v12-19
 - 4. What is beyond Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace Surpassing Grace v20-21
- III. The priority perspective of Super Grace
 - A. Command to continue in Super Grace Status Quo for it is the base by which we move in time to Ultra Super Grace.
 - B. This passage is a transition from the topic of Super Grace to the new objective of Ultra Super Grace.
 - 1. Paul at the time of this writing realizes that he has made Super Grace Status Quo again after his Jerusalem reversionism but that he cannot stop at this point and He finally some 6 years later reached the new objective of Ultra Super Grace as per 2Tim 3 which shows us his death.
 - i. {(ff) So early in my studying of Bible Doctrine I recall the Col talking about how it was possible with consistent study to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace status in 2 or 3 years. This was of course my objective. You can only imagine how disillusioned I have been all my life some 40 years after these first lessons but I KEEP ON STRIVING to reach that point. So now if it took Paul 6 years after recovery from reversionism and having reached again Super Grace Status Quo to move on and reach Ultra Super Grace I actually don't think I have enough time left in life to make it.!!!??? }
 - (a) hehehehehe
 - 2. Phil 2:17-30 deals with the believers right Pastor Teacher and 3 were mentioned
 - i. No Pastor Teacher can take his congregation beyond his level of spiritual growth and Paul sees this and through the prison epistles he can bring anyone to Super Grace Status Quo.
 - ii. Beyond the prison epistles are the pastoral epistles which are in fact designed to bring one to the Status Quo of Ultra Super Grace.
 - 3. Paul cannot take the Royal Family of God beyond his own spiritual growth and in the prison epistles he reaches a new high of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

- i. These deal wonderfully with the subject of Super Grace
 - ii. There is however something BEYOND Super Grace and a greater happiness than is in Super Grace Status Quo and the most fantastic happiness is found in Super Grace when you receive your Super Grace blessing packages.
 - iii. In moving to Ultra Super Grace it takes the mantle of opposition to make that happiness greater and more intensified.
 - iv. Beyond this is Dying Grace and the most wonderful unimaginable blessings and rewards of surpassing grace for all eternity.
4. In 2Tim 4 We will see that **YOU MUST LIVE LIFE IN TIME IN LIGHT OF ETERNITY.**
- i. We will only be on this earth for a relatively SHORT time but eternity is everlasting.
 - ii. What you do in this short time to receive maximum blessing from God and as a result glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the basis for having eternal decorations.
 - iii. This will be like the Congressional Medal of Honor which is the highest decoration and reward a person can have in this country and there is NOTHING greater.
 - iv. In England the officers were not given decorations but titles of nobility since officers are not to be rewarded and only the enlisted men do rewardable things and in the true concept of the officer corps he only leads and does not do things which could be rewardable.
 - v. According to the thinking of the British it is the officers DUTY without reward to be totally courageous and valorous and have the total leadership ability to meet any circumstance of life and this was the British attitude until Victoria became sentimental about this concept.
 - vi. The concept is that anything which you could decorate an officer for is what he should be doing under the principle of his duty as an officer.
 - vii. As leadership began to fall apart and decline they tried to stimulate officers in the same way with decorations.
 - viii. Before Victoria's time when an officer distinguished himself in an unusual way the officer received a title of nobility and went, for instance, from Captain John Smith to Sir John Smith and Arthur Welsley is a perfect example.
 - ix. The officers therefore before Victoria never wore any decorations but this has changed since Victorian England.
 - x. In the United States of America the first decoration was the Purple Heart and in the 2nd War for independence the Medal of Honor was given and it was usually for capturing the flag of a regiment and officers in this country were given decorations from the beginning.
5. Related to the Spiritual Life the highest decoration you can ever receive is the one which glorifies the Lord forever is Surpassing Grace Blessing and Reward.
- i. If you reach Super Grace Status Quo you will receive it.
 - ii. The higher you go in Super Grace even to Ultra Super Grace the greater will be this surpassing grace blessing and reward and the better dying grace blessing you will have and forever and ever you will wear decorations and honors which will glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever.
 - iii. There will be many believers in heaven who will wear a tunic minus any decorations at all.
 - iv. The most interesting thing about surpassing grace blessings and rewards is that they are not given for DOING anything for God as many believers think the Christian Way of Life is to be it is for THINKING.

- v. Great doing always comes from Great Thinking and it is the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which actually makes the difference.
6. At least one of the 12 apostles HAD to become an Ultra Super Grace believer and if any of the others besides Paul did is not clear.
- i. Peter OBVIOUSLY made it to Super Grace Status Quo.
 - ii. John obviously also made it to Super Grace.
 - iii. As far as the scripture is to reveal ONLY Paul made it to Ultra Super Grace.
 - iv. Paul like Moses in his generation and both forever are examples of what it takes to go above and beyond the call of duty in the Spiritual Life.
 - v. These 2 men along with Jeremiah and a few others are totally unique in Human History and in the Spiritual Life.
 - vi. There are HINTS that Timothy may have gone on to Ultra Super Grace which puts him in a fantastic category.
- C. There are certain essential doctrines which must be presented before the canon of scripture can be closed
- 1. One of these deals with Ultra Super Grace and for this reason Paul must change the subject from communicators of Bible Doctrine, Pastor Teachers in general to specific objectives which are related to the communication of Bible Doctrine.
 - 2. The specific objective which he has achieved at the time of writing of Philippians is Super Grace and the objective beyond that is in 2Tim 3 is Ultra Super Grace
 - 3. Ultra Super Grace is not originally found in 2nd Timothy but 6 years earlier in the prison epistles.
 - 4. In Philippians Chapter 3 Paul is moving toward the final objective of Ultra Super Grace.
 - 5. With this same thing in mind Timothy in chapter 3 is where Paul was when he wrote Philippians chapter 3 and he is challenging Timothy to also move to the high ground of Ultra Super Grace.
 - 6. These 2 passages are totally related and as Paul saw the objective in Phil 3 and for the rest of his life moved to it, so he wants Timothy to do so.
 - 7. In 2nd Tim 4 there is no sign of this but it is the most beautiful solemn pictures of changing the guard or passing the colors from one Ultra Super Grace believer to another potential one.
- D. Paul now addresses the Philippian believers and directly ALL members of the Royal Family of God as our right Pastor Teacher.
- 1. Paul started the church and founded more local churches than anyone else and under his ministry of Apostleship more men ministered to believers in his absence such as:
 - i. Timothy at Ephesus
 - ii. Titus at Crete
 - iii. ETC.
 - 2. What all believers want is true happiness and this is what Paul is referring to here.
 - i. It takes a great deal of Bible Doctrine to have inner happiness.
 - ii. Inner happiness is what it takes to make Christmas Christmas and Easter Easter and every day fantastic.
 - 3. Paul here is now talking to all believers and explaining that HE NOW HAS Sharing the Happiness of God as part of his Super Grace blessing package.
 - i. However there is something greater when the pressure from the mantle of opposition is gained which enhances the Sharing the Happiness of God in Ultra Super Grace.
 - 4. The command here is from Paul to FOLLOW ME!
 - i. No communicator of Bible Doctrine can lead the congregation further in the Spiritual Life than his own level of spiritual growth.

- ii. The believer only gets to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace by consistent studying under his RIGHT Pastor Teacher and this does not mean MANY RIGHT Pastor Teachers
- iii. YOU DO NOT GROW UP IN THE Spiritual Life by studying from many Pastor Teachers and this is like spiritual polygamy and does not exist.
- 5. The Super Grace believer receives the Sharing the Happiness of God concept by consistent Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Ultra Super Grace gets this as enhanced Sharing the Happiness of God by wearing the mantle of opposition.

IV. Doctrine of Happiness:

A. Definition:

- 1. Happiness is defined as a state of well being, and is synonymous with welfare or prosperity
 - i. It is the enjoyment of and pleasure in one's status of life, circumstances, relationships in life etc.
- 2. Felicity denotes an intense happiness and is that found in Ultra Super Grace
- 3. Beatitude denotes supreme felicity and Paul died in this Status Quo.
- 4. Blessedness refers to happiness related to God and the Plan of God and this often is found in the KJV.
- 5. It is therefore a state or quality of being happy in relationship to spiritual progress.
- 6. Happiness in its full extent is the UTMOST pleasure we are CAPABLE of enjoying and the capability is in the soul NOT exterior pleasant circumstances.
- 7. Happiness is awareness of one's circumstances in a highly satisfactory way hence being in a favorable or advantageous condition or circumstances spiritually

B. Relationships of happiness:

- 1. Happiness comes in 3 categories:
 - i. Minus H == Pseudo Happiness
 - ii. Negative H == Happiness related to the Laws of Divine Establishment
 - a. This is the man who receives the medal of honor.
 - iii. Plus H == Happiness which belongs to the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace ONLY.
- 2. It is related to prosperity **Ps 128**

Ps 128:1

v1: How happy is everyone who respects the leadership of the Lord, who walk in his ways

Ps 128:2

v2: When you shall eat of the labor of your hands you shall be happy if under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and it will be well with you.

Ps 128:3

v3: Your wife will be a fruitful vine with many assets which make you happy in the innermost parts of your home, your children like olive plants around the table their assets also providing happiness.

Ps 128:4

v4: Behold for thus shall the man be happy who is occupied with the Lord.

- i. There are 2 relationships which cause a person trouble:
 - a. To have a wife
 - b. To have children
 - c. In this order and more so when they get out of order!
- ii. This is a situation which makes for a lot of friction in life and more friction than fun unless you are under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which is the KEY.
- iii. The point is that if you are not Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ then you will be lacking happiness because of first your wife and then your children.

3. Related to Adversity in the Status Quo of Ultra Super Grace:
 - i. Peter is saying I wish you were suffering for “righteousness” meaning reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Ultra Super Grace but in fact you are not.
 - ii. Peter’s congregation had not reached Super Grace at this point and obviously not Ultra Super Grace.

1Pet 3:14

v14: But if (4th Class) you also should suffer persecution because of (Dikaiousune), total fulfillment of spiritual progress of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God reaching Ultra Super-Grace, I wish you were but you are not up to now, Happiness’ or the blessings of Ultra Super-Grace would belong to you; now do not fear their intimidation, that of the opposition of evil, and definitely do not be worried

1Pet 4:14

v14: You might receive intense happiness with intense happiness which is the reward of Ultra Super-Grace, If you receive insult upon insult in the name of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, and you do in Ultra Super-Grace, happinesses of intensified blessings to you as an Ultra Super-Grace believer, because the spirit of glory even God the Holy Spirit refreshes you.

- iii. Ultra Super Grace is the place where you can have every suffering adversity persecution in the world and it will only make you happier.
 - iv. The mantle of opposition around the shoulders of the Ultra Super Grace believer no matter how intense it is ONLY MAKES THE BELIEVER HAPPIER.
 - v. Moses as an example in the 40 years in the desert was totally completely happy in Ultra Super Grace while the people were dying of misery around him.
4. Happiness is related to the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception since this is the only way to get to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.

Prov 3:13

v13: How basically happy is the man or person who finds doctrine and wisdom from doctrine in the Right Lobe Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and the man who gains understanding with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Frame of Reference.

- i. There must be Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul for there to be Happiness in life.
 - ii. Without Bible Doctrine in the soul NOTHING can make you happy.
 - iii. If you neglect Bible Doctrine you will not have happiness in your life only a bit of minus H and an emotional hangover after ward.
5. Happiness is related to GRACE Function:

Prov 14:21

v21: The one despising his neighbors sins in miserable, but happinesses to the one he who is gracious to the afflicted from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.

- i. People who are critical of others are always miserable.
 - ii. Who can look down their nose at you for raising hell in life except the Self Righteous jackass who has terrible refined sins only in his own mind far worse than yours but does not even know it.
 - iii. These people are miserable because they continually have their eyes on people.
6. Happiness is related to Status Quo Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

Ps 146:5

v5: Happinesses to the one whose assistance is the God of Jacob in reversion recovery, Whose absolute Confidence is in the Lord his God in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace after recovery.

Prov 16:20

v20: The one who gives heed to doctrine or focus’ his attention on doctrine with application from the word of God will find prosperity or Divine Good , and happinesses to the one who trusts in the LORD using the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) in every situation.

Prov 28:14

v14: Happinesses to the one who keeps on being under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Ultra Super Grace; but the one who hardens his heart in reversionism will fall into EVIL.

7. Happiness is related to a clear Conscience

Rom 14:22-

v22: You there, advancing and mature strong believers, the doctrine which you have and hold, be having it, Bible Doctrine, in an inflexible relationship to yourself in the sight of and before The God; happinesses to the one mature strong believer who is Sharing the Happiness of God, who does not condemn nor judge himself in what he tests and decides through Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to approve.

- i. The doctrine we possess is what gives us our norms and standards which are above the norms and standards of other believers who have not reached our level of spiritual growth.
- ii. Therefore DO NOT JUDGE BELIEVERS for any reason and if you judge others remember that no 2 people ever have achieved the same level of spiritual growth.
- iii. The Ultra Super Grace believer has a minimal rebound problem since MOST of what he does he also approves of.
- iv. It is very interesting to be able to HONESTLY approve what you are doing in light of Bible Doctrine.

8. Happiness is related to the Laws of Divine Establishment

Prov 29:18

v18: Where there is no revelation of Bible Doctrine the people are unrestrained, but happinesses to those who keeps the Laws of Divine Establishment.

- i. Many find happiness by enlisting in the military services
- ii. Many are happy because they are not in Jail and are on the right side of the law.
- iii. If you mind your own business and respect the privacy and property of others not defacing it or stealing it then you are happy as a person who understands the true basis of freedom.

9. Happiness is related to TOTAL military victory over an EVIL nation.

Ps 137:8-9

v8: O daughter of Babylon or Iraq, you devastator, you destroyer, doomed to destruction! How happy will be the one who who pays you off with a payment of total military victory for which you have paid us!

v9: Happinesses to the one who sees you, kills you and dashes your children against the rocks!

- i. There has been a lot of misery based on what happened in Vietnam because it was not a victory.
- ii. The Chaldeans had defeated the Jews and some of them were praying that they would receive the payback of defeat which in fact happened 3 generations later.
- iii. There is actually a happiness as clear as can be imagined in Annihilating an EVIL enemy which should be destroyed.
- iv. If people knew this today, about the evil of the nations such as CHINA and RUSSIA and CUBA and SOUTH VIETNAM, all over the world then believers would know how to pray for communism for the fulfillment of this principle and the happiness of that military organization which Kills Communists or destroys Islam.

10. Happiness is related to national prosperity

Ps 144:15

v15: Happinesses of super-grace to the people who are situated in prosperity of such a status of super-grace! Happinesses to the people whose God is the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ!

- i. Ps 144 v1-14 describes victory in battle, prosperity in the economy and then in v15 it says there are happinesses to the people so situated with victory in battle and prosperity in the economy of their nation.

C. Happiness is related to the Essence of God:

1. God is perfect and his character is perfect and perfect character must possess perfect happiness
2. God has never been unhappy and it is impossible for the Essence of God to contain unhappiness.
3. God has never sinned nor solicited to sin and cannot think evil nor promote evil.
4. God has a perfect sense of humor therefore he cannot be unhappy.
5. This is Happiness of God which is Absolute Happiness without any possibility of being unhappy.
6. And being immutable he cannot change and be unhappy nor tell a lie nor lose control by changing his power nor be unrighteous and he cannot ever be UNHAPPY.
7. In fact God is trying to share his perfect absolute happiness with imperfect beings and HE FOUND A WAY TO DO IT.
8. But this cannot come on a once a year pilgrimage to church but must occur on a day by day basis.
9. Since the believer does not have the capacity for this perfect absolute happiness of God he has found a way to give him this capacity.

Ps 43:4

v4: Then I will go to the altar of God, to God the source of my exceeding happiness who causes me to DANCE in disaster and prosperity; and I will give thanks to you with the Harp, O Elohim, my God.

- i. David's dancing is related to the fact that God has perfect happiness and shares it through the grace principle of the altar.
10. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is happy **1Tim 6:15**

Phil 3:1

v1: Finally, for the rest of it, my brothers, all Philippian believers and all members of the Royal Family of God, all believers who continue under Positive Volition, keep on having the Ultra Super-Grace Inner Absolute Happiness of God, in the Lord under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ. On the one hand, to keep on or go on writing the same things or doctrines to you to your advantage to repeat for you, is not tedious, boring, irksome to me, on the other hand it is for you in the Royal Family of God, a safe guard or security from falling into reversionism and for false teachers and Reverse Process Reversionism

Lesson #61 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:1

- I. The Ultra Super Grace Status Quo:
 - A. Paul has recovered from Jerusalem reversionism and has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and is moving to Ultra Super Grace.
 1. In his first Roman imprisonment he saw the need for declaring that there was an objective in the Christian Way of Life beyond Super Grace which was Ultra Super Grace.
 - B. Ultra Super Grace is the intensification of happiness under maximum pressure from the Cosmic Dynasphere of Satan and is called the Mantle of Pressure.
 1. Here in Chapter 3 Paul has achieved already this final objective of Ultra Super Grace and he now challenges Timothy, who also has recovered from reversionism in Ephesus following the pattern of Paul, to go on to Ultra Super Grace.
 2. The principle is that NO Pastor Teacher can lead his congregation beyond his own spiritual Status Quo and having reached Ultra Super Grace himself Paul now challenges Timothy to continue to that Status Quo.
 - C. There is a great historical moment which occurs in 2Tim 4
 1. v1 is a summary of Phil 3 and 2Tim 3 and in this summary there is shown to us the changing of leadership of the church from Paul to Timothy, from Apostles to Pastor Teachers.
 2. The apostles trained men like Timothy as Pastor Teachers to take over the responsibility for Church Age doctrinal teaching.

3. This is the historical changing of leadership from the age of apostles to the age of Pastor Teachers and this is occurring from one Ultra Super Grace believer to another potential Ultra Super Grace believer.
 4. This is historical in its impact with regard to church history, its objectives and the ultimate concepts in spiritual growth.
 5. Today all Pastor Teachers pass leadership in a local church from one Pastor Teacher to the next generation of Pastor Teachers.
 6. No one can grow in the Spiritual Life without the teaching of his right Pastor Teacher.
 7. In every generation there are those who will grow in the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and become spiritual atlases like Paul, Timothy's Mother, Timothy, etc., and they carry that generation of history.
 8. Some who reach Ultra Super Grace then also impact history continually such as Moses and Paul.
 9. The Super Grace believer is related to history as the salt of the earth and as goes the Super Grace believer so goes the nation into the next generation.
 10. The next generation's success or prosperity does not depend on anything we do to improve their chances for success but it totally depends on their attitude toward Bible Doctrine and the development of the pivot of mature believers in their nation.
 11. In every generation there are those who correctly interpret history based on Metabolized Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and are on the right side of history.
- D. The Wrong Side of History has been our study in 2Tim 3 and in Phil 3 now we will see the **RIGHT SIDE OF HISTORY.**
1. There have been 4 great men who have been stabilizing rods of Human History.
 - i. 2 of them were Ultra Super Grace believers who became stabilizing rods in Human History
 - ii. 2 of them were unbelievers with genius mentality which were oriented totally to reality.
 - a. The unbeliever must relate to Laws of Divine Establishment and function totally under them.
 - iii. The believers must relate to both Laws of Divine Establishment and Bible Doctrine.
 - a. This is a distinct advantage for the mature believer since he has the benefit of function under the Laws of Divine Establishment and Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 2. In the Spiritual Life a believer in his growth may be caught by historical disaster at any time.
 - i. One of the great objectives of Bible Doctrine is to orient the believer to Human History and its trends.
 - ii. We live in history and history and the Angelic Conflict are synonymous terms relating to the Human Race.
 - iii. It is imperative that every member of the Royal Family of God be an interpreter of history and to fail to interpret contemporary history means you are in danger of moving backward in the Spiritual Life into reversionism.
 - iv. When historical disaster and as it is about to occur in our time, reaction to that disaster offsets the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and you DIVE into reversionism.
 - v. We must master parts of Bible Doctrine which deal with interpretation of history in order to avoid this great pitfall of the Spiritual Life.
 - vi. 2Tim 3 and Phil 3 will turn around any outside concepts about interpretation of contemporary history and its trends and how to cope with these trends.
- E. In Phil 2 we have 3 great communicators of Bible Doctrine from early church history:

1. Paul who has reached or is now moving to Ultra Super Grace
 2. Timothy who has recovered reversionism into Super Grace.
 3. Apaphroditis who will not be discussed here.
 4. Without individuals like Paul the apostle and Timothy and Apaphroditis the Pastor Teachers no person can reach any of the objectives of the Spiritual Life.
 - i. Super Grace
 - ii. Ultra Super Grace
 - iii. Dying Grace
 - iv. Carrying Decorations for all eternity which glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - v. All of these objectives are extremely important in the Angelic Conflict and our Spiritual Life.
 5. We know that everyone has a right Pastor Teacher and in v1 now Paul changes the subject from one's right Pastor Teacher to the ultimate objective of the believer in time which is Ultra Super Grace.
 6. Paul cannot take the Royal Family of God beyond his own spiritual growth and he has recovered from reversionism and moved again into Super Grace Status Quo and between his 1st and 2nd imprisonment he went to Ultra Super Grace and as such he is now in position to LEAD all other believers in this direction.
 7. He mentions his objectives in the middle of Phil 3 and we must now get background.
- F. Review the 3 categories of Happiness:
1. Pseudo
 - i. Given by Satan temporarily as a reward for pseudo Super Grace or Pseudo Ultra Super Grace and this happiness when given results in a terrible hangover from the stimulation of that happiness.
 2. Neutral
 - i. This is happiness related to the individual functioning properly under the Laws of Divine Establishment under the principles of freedom, privacy, property, authority and discipline.
 - ii. Freedom is not able to be enjoyed by a large group of people apart from a great deal of self discipline on the part of that people and therefore FREEDOM and DISCIPLINE go hand in hand and are definitely NOT antithetical.
 - iii. This brings a true happiness in life because it is related to Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - iv. Being related to freedom within the Divine Institution #1 where discipline gives the concept of respect for someone else's privacy and property and life and this is one of the greatest happinesses in life that of "minding your own business".
 - a. This is epitomized in Scrooge who was one who minded his own business but was seriously criticized by the liberals.
 - b. He believed in free enterprise and understood the Laws of Divine Establishment and was on the correct side of the law and had his neutral happiness despite Dickens trying to take it away from him.
 - c. Therefore neutral Happiness is perfectly described by "Bah Humbug".
 - d. Dickens was considered a jackass in his own time and outside of the Tale of 2 Cities no aristocrat of his time considered him of any significance and was considered a jackass on the part of all those who were oriented to the Laws of Divine Establishment and aristocracy in England.
 - e. The liberals today in English literature classes glorifies Dickens and never mentions Thackeray who was very much establishment oriented.
 - v. Neutral Happiness is also related to Divine Institution #2 where there is Right Man / Right Woman concepts in Marriage.
 - vi. Neutral Happiness is also related to Divine Institution #3 Family where the parents lead the children and not vice versa

- vii. Neutral Happiness is also found of course in all phases of a national entity who functions properly under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
- 3. Plus
 - i. This is God's absolute perfect happiness and in the Spiritual Life and in this passage it means to have Sharing the Happiness of God as part of the blessing package of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
 - ii. In effect it tells us that in the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace status the Happiness of God is shared by these believers.
- G. Phil 3:1a is the first command to perpetuate the Super Grace in your Spiritual Life of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and continue in the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - 1. The only thing we need in life is Sharing the Happiness of God and we must work on this every day in the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - 2. The result of continued function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is advance to that objective where God shares his happiness with the believer.
 - 3. In construction of the Edification Complex of the Soul the TOP floor is Sharing the Happiness of God and this moves the believer into the Status Quo of Super Grace where he has his Super Grace package of blessing in 5 categories.
 - i. The blessings of these 5 categories is enhanced by the spiritual blessing of Sharing the Happiness of God.
 - 4. As a result of getting to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and having Sharing the Happiness of God the believer is now prepared and has organized a BASE by which he can advance to the next and highest stage of the Spiritual Life, Ultra Super Grace.
 - i. From Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace the final aspect of life is therefore dying grace.
 - 5. In each of these final stages of the Spiritual Life Super Grace, Ultra Super Grace and Dying Grace the Sharing the Happiness of God which the believer possesses in intensified by Bible Doctrine in Super Grace, Bible Doctrine and suffering in Ultra Super Grace and by Bible Doctrine and dying in dying grace.
 - 6. This results in intensification of happiness to the point where by the time you are dying you can hardly stand to be in a human body and have all this happiness and are glad to be dying and enjoying everything very much and MUST have some better environment to enjoy the intensification of happiness you have.
 - 7. The intensification of blessing occurs in:
 - i. Super Grace you have Metabolized Bible Doctrine and Sharing the Happiness of God
 - ii. Ultra Super Grace you have Metabolized Bible Doctrine Sharing the Happiness of God and maximum Suffering
 - iii. Dying grace you have Metabolized Bible Doctrine Sharing the Happiness of God and Dying
 - iv. In this way you have incredible intensification of blessing and happiness
 - v. By the time you get to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and realize that this is simply a staging area for the next phase of the Spiritual Life which is Ultra Super Grace and as you move from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace through No Man's Land to Ultra Super Grace your life begins to change radically in that your happiness does not depend on the things of life.
 - vi. You will realize that your happiness does not depend on:
 - a. Wealth – though you will have it.

- b. Prosperity – though you will have it
 - c. Promotion - though you will have it
 - d. or any other thing of life - though you will have it
- vii. By the time you reach Ultra Super Grace you will have the highest honor from God which he can give in time which is the mantle of total opposition from satanic forces which only intensifies the blessings of the Super Grace package of blessing.
- viii. This then becomes a staging area for the final blessing of the Spiritual Life which is Dying Grace as Paul underwent in 2Tim 4
- ix. For Paul this is the most fantastic thing in life, he has had all he can stand in life for his happiness factor is so intensified he could not live with it and our nervous system is not constructed for it so Paul had to leave this life and get to heaven and his Resurrection Body which can handle it.
- 8. Happiness of God shared with the believer is not only a characteristic of the Super Grace life but is also a more intensive characteristic of both Ultra Super Grace and Dying Grace and is a stabilizing base or regrouping area to advance to the next stage of the Spiritual Life.

II. Doctrine of Happiness Continued:

- A. Review the first points of the Doctrine in the Previous lesson notes.
 - 1. With regard to Peter as an apostle he was a Super Grace believer but his congregation did not keep up with his advance since his leadership was not very good.
 - 2. He was not a great apostle and as a Super Grace believer in 2Peter he indicated that he was having difficulty with the doctrines of Paul and as a result as a Super Grace believer he could not reach Ultra Super Grace.
 - i. In 1Pet 3:14- He recognizes the failure of his congregation and of his own ministry.
 - ii. The greatest leader of the Spiritual Life in all Human History is Paul.
 - 3. Happiness is also related to TOTAL military victory and in our past history we have not achieved this.
 - i. We failed in Vietnam to achieve any victory and the limited victory we have had in the middle east is ongoing and we must realize that WE MUST TOTALLY DEFEAT COMMUNISM AND ISLAM IN ORDER TO SURVIVE AS A NATION.
 - ii. These people are animals overrunning the world.
- B. Happiness is related to the Plan of God.
 - 1. In as much as God possesses perfect eternal happiness he desires to share this happiness with man.
 - i. In Eternity Past God in his omniscient genius God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit held a conference where God the Father came up with the plan of Grace which found a way to give Sharing the Happiness of God to imperfect man and this is the grace operation and if is able to function without compromise to any aspect of the Essence of God.

Ps 97:12

v12: Be happy in the Lord oh Ones with imputed righteousness and give thanks for the memory of his holiness, the Integrity of God, the Righteousness of God and Justice of God the basis for his love and happiness toward us.

- ii. The happiness of God is related to his having perfect Absolute Righteousness which gives capacity for this Absolute Happiness.
- iii. On the cross propitiation paved the way for the ability of the Plan of God to function properly.

- iv. The Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice of God are the parts of the Essence of God which are potentially compromised by God saving or blessing mankind in any way.
 - v. Man is a sinner, spiritually dead, capable of all sorts of evil, is under the domain of Satan and is saturated from birth because of Adam with the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and these are the 2 things which man cannot bring to God to have a relationship with him and all of this could compromise the Righteousness of God.
 - vi. The Righteousness of God is not compromised because on the cross Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ having Absolute Righteousness and receiving the imputation and judgment of all human sin satisfied God the Father his Absolute Righteousness and Absolute Justice so that God by way of this cross can give to us Eternal Life and bring us into his Grace Plan of God without any compromise to his essence.
 - vii. When we come to the cross with faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone and one of these is the base for our ability to share the happiness of God upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and that is the Absolute Righteousness imputed to us as Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - viii. If we are going to live with God forever we must have Eternal Life as God has and Absolute Righteousness as God has and he has provided all of this for any human being who makes Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
 - ix. It is absolutely impossible to hang around heaven without Eternal Life or without Absolute Righteousness.
 - x. Because of the efficacy of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross God give to us Eternal Life and Absolute Righteousness
 - a. It would be a terrible thing to have life perpetuated in Spiritual Death which was why Eden was closed down and 2 cherubs guard the entrance to it even to today so no one could eat from the Tree of Lives while spiritually dead.
 - xi. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he gave us Eternal Life and Absolute Righteousness and the Absolute Righteousness is the basis for our incredible happiness in time when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - xii. We will never have an acceptable righteousness of our own in time and we will never be perfect in time in eternity we will be perfect in a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature minus Human Good.
 - xiii. NO ONE ever achieves perfection in time **1John 1:8+10** and anyone who claims to not sin is a LIAR and has NO DOCTRINE.
 - xiv. We will always sin as long as we live in this body and therefore there is no way to have happiness and a ragged righteousness which is shot full of holes by SIN.
 - a. ***Just looking as some people makes us want to sin but we resist the temptation as much as possible.***
 - xv. The important thing for every believer in every congregation is to concentrate on the Bible Doctrine being taught and ignore the people sinning along with us.
2. Because of having the imputed Absolute Righteousness of God we can have happiness when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and have a maximum of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- i. {(ff) in other studies the Col described spiritual growth as the accumulation of the thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ which is bible doctrine our own Stream

- of Consciousness of the Soul and this results in building up an accumulation of Absolute Justice so that we can have something equivalent to the Integrity of God in our souls; He give to us by imputation his perfect righteousness and we by consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine acquire his Absolute Justice to complete our possession of the Integrity of God}
- ii. Having this Absolute Righteousness given to us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we have the basis for Sharing the Happiness of God when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and if we move on to Ultra Super Grace this is intensified beyond our imagination.
3. We must also have Absolute Righteousness at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God because what we think is even worse with what we do and there is something much worse than overt sinning.
 - i. We must understand imputed sin, inherent sin and the 3 categories of personal sin and must realize what the 7 worst sins are as well.
 - ii. In the Old Sin Nature there is an area of weakness which produces personal sins in 3 categories
 - a. Mental Attitude Sins
 - b. Verbal Sins
 - c. Overt Sins
 - d. All of these sins were judged on the cross by the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. In the Old Sin Nature there is also an area of strength which produces Human Good and Evil.
 - a. Evil was not judged on the cross and was rejected on the cross and neither evil nor Human Good were part of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i) These 2 have to remain in effect EVIL being the plan and policy of the genius of Satan and Human Good being the production of those who function under EVIL because they are the basis for the CHOICE of all human beings in resolving the Angelic Conflict.
 - ii) Man must choose between the Plan of God by faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone or the Plan of Satan by rejection of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - b. Good and Evil are perpetuated throughout Human History as the major issue in the Angelic Conflict and were therefore NOT judged in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - iv. A believer as part of the Royal Family of God committing ANY sin no matter how heinous that sin may appear to be to others can recover from that sin as quickly as he can name or cite that sin to God personally.
 - a. This is the rebound procedure given us by God as a result of ALL SIN being judge previously in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross.
 - b. This results in instant forgiveness and cleansing from all unknown or forgotten sins and it results in recovery of Filling of God the Holy Spirit and return to spirituality.
4. The dangerous thing in the Spiritual Life is what Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ warned us about and he said that we should not fear the one who can destroy the body but beware of the one who can destroy the soul.
 - i. Satan himself ruler of this world is the one who can destroy the soul and he does not use sin for this purpose.

- a. SIN is not part of the Plan or Policy of Satan and is as embarrassing to Satan as it is to each of us and is the result of the Spiritual Death of man and his being outside the Plan of God.
 - b. Satan has been trying to eliminate sin since he took over the world and he never encouraged Adam and Ishah to SIN he told them to PUT CLOTHING ON and this was Human Good and tried to get them into Self Righteousness and was very disappointed when they committed their first personal sin after the fall
 - c. Since that time he has been trying to build up some sort of Morality in order to bring in a pseudo millennium of his own but has not been able to do so.
- ii. What Satan wants is to capture the soul of man and to do so with knowledge of his plan and policy, EVIL.
- a. Evil is what you think as satanic doctrine and policy, it is bleeding heart liberal do good functions, congressional law, violation of freedoms like the 2nd amendment rights, bureaucratic regulations, environmental regulations for vehicular emissions, regulations of business, OSHA which is evil and a farce.
 - b. Evil is the great problem today and to the extent that our government follows the line of EVIL concepts to that extent we are in great trouble.
 - c. Evil is our government trying to feed the entire world and is the farmer is told to plant grain to feed the world including our enemies with and not feed cattle with it.
 - d. Evil is the destruction of the military by giving budget monies to welfare recipients and not our military.
 - i) In addition to the monies which are in that budget to arm our military it includes money to send arms to other countries including our ENEMIES and potential enemies.
 - e. EVERYWHERE you turn in life you face EVIL the plan of Satan to bring to mankind peace and the millennium.
 - f. In a republic as a form of government the voting franchise MUST be limited to the responsible individuals so that voting MEN in the republic were those who had military service or were business owners and this was ROME and we in the United States of America started this way but now we are under evil functions and are no longer a republic but a socialistic democracy having defied our constitution.
 - g. EVIL is the extension in the suffrage movement of our franchise to anyone outside of property owners, military veterans and business owners.
 - h. EVIL is when we allowed females to vote then children of age 18 and above and welfare recipients.
 - i. The greatest good a congress could do at any given congressional beginning would be to NOT PASS any law for at least 4 years and repeal most laws passed since the end of World War I.
 - j. Evil is the whole women's lib movement which is destroying our entire society and the woman is and has simply become FEMALE.
 - k. EVIL DESTROYS the soul and is WHAT YOU THINK and this is the most dangerous thing in the world.
 - l. Evil is the policy of Satan and the FAILURE Of this policy to work out the way he wants it to work out.
 - m. Evil is the destroyer of happiness though it talks constantly about happiness with the "common wheel", "the greatest good for the greatest number", sacrificing freedom to help the downtrodden.

- iii. FREEDOM is much more valuable than the down trodden and if they and some of the “oppressed” races in this nation even understood freedom they would be further along.
 - a. **IN A FREE SOCIETY YOU MUST PROVE YOURSELF AND THE SOCIETY DOES NOT EVER REACH DOWN AND HELP YOU.**
 - b. The exception is the function of personal charity which is always taught in the bible but is NEVER part of government functions and welfare is NOT charity.
- iv. It has taken us 243 years to destroy what our founding fathers had tried to establish in this country and become just another mixed up satanic functioning nation.
 - a. Bible Doctrine is the only stop gap in the past and can be again.
- 5. Bible Doctrine is related to the Plan of God and completes the Absolute Righteousness given us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God **Ps 97:12, Hab 3:18**
 - i. All the deliverance of man in the Plan of God occurs through Bible Doctrine and the Plan of God is designed to function on Bible Doctrine because the great issue in the Angelic Conflict is WHAT YOU THINK.
 - ii. The woman fell because she could not think straight having rejected authority of her husband, Bible Doctrine and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ their teacher.
 - iii. The Man fell because he could think straight but wanted the woman.
 - iv. What you think is the KEY issue.
 - v. “As a man thinks in his Right Lobe, so he is”.
 - vi. Thinking is the issue and what is in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the issue.
 - vii. The ISSUE is always Bible Doctrine vs Evil in the soul and the individual’s soul is the battleground of the Angelic Conflict.
 - viii. There can be NO TRUE happiness without correct thinking and the only way for that to occur is the consistent daily intake of Bible Doctrine.
- 6. The entrance into the Plan of God is through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone after having heard and understood the doctrine of the gospel of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. Every person who enters the Plan of God had the potential for the greatest happiness in the world but this is based on spiritual growth

Ps 9:14

v14: that I, a super-grace believer, may extol or tell all of your praises, total awareness and understanding of your essence, that in the castle gates of the daughters of Zion I may be happy in your deliverance.

Neh 12:43

- ii. We must relate the characteristics of the Essence of God to the Divine Discipline and how they all apply to our life in time.
 - iii. All of this is related to our potential for happiness in this life.
- C. The happiness of God for the believer is accomplished through the Grace of God.
- 1. The Grace Plan of God is the means by which God can give to us the perfect happiness he has designed for us.

Ps 31:7

v7: I will rejoice and be happy in your grace and steadfast love because you have seen my affliction and you have taken heed of the troubles of my soul, my adversities.

- 2. God found a way to share the Happiness of God with the believers in time without compromise to any part of his essence and GRACE happiness comes through the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

Ps 32:10-11

v10: Many are the sufferings, woes and disciplines of the believer guilty of degeneration involved in arrogance or reversionism of persistent carnality or both thus guilty of evil, controlled by the Old Sin Nature who resists Bible

Doctrine and are under intensive Divine Discipline; but steadfast love or GRACE surrounds him who trusts in or slams his problems onto the LORD.

v11: Rejoice and possess inner happiness in noncompetitive relaxation without arrogance in the LORD, and be caused to have overt happiness and celebrate, believers with integrity of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and shout for joy or celebrate, all you spiritually self sustaining believers with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul!

3. There is no way to be happy in reversionism since the Status Quo of the soul offsets any potential for happiness circumstances.
 - i. The source of happiness is the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and happiness must be related to the structure of the soul.

Ps 33:4-5

v4: For the Doctrine of the Lord is Integrity or Righteous in the believer and all of his Provision is in truth or faithfulness or Justice

v5: He (GOD) keeps on loving Righteousness and Justice as Integrity, the earth, therefore, is full of the Grace or Integrity or Unfailing or Steadfast Love of the Lord.

- ii. The Righteousness of God and Justice of God are part of the distribution of happiness to us.
 - iii. The means of transfer of Sharing the Happiness of God from the Righteousness of God and Justice of God to us is the Grace of God.
4. Since happiness is accomplished through grace it is accomplished for the believer through function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception whereby the believer accumulates maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - i. Sharing the Happiness of God must have a starting point and that is Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and therefore there is no way for God to give to you this great blessing of happiness apart from his plan which begins at the cross with Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. The Plan of God begins at the cross and his Sharing the Happiness of God begins at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and between these is a phenomenal amount of self discipline and taking in Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and at Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God God shares his happiness with you.

Lesson #62 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:1

- I. The Objective of Super Grace
 - A. Priority Perspective of Ultra Super Grace v1-8
 - B. Parenthesis on Grace Orientation as means of attainment v9-12
 - C. Next Objective after Super Grace – Ultra Super Grace v12-19
 - D. Final Objective dying Grace and surpassing grace v20-21
- II. Doctrine of Happiness Continued:
 - A. The first taste for the believer of Sharing the Happiness of God is found at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God with the Filling of God the Holy Spirit. **Gal 5:22, Rom 14:17, 1Thes 1:6**
 1. This experience of Sharing the Happiness of God is very limited because of lack of capacity for it because of lack of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - i. Until one has capacity for happiness the existence of happiness is not meaningful and can be misconstrued and it is therefore imperative as quickly as possible to ensure that there is a balance of residence in the soul from the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 2. We start with the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but minus doctrine and the means of attaining is in **John 17:13 + 17, 1John 1:4**

- i. This was Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ talking just prior to completing his purpose on earth.
- ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ emphasized in the closing months of his ministry that God the Father had found a way to share his happiness with man and this can and will be shared by those under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine.
- iii. The happiness is fulfilled through intake of Bible Doctrine.
- iv. The writing of Bible Doctrine in the scripture and communicating of Bible Doctrine by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the means by which the happiness of God is transferred from his perfect essence to out soul in time and this is the GREAT gift of God to the Royal Family of God.

B. Happiness is the Status Quo of the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believer.

Neh 8:10

v10: Then he said to them, "Go your way, eat the fat and drink sweet wine and send portions to him for whom nothing is prepared; for this day is holy to our Lord; and do not be grieved, for the joy of the LORD is your strength or power."

2Tim

Ps 30:5

v5: For his anger of Divine Discipline for the reversionist lasts only for a moment, but results in a lifetime of grace benefit. Weeping of reversionism may endure for a, or pass in, the night but the celebrating happiness of Super-Grace comes in the dawn or morning, the JOY or Sharing the Happiness of the lord is your strength.

Ps 30:11

v11: You have converted my mourning of Divine Discipline from reversionistic into dancing for me; you have torn off my humble situation, my sackcloth or misery of living and clothed me with the Absolute Happiness of God.

Phil 4:4

v4: Keep on having and Sharing the perfect Happiness of God by means of the Lord at all times, once more I repeat the command, keep on having and Sharing the Happiness of God.

1Pet 1:8

v8: Even though you have not seen him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, yet you love him, and though you do not see him now but believe in him you greatly rejoice with happiness inexpressible and full of Glory

1. The Happiness of God for the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace is the power or strength of the believer in time.
2. Review the categories of Happiness
3. Happiness is recovered for the reversionist when he recovers from reversionism and reaches Super Grace again.
4. This has been fulfilled for every person who has been under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine for any length of time and made progress in the Spiritual Life and then lapsed into reversionism and recovered.
5. We will have continued happiness if we maintain our Status Quo in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and we will continue beyond Super Grace Status Quo if we continue to move toward and into Ultra Super Grace.
6. We express Sharing the Happiness of God in Super Grace Status Quo when we recognize the grace majesty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and express our love for him.
7. Happiness inexpressible is the Status Quo of Super Grace and moving on to GLORY is the Status Quo of Ultra Super Grace in 1Pet 1:8
8. Therefore Happiness because of Sharing the Happiness of God is the Status Quo of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.

C. Happiness is related to blessing

1. The word for blessing is generally found in scripture in the plural to emphasize this concept.
2. (heb) ashere == happinesses, (gr) makarioi == blessings
3. The plural connotes that the Super Grace blessing package has numerous categories of blessings:

- i. Spiritual
- ii. Temporal
- iii. Association
- iv. Historical
- v. Dying

D. Sharing the Happiness of God protects the believer from disillusion

- 1. There are many kinds of disillusion:
 - i. With the circumstances of life **Phil 4:11-12**

Phil 4:11

v11: Not because I am speaking with reference to poverty, lack, adversity or need for I have come to know, learned through instruction from Bible Doctrine, in whatever circumstances I am, to keep on being self sufficient with contentment.

Phil 4:12

v12: In fact, I have come to know, during my reversion recovery, both how to live in helpless humiliation, shame, degradation, debasement or adversity from reversionism and Charlie Logistical Grace of Divine Discipline of the past; also, I have come to know or experienced how to live and function in success or in prosperity of the 5 categories of Super-Grace blessings in the present, in every place and in all circumstances; I have been initiated by understanding the doctrines and policies of God, instructed in the past with the result that this instruction stays with me, having learned the secret both of how to be well fed, filled or face plenty being saturated with Metabolized Bible Doctrine, and how to hunger desiring more and more Bible Doctrine leading to Ultra Super-Grace, and how to prosper and be in abundance in Super-Grace and how to be in lacking the Ultra Super-Grace Status Quo.

- a. Many Christian holidays are the time for epigrams which are totally meaningless such as the “family which prays together stays together” and many others.
- b. The unfortunate thing about this is that it causes the meaning of the holiday to be totally lost and the very purpose for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ allowing us to see one and another and another Christmas holiday.
- c. We are permitted to see many of these holiday times because our soul is the basis for the battles of the Angelic Conflict and Bible Doctrine MUST be amassed in the soul for any day like Christmas to be meaningful.
- d. For any day to be meaningful the believer must accumulate Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- ii. It was not easy for Paul to learn that our circumstances are meaningless and we must retain the Happiness of God in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine at all times.
 - a. This is greater than all the circumstances of life.
 - b. We must know how to live in degradation and prosperity as Paul did being in jail and in prosperity.
 - c. What we must learn is that it does not depend on circumstances of life and living but on the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - d. When we pass the testing of **Phil 4:11-12** we will have fantastic circumstances.
- iii. Adults who use Christmas for the principle of giving are not adjusted to life in general never grow up and are emotional cripples.
 - a. You will be disillusioned about details of life if you don’t get what you thought you should get for Christmas or any other time.

Heb 13:5-6

v5: Let your way of life be free from the lust patterns of the Old Sin Nature or love for money, power, details of life etc; keep on being content with what you possess for he himself has said in the past with the result that it stands written forever “I will never abandon or desert you or neither will I ever forsake or desert you Deut 31:8 Isaiah”.

v6: so that being bold or confident with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul We say the Lord is my helper in Logistical Grace and I will not be afraid of anything in life or death, or what man will do to me”.

2. Our lifestyle must be freed from depending on the accoutrements of life in any category.
 - i. Keep on being content with what you possess for the Lord will never abandon us as members of the Royal Family of God.
 - ii. This is advance of the believer to Ultra Super Grace and the mantle of opposition.
 - iii. There is insulation and protection from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul with regard to the details of life.

Heb 12:2

v2: Be concentrating on (the humanity of) Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ our prince ruler, even the one who brings the attainment of Super-Grace, Ultra Super-Grace, Dying Grace, and Surpassing Grace objectives, the originator and perfecter of our doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of his Soul, who because of his exhibited the Absolute Happiness of God he endured the cross disregarding or despising the shame and he has sat down in the past with the result he remains seated at the right hand of the throne of God the Father the highest place of honor

3. Someone at some time will make you miserable at Christmas time or on any other celebratory holiday
 - i. Our efforts must be in concentration on Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the objectives of the Spiritual Life being Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace and dying Grace.
 4. Sharing the Happiness of God protects from disenchantment and disillusion in every aspect of life.
- E. Sharing the Happiness of God stimulates and enhances capacity for love.
1. No everyone is born with or acquires a sense of humor and some go through life without ever even remotely getting a sense of humor.
 - i. A true sense of humor is a fantastic thing but there are many types of false senses of humor.
 2. Happiness is a wonderful protection in life even better than a sense of humor and it stimulates and enhances all capacities in life.
 3. You can survive without that which is related to capacity for life ONLY if you have Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is the true secret to capacity for the believer.
 4. In the Edification Complex of the Soul the 4th floor is Capacity for Love
 - i. Toward God – **Luke 22:19, 1Cor 11:24-25**
 - ii. Toward Right Man or Right Woman **SS 3;1, 4:6, 8:6**
 - iii. Toward Friends **Phil 1:3, 2Tim 1:5**
 - iv. This is based on our possession of the Happiness of God which is based on our Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - v. If we are Sharing the Happiness of God we have spiritual advance and with spiritual advance we will thus have capacity for every category of life and the ability to go through life without disillusion or disenchantment and without becoming subjective and hypersensitive and without reacting to anything in life.
 - vi. The fortifier and strengthener of the believer is then maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- F. There is a future happiness beyond Super Grace and a greater use of Sharing the Happiness of God in Ultra Super Grace. **Phil 3:1**
1. Surpassing Grace happiness **Jude 24**
- G. Millennial Happiness for Israel **Is 35:1-2, 64:4-5, 65:18-19 66:10**
- H. Human Happiness:
1. There are 2 categories of Human happiness open to and practiced by both unbeliever and believers.

- i. Neutral Happiness – a legitimate happiness related to function under the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - a. Unbeliever in their Right Man / Right Woman relationship can have sex happiness **Eccl 9:9**
 - b. There are 2 things which can give temporary happiness to the unbeliever
 - i) Sex
 - ii) Enjoying your job.
 - iii) Even though the unbeliever can have this legitimate happiness all his life, his life is one of vapor here today and gone tomorrow.
 - iv) This is happiness which takes the unbeliever no where.
 - c. The unbeliever can have happiness of youth, **Eccl 11:8-9**
 - d. Unfortunately for the unbeliever all they have to anticipate is eventual Judgment from God and the Lake of Fire as the result and no happiness can stand up to this.
 - e. Children can bring happiness as well to the parents when they turn out right but this is a temporary happiness and parents cannot ever build their happiness on their children.
- ii. Minus Happiness – a temporary superficial pleasure in life related to relationship with Satan and is very stimulating and is followed by great misery and it depends on and leans on pleasant environment and details of life and stimulating circumstances and having your own way and never being opposed in any thing.
 - a. This is easily shattered and destroyed by boredom, restlessness, frustration, instability and it vanishes rapidly.
 - b. It does not sustain in any catastrophe and is removed and replaced by great misery in catastrophe.
 - c. This was temporary happiness from taking advantage of or defeating Israel.

2Sam 1:19-20

- I. The negative principles of happiness
 - 1. You cannot build your happiness on the unhappiness of another
 - 2. You cannot build your happiness on the details of life.
 - i. Money, success, promotion, pleasure, social life, friends, relatives, health, sex, etc.
 - 3. You cannot build your happiness on pleasant environment
 - 4. You cannot build your happiness on people you love
 - 5. You cannot build your happiness on Sex
 - 6. You cannot build your happiness on fame or celebrityship.
 - 7. You cannot build your happiness on Overthrow of establishment by violence or revolution.
 - 8. You cannot build your happiness on the lust pattern of the Old Sin Nature.
- J. The Positive Principle of happiness
 - 1. You can build your happiness on the balance of residence in the soul of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine
 - 2. You can build your happiness on the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception erecting the altar of the soul and establishing the command post in the soul of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 3. You can build your happiness on by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and moving on to Ultra Super Grace and to dying grace and forever thereafter having surpassing grace blessings and rewards.
 - 4. You can build your happiness by glorifying God in both time and eternity by receiving maximum blessings from God.

5. You can build your happiness on holding the high ground of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace against evil and refraining from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.
6. You can build your happiness on the Laws of Divine Establishment as an unbeliever or believer
 - i. These do not allow traitors to one's country, conscientious objectors or Criminals who can never have happiness.

K. The happy person provides blessing for others as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace by association and as a dying grace believer.

Phil 2:28-29, Phil 7, Rom 16:32, 1Cor 16:17

1. The doctrine of refreshment is part of blessing by association.
2. Refreshing company is the company of believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace or under dying grace.
3. When a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is undergoing dying grace you can receive great blessing by association with their death.

L. The happy nation has both a spiritual and military heritage

Ps 89:15-17

v15: Happinesses to the people or nation who keep knowing from one generation to the next, the sound or blast of the trumpet in universal military training, Oh Jehovah, they shall march and advance while concentrating and thinking in discipline in the light or doctrine of your face or countenance,

v16: They shall express happiness in your person all day long from Occupation with the Person of Christ, and in your righteousness of the Laws of Divine Establishment they shall be exalted.

v17: For you, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, are the object of glorying of their power of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul; because by your Grace You will cause us to be promoted.

1. There will never be a generation where the military does not play a dominant role in the life of the nation.
2. The nation who possesses believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace is the one whose heritage is perpetuated in blessing.

III. Principles:

- A. Strong emphasis should be placed on the importance of Cat I Love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ "in the lord"
 1. You cannot love God apart from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 2. No one can no God apart from capacity for love and apart from knowing God and no one can know God without maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- B. As goes Cat I Love so goes capacity for all other categories of love.
- C. As goes Cat I Love so goes response to authority and teaching of one's right Pastor Teacher.
- D. The real issue in life is not your Cat II or III love life but Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ under Cat I love in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- E. There is no problem in recognition of the authority of the Pastor Teacher or responding to bible teaching where the believer with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 1. He has objectivity where the message of the Pastor Teacher is his object of his concentration and he is not in any way deterred or distracted or irritated nor does he become a reactor to Bible Doctrine because of the personality of the Pastor Teacher.
 2. Personality nor stereotyped personality is NEVER an issue.
- F. There is a sense where bible teaching is the way a Pastor Teacher makes love to his congregation
- G. The congregation responds through strict academic discipline, Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, concentration under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit, self Discipline, academic discipline, concentration, objectivity, poise, good manners and indefatigable persistence in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

- H. The right congregation is like the right woman, an empty vessel waiting to be filled with Bible Doctrine.
 - 1. This Bible Doctrine leads to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Ultra Super Grace and dying grace.
 - I. In this way the Ultra Super Grace Pastor Teacher can bring his congregation to the point of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the achievement of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 1. The Pastor Teacher therefore through the teaching of Bible Doctrine brings the congregation to his level of spiritual Status Quo.
 - 2. No congregation can exceed the Spiritual Level of the Pastor Teacher of the congregation.
- IV. Paul is writing this passage as all others under the verbal plenary inspiration ministry of God the Holy Spirit.
- A. Correlation:
 - 1. Phil 3 is to Apostle Paul what 2Tim 3 is to Pastor Teacher Timothy.
 - 2. Paul went through reversionism and recovered under intensive Divine Discipline
 - 3. We recovered to Status Quo Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and writes as a believer in Super Grace advancing toward Ultra Super Grace.
 - 4. He arrived here shortly after the prison epistles and in his 4th missionary journey he was an Ultra Super Grace believer and in writing 2Tim 3 he was dying and had achieved Ultra Super Grace and was in Status Quo of Dying Grace.
 - 5. He sees in Timothy the one who will succeed him the potential for Ultra Super Grace as well
 - 6. This is the changing of the guard where Apostles fade out and Pastor Teacher comes in as the CHIEF communicators of Bible Doctrine in the Church Age and the basis for leading people to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - 7. Timothy has followed Paul exactly he has fallen into reversionism and recovered into the Status Quo of Super Grace and the implication is that he is ON the way to reaching Ultra Super Grace.
 - 8. Thus the changing of church leadership is from one Ultra Super Grace apostle to one potential Ultra Super Grace Pastor Teacher.
 - B. The category of Bible Doctrine covered in this chapter is the objective of Ultra Super Grace in the Spiritual Life.
 - 1. Paul is writing in the interest of his generation and all believers in the Church Age thereafter.
 - 2. It is for us and every believer in the Church Age essential to learn these doctrines in order to safe guard us from falling into reversionism.
 - C. This passage is a safe guard passage which has as its objective Ultra Super Grace dealing with the objective after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and acting as a safeguard for the Spiritual Life preventing falling into reversionism.

Phil 3:1

v1: Finally, for the rest of it, my brothers, all Philippian believers and all members of the Royal Family of God, all believers who continue under Positive Volition, keep on having the Ultra Super-Grace Inner Absolute Happiness of God, in the Lord under positional sanctification and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ. On the one hand, for me to keep on or go on writing the same things or doctrines to you to your advantage to repeat for you, is not tedious, boring, irksome to me, while on the other hand it is for you in the Royal Family of God, a safe guard or security from falling into reversionism and for false teachers and Reverse Process Reversionism

Lesson #63 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:2

- I. Freedom through military victory:
 - A. Forrest E Peden, Tech Sgt, Battery C, 10th Field Artillery, 3rd Infantry Division 13, Feb 1946,

B. Jack J Pendelton Staff Sgt, I Company, 120th Infantry 3rd Infantry Division, 12 Oct 1944, Bardenberg Germany.

II. Reaching Ultra Super Grace after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

A. You DO NOT have to have suffering to get to Ultra Super Grace you have to have a maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul

1. When you get to Ultra Super Grace by the intake of more and more Bible Doctrine THEN God gives you the mantle of opposition but it is not ALL KINDS of suffering it is opposition from Satan Day by Day which intensifies the blessing you have.
2. You don't SUFFER in order to get there.
3. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is NOT a high plateau with rarefied atmosphere where you sit and contemplate infinity.
4. You keep moving, keep moving after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
5. When you get to Ultra Super Grace you receive the mantle of opposition from Satan which surrounds you and presses you every day but only enhances your blessing.

B. There is an analogy:

1. There is the Status Quo for males to be Super Bachelor or Ultra Super Bachelor
2. In the Status Quo of super bachelor there is a prolonged experience with great fun and great company of great girls.
3. In the Status Quo of Ultra Super Bachelor it is the condition of being surrounded all the time by absolutely Gorgeous Berachah Ladies at all times.
 - i. (Forget it Jeff you won't have enough time to make it)

C. Once you pass over the line of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God but there are DEGREES of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

1. For the Ultra Super Grace believer someone who has just reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is a baby.
2. So you just keep pressing forward in the Spiritual Life with more and more Bible Doctrine.
3. You will have testing and attempts to distract you and put you into reversionism and it will be intensive testing to keep you from Ultra Super Grace and your Super Grace blessing package will be merged with your Logistical Grace support to provide support for you in this Status Quo as you continue to move ahead.
4. The pressure will come from the satanic systems and from both Human and Angelic pressures and this pressure ONLY intensifies your Super Grace blessing package.
5. Once you reach Super Grace Status Quo and continue to move on your happiness keeps getting better and better and when you reach Ultra Super Grace the happiness is so great you can hardly stand it.

III. Opposition to those moving from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace.

A. Once you get to Super Grace and move toward Ultra Super Grace you will receive intensive pressure from opposition but it will not be extreme and not be continuous.

1. In the ancient world the Horse was the noblest of animals and available to very few and DOGS were like Hyenas are today and the worst animal in the ancient world.

B. Summary:

1. The Phrase Dogs does not refer to the canine quadruped we love today but Dogs refers to the biped judiazers
2. The bible must be interpreted in the time of writing.
3. In the time of writing Phil 3 regarding dogs they were an animal which were only regarded with contempt whether they were in the city or country.
 - i. The dogs of the ancient world were always in packs and always hungry and were very vicious and carried all the animal diseases so that people frequently died from hydrophobia and it was a painful death and therefore dogs were not admired at all.

4. Dog was used in the ancient world as it is today in a very derogatory sense.
 - i. Bitch refers to a female dog and by itself and with other words it is also a derogatory term
 - ii. The dog was and is used to convey derogatory concepts and Jews called Gentiles Dogs.
 - iii. This was a universal understanding in the ancient world.
5. Jews called the gentiles dogs in the nomenclature of derision and in a derogatory sense.
6. Basically the Dog of the ancient world was a scavenger and by nature unclean and carried disease and other creatures who carried diseases.
7. At the same time the dog of the 1st century was semi wild eating garbage, carrion, refuse, about anything.
8. Just as dogs fed on garbage and dead bodies so the Judiazers fed on principles and doctrines of Evil therefore Paul calls them scavengers of theology.
9. Just as rabid dogs infected others so the Judiazers infected Paul's world wide congregations following him and constantly tried to insert legalism where Paul had taught Grace.
 - i. They infected with reversionism and evil
10. The Dog cannot be better than his own nature so the Judiazers cannot exceed the content of EVIL in their souls.
11. While the judiazers passed themselves off as religious celebrities Paul under the power of God the Holy Spirit using spiritual language called them out as Dogs, Scavengers, Traveling in Packs and providing opposition for Paul.
 - i. While they were a part of the great mantel of opposition and he could stand and meet their opposition his congregations could not.
12. Therefore we have the warning "Beware of Those Dogs" and this indicates the personality and essence of Judiazers who constantly opposed Paul.

C. Doctrine of Dogs

1. Will Dogs go to Heaven
 - i. Based on the speculative concept of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ returning on a Great White Horse if the Jug head Horse is in heaven then we should have Puppies there too.
2. Biblical References to the Canine Quadrupeds are derogatory.
 - i. It is not true that dogs make better friends than people and when you say this you are disoriented to life
 - a. {OH SHIT FOR ME}.
 - b. Dogs are represented in scripture as cowardly, evil or insignificant.
 - c. The Dog in scripture is the epitome reference of insignificance.
 - d. People kept dogs as guards but they did not make pets out of them like we do.
 - ii. Goliath facing David,
 - a. Goliath Razzed David and could not believe that this little shepherd was going to take him on and attack him and said to David, "Am I a Dog that you come to me with sticks" **1Sam 7:43**
 - b. For Goliath this was the ultimate insult that David a kid would approach him without even a sword and would consider him just a dirty dog to be shooed away with is staff.
 - iii. David speaking to Saul when he spared his life, **1Sam 24:14**
 - a. The whole army of Israel was chasing ONE man, David.
 - b. He told Saul that he was pursuing after a Dead Dog or a single flea on the dog.
 - c. This was David's Grace Orientation and grace humility.
 - iv. Son of Jonathan grandson of Saul speaking to David **2Sam 9:8**

- a. He called himself a dead dog not being worth the time it took to spare his life.
 - v. Elisha and Hazael **2Kings 8:13**
 - a. Hazael compared himself to the dog
 - b. If you wanted to get as humble as you could be in the thinking of the ancient world you had to come up with something relating yourself to a dog or dead dog or a flea in order to state your humility well.
 3. One of the most disgraceful dishonorable deaths in the ancient world was to be devoured by Dogs.
 - i. If you take a moslem and sow his body in a pigskin he goes to hell since the pig is unclean.
 - a. If you want to get them to talk you threaten to do this to them. See “Lives of the Bengal Lancers” this has a real cobra in it.
 - ii. **1Kings 14:11, 16:4, 21:19, 21:23, 2Kings 9:10 etc.**
 - iii. Jezebel when she tried to seduce Jehu who was to be king of Israel, he had her thrown over the balcony and she died the most dishonorable death by being devoured by Dogs. This was one of the Col’s CHILDREN’S STORIES
 4. Dogs are used in analogies to Reversionism:
 - i. **Matt 7:6**, Doctrine what is holy is not to be given to Dogs.
 - ii. **Phil 3:2** Beware of Legalistic Reversionists
 5. Dogs are used to describe the unbeliever
 - i. **2Pet 2:22** This is an illustration of unbeliever reversionism.
 - a. The unbeliever grows up in a home where there is authority under the Laws of Divine Establishment and he appreciates this authority until he gets into reversionism
 - b. When he has EVIL and Reversionism in his soul and goes back and do that which he would not ever do under the principles of the Laws of Divine Establishment and by this return to his own vomit.
 - c. When the dog vomits he rejects what he has eaten and when the unbeliever who normally rejects things which go against the Laws of Divine Establishment now goes about becoming what he rejected in reversionism.
 - d. This is the unbeliever who has accepted evil and now accepts what goes against the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - e. The unbeliever under the Laws of Divine Establishment rejects violations of these principles but when he becomes reversionistic he returns to this vomit and eats it again.
 - ii. **Rev 22:15** describes all unbelievers being cast into the Lake of Fire and classifies them as DOGS.
 6. Those who live by violence as Assassins, professional killers not soldiers nor Law Enforcement personnel are described as DOGS, **Ps 59:6, 14**
 7. Saul’s Greatest General was called a Dog’s Head being a seducer of women **2Sam 3:8**
 8. Dogs were used in the administration of the administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline. **Jer 15:3**
 - i. Dogs dragging off is an analogy to a dishonorable death of a civilian in the destruction of the nation.
 9. In making a grace appeal to the Lord dogs were used in an analogy and the Lord responded to this grace appeal. **Matt 15:25-27, Mk 7:25-28**
- D. Evil Workers
1. These were the judiazers who opposed Paul and his ministry and who stoned him to death.
 2. They set up a system of opposition to the teaching of Bible Doctrine.

- E. Mutilation here refers to the ancient system of using Circumcision as a means of Salvation and of Spirituality.
 - 1. The Judiazers proposed that you have to be circumcised to be saved.
 - 2. They would follow behind Paul and refute his grace mechanism of Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and added circumcision to his message for salvation.
- F. Judiazers are the ones here being delineated in 3 different ways.
 - 1. They are the apostles of evil, evangelists of reversionism, mutilated grace by taking a ritual as being necessary for salvation here Circumcision.
 - i. This was taking circumcision which was meaningful and had a legitimate function in the Spiritual Life of the Jews but NOT as a means of salvation nor spirituality.
 - 2. These people were the mantle of opposition for Paul and he could handle their opposition and received great blessing from it but his congregations could be led astray.
 - i. He had a double situation where he received ++Sharing the Happiness of God but his congregation had to be warned about the Judiazers and their false doctrine with which they tried to infiltrate the local church after Paul left.
 - ii. They would take Old Testament Scripture passages and mutilate passages by taking them out of context and bring them over to evil as part of one of Satan's efforts.

IV. Principles:

- A. Starting with the garden Evil Satan's policy seeks to take grace and mutilate it.
 - 1. Evil always finds grace whole and healthy and seeks to mutilate it.
- B. Mutilation is taking Bible Doctrine or legitimate bible ritual and distorting it into something legalistic and impressionistic.
- C. Mutilation is the satanic distortion of Bible Doctrine so that it appears to be teaching his policy of evil and is a biblical concept disguised by a coating of evil and appears to teach EVIL.
 - 1. Many functions of evil today are related to the word of God but distorted from it.

V. The believer must be able to understand contemporary history but also must be able to understand the proper use of biblical doctrine without distorting it.

- A. Rebound is an example and is distorted by those who think they can sin and simply rebound later and therefore do anything they like.

Phil 3:2

v2: Beware of, watch and look out for remaining alert from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, and understand those Judiazers (the worst domestic animals in the ancient world), false teachers, apostles of apostasy, evangelists of evil, beware of those evil, worthless, corrupt, depraved workers of Human Good opposing the ministry of teaching of Bible Doctrine, beware of that mutilation, self effacement of circumcision used as the means of Salvation and Spiritually.

Lesson #64 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:3

- I. Progress for the Royal Family of God in Time.
 - A. We start in the Spiritual Life at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God as an INFANT believer and with consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine we progress.
 - 1. We move ahead into adolescence in the Spiritual Life and if we persist we WILL eventually reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 2. We must understand that Spiritual Maturity is NOT a plateau and we must continue to progress after Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is reached.
 - B. At Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace we receive Super Grace blessing package with 5 categories of blessing.
 - 1. Spiritual
 - 2. Temporal
 - 3. Association
 - 4. Historical Impact
 - 5. Dying

- C. These belong to the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
 - 1. However there is still progress to be made in the Spiritual Life and we must continue to push ahead in the Spiritual Life from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace toward Ultra Super Grace.
 - 2. During this advance the package of Super Grace blessings we received upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is merged with our Logistical Grace support to form support for us in the advance through No Man's Land where we will encounter great distraction to keep us from reaching Ultra Super Grace.
- D. Upon reaching Ultra Super Grace we receive from God a Mantle of pressure which is Suffering which is categorical for each believer individually who reaches Ultra Super Grace and it is continuous from Satan and his system including demons and humans.
 - 1. This pressure increases the happiness and blessings of our Super Grace package and cannot destroy our happiness.
 - 2. This Ultra Super Grace believer is a spiritual atlas for his generation and a stabilizing rod for all of history.
- E. As a believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or one who has advanced beyond this and reached Ultra Super Grace we are to be recipients of Dying Grace blessings.
 - 1. This makes our exit from this world so incredible that we have the greatest blessings of our life at this time.
 - 2. If we have made it to Ultra Super Grace then the dying grace results in so much happiness that it is undesirable for us to remain in this life and this time of our life has an incredible impact on those around us at the time.

II. The Royal Family of God's true circumcision:

- A. Based on the concept of mutilation and circumcision was considered mutilation when it was distorted as a spiritual factor.
- B. The Church Age is a special dispensation and those set aside in the Church Age as part of God's Plan are Royal Family of God and special also.
 - 1. The Royal Family of God with exposure to the completed canon of scripture through the teaching of a prepared and qualified Pastor Teacher are given a system from God by which they can move from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in a shorter period of time than any other time in history.
 - 2. They can then move from Status Quo Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace and in either case receive Dying Grace.
 - 3. This is the Church Age believer as part of the Royal Family of God who has all that is necessary depending on his Positive Volition to take in Bible Doctrine consistently.
 - i. Transportation
 - ii. Food
 - iii. Shelter
 - iv. Clothing
 - v. Bible Doctrine
 - vi. Scripture
 - 4. ***We are kept alive in history for the purpose of spiritual advance in order to resolve the Angelic Conflict whose battleground in the soul of the believer in the Royal Family of God.***
 - 5. ***In fact Human History is the battle in the soul of believers in all of history.***
 - i. ***The intrusion of man into the battleground of the Angelic Conflict by an act of divine creation is the basis for turning the Angelic Conflict completely around and resolving it totally.***

- ii. *We are therefore in history and part of history and have an OPTION of making history as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ by being kept alive in the world ruled by Satan.*
- 6. *Satan is ruler of this world but God provides through Logistical Grace support our food, shelter, clothing and everything else it takes to grow up in the Spiritual Life and all we need to do is add our personal consistency, Positive Volition, fixed purpose, indefatigable attitude of Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.*
- C. “that mutilation” of v2 refers to a distortion of a true bible ritual into a FALSE spiritual connotation.
 - 1. The false connotation is to say that one must be circumcised to be saved or spiritual.
 - i. This would eliminate females totally.
 - ii. Circumcision was not only a physical operation on the male phallus but also a ritual of spiritual connotation.
- D. The communion service is a ritual but it is a meaningful ritual ordained by God to test the believer in the Status Quo principles of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 1. This is a test, it is meaningful with regard to our Spiritual Life, it is a command from Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to do this until he returns.
 - i. The actual ritual has great meaning to the Royal Family of God and is a ritual which is peculiar to ROYALTY only.
 - ii. This ritual as we have it never existed in the FAMILY of GOD (although Bread and wine was given by Melchizedek to Abraham but his was not the communion ritual)
 - a. The bread and wine had spiritual connotation to Abraham and Melchizedek but it was not the communion ritual of the Eucharist.
 - 2. The communion ritual of the Eucharist is peculiar to and belongs ONLY to the Royal Family of God and will only belong to the Royal Family of God and when the rapture occurs there will never be another bonifide Eucharist again.
 - i. As Royal Family of God we have the opportunity in participation in the Eucharist ritual to test our concentration and Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and capacity for Cat I Love and of engaging in the most significant ritual ever to exist.
 - ii. This ritual is for ROYALTY ONLY and even in heaven there will always be the distinction between those in the family of God and the Royal Family of God of the Church Age.
 - a. The believers in the Church Age are referred to as “saints” which means set apart by God as royalty.
 - b. Review the doctrines of the Royal Family of God and Royalty of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. This ritual is extremely important in function of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age and has been distorted by many denominations and religions.
 - a. No church ever has a right to exclude someone from the communion ritual and every believer has a right to determine for himself if he is qualified for the communion ritual.
 - b. This qualification is based on self determination not a system of bullying nor an ecclesiastical hierarchy dictating what one can and cannot do.
 - iv. Many churches have excluded outsiders from communion but the reality is that a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ does not have to be a member of any church to participate in the communion ritual.
 - v. If as a believer you understand the principles of rebound and can use them you are qualified to participate in the communion ritual any time anywhere.
 - a. This is clearly delineated in Bible Doctrine.

3. There is an issue of the meaning of communion and the Roman catholic church distorts the communion service in proposing that you actually EAT the body of Christ when you take the bread and actually drink the blood of Christ like some kind of cannibal.
 - i. Cannibalism is a distortion of the ritual of the Eucharist.
 - ii. The Lutherans under Malankton also used this ridiculous idea.
 4. So we can see that there are many distortion of the Eucharist ritual in the Church Age.
- E. There are even more distortions of circumcision which has been distorted in so many ways that it is imperative that we understand it true significance in order to understand the “mutilation”.
1. We are to beware of anyone who says we must be circumcised or baptized to be saved or circumcised to be spiritual.
 2. We are to beware of someone who is a “priest” who hands us a wafer of bread and tells us that this is the actual body of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and we are to eat it.
 3. These are distortions of rituals.
 4. Once you intrude with any kind of ritual needed for salvation or spirituality or to make points with God you have started a system of MUTILATION.
 5. Legalism is a form of this mutilation and there are innumerable systems of mutilation under legalism with regard to spirituality and salvation.
 6. The general trend in fundamentalism is to persistently mutilate rituals and they are so busy mutilating rituals that they have forgotten how to teach and this results in a mutation from mutilation rather than advance into the Super Grace life.
 7. If fundamentalist pastors would just teach Bible Doctrine and give believers a chance to grow up they would not have to spend all their time telling people what NOT TO DO.
 8. It is tragic and mutilation and you cannot grow up with mutilation and you cannot be mutilated and grow and you cannot advance to the true TACTICAL victory of the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace life and at the same time be mutilated.
 9. All concepts of mutilation go back to circumcision and the whole book of Galatians deals with this.
 10. Mutilation cancels spiritual growth and we must never destroy the purity of Bible Doctrine with mutilation.
 11. Taboos have always existed historically and every group of people have taboos.
 12. Everywhere we look we will find legalism and if we react to legalism just like reacting to history or disaster we will fall into reversionism.
 - i. When disaster comes along if we don’t have enough Bible Doctrine to handle it we will react and enter reversionism and the same thing is true of legalism.
 13. The way you dress has only to do with good taste, wisdom, common sense and education where the woman should ask her husband at home but never anything to do with spirituality.
 - i. To take something which is a matter of personal taste and translate it to some system of spirituality is Mutilation.
 - ii. There are more cripples in Christianity today because they have been mutilated by some brand of legalism.
 - iii. Much of it is psychological where some dominant member of a congregation is offended by something and they go around and try to get everyone to line up with their thinking and the poor dumb pastor stands around and says “bless you” and it never occurs to that Pastor Teacher to take that bully and smash them and roll over them or throw them out.
 - iv. Even Berachah has a few dress rules such as women are not permitted to wear hats but these have not spiritual connotations they are a matter of consideration so that everyone can see what is on the display screen.

III. Doctrine of Circumcision:

A. Definition:

1. Circumcision is cutting away a portion of the useless foreskin on the male phallus.

2. The ritual is related to Abraham's Super Grace sexual prosperity and dedication of the male phallus to the Right Woman and NO ONE else and is in direct opposition to the phallic cult of **Lev 12:2-3**

B. The Significance of Circumcision:

1. The true meaning of circumcision cannot be understood apart from **Gen 17:1-14**

Gen 17:1

v1: Now Abram became as son of 99 years, or When Abram was ninety-nine years old Jehovah himself appeared to Abram, and in grace said to him, "As for me, I even I, am Omnipotent powerful breasted God of Many BREASTS providing Logistical and Super Grace for all things for believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God; continue advancing under my supervision, and become and maintain your complete maturity and remain sound with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul giving capacity from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Gen 17:2

v2: That I, God, may give my covenant previously promised between between me and between you (Abrahamic Covenant & proto Palestinian Covenant), and furthermore, I will cause you to be multiplied with power of power or maximum use of omnipotent power."

Gen 17:3

v3: Then Abram got down on his knees and bowed forward with is forehead on the ground recognizing authority and submitting to it; while Elohim talked communicating Bible Doctrine to him saying,

Gen 17:4

v4: "As for me, Behold, I even I, God, have given my covenant to you, and you shall be the father of many gentile nations as well.

Gen 17:5

v5: Consequently your name will never again be called Abram, father of altitude, but your name shall become Abraham, Father of a Multitude; because I have appointed you a father of many gentile nations as well as the New Jewish Race.

Gen 17:6

v6: Also I will cause you to be prolific to the maximum with great sexual prosperity; furthermore I will give to you and appoint nations (7 Arab Nations and Jews and Edomites from the grandson of Abraham) from your Ultra Super-Grace prosperity, and kings shall spring forth and be descended from you.

Gen 17:7

v7: And I will cause to arise, establish and confirm my covenant between me, Jehovah, and you, Abraham and your descendants of the Jewish race after you throughout their specific generations for an everlasting covenant, to be YOUR Elohim, Godhead, and to your descendants of Jewish believers after you.

Gen 17:8

v8: Furthermore I have given to you, and to your regenerate racial Jewish descendants after you, the land of your residence or pilgrimage, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; therefore I will be their Elohim."

Gen 17:9

v9: Furthermore Elohim said to Abraham, "Now As for you, you shall guard and appreciate as first in your scale of values, my covenant which is of infinite value, you and your descendants in the Jewish race after you in their respective generations of history.

Gen 17:10

v10: This is my covenant, which you shall guard, between me and between you and your regenerate descendants of the Jewish race after you: Every male memorial child perpetuating the Jewish race, among you shall be circumcised.

Gen 17:11

v11: Therefore You shall be circumcised in the flesh of your phallic foreskin, and it shall become a picture of Grace, a memorial sign, of the covenant between me and between all of you, all Jews who follow the pattern of Abraham in making Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

Gen 17:12

v12: Therefore, He that is a male child, a son of 8 days, or eight days old among you WILL be circumcised; every male child throughout your generations, every male slave born in your house, or every male slave bought with your money from any foreigner, who is not of your offspring,

Gen 17:13

v13: Both the male slave that is born in your house and the male slave that is bought with your money, you will definitely emphatically circumcise. Consequently My covenant will be in your foreskin flesh, as a memorial sign to the Grace of God, for an eternal covenant.

Gen 17:14

v14: But the uncircumcised memorial male child, who is not circumcised in the flesh of his foreskin, that soul shall be cut off from his people; he has made void, brought to nothing, broken into pieces, my covenant, detracting from grace and rejected Adjustment to the Justice of God and authority."

Gen 17:26

v26: **In that very same day Abraham circumcised himself and Ish'mael his son;**

2. Abraham had many spiritual ups and down and entered reversionism and then recovered and at age 99 he finally recovered from reversionism and entered into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace but was sexually dead **Rom 4:17-21**, but part of his super grace package of blessing was to have a Son from his own genetic structure through his wife Sarah.
 - i. This was a special paragraph in his Super Grace blessing package that being that he would have his son of his own and knowing that he was incapable of intercourse and of procreation he had total confidence in the promise of God.
3. Now being in Status Quo of Super Grace he took too long to reach Super Grace and how was this blessing of a son to be delivered to him.
 - i. Not doubting the promise of God with confidence he engaged in a ritual never before conducted, circumcision.
 - ii. He cut from his dead phallus the foreskin from his phallus indicating that though he was sexually dead there was no limitation with God who was perfect and having made a promise his veracity must be satisfied and God **MUST** keep his promise.
 - iii. The ritual of circumcision was recognition of the fact that even though he was sexually dead God would revive his sexual apparatus and that of Sarah his wife who was long past menopause and could not have children as well.
 - iv. Therefore Abraham through circumcision became the father of a new race and circumcision was the sign.
4. At the moment of his circumcision his sexual ability was restored and as a result of this there came a new race in the world.
 - i. The new race was the **JEW** and was continued through Isaac and Jacob.
 - ii. Circumcision was the right to indicate that the Jewish race was a new special race which came from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and **THEN** procreation.
 - iii. All members of the Human Race are the product of procreation, Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, and eventually Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - iv. The father of the Jewish race Abraham who was a gentile until he was circumcised and when he submitted to circumcision he immediately became a Jew but was already a gentile believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and at that moment became a **JEWISH** believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - v. He was the first Jew but for the first 99 years of his life he was a Chaldean and the Jewish race came into existence with the circumcision therefore it is an extremely significant ritual.
5. There has always been an emphasis in the Jewish race with spiritual significance with regard to circumcision.
 - i. When ever something occurs with spiritual significance for the first time it always has great significance in interpretation of a passage.
 - ii. The first ritual act of circumcision was to recognize the Super Grace blessing package and the fact that **GOD** keeps his word and cannot **LIE** and by this a new race came into existence at that moment.
 - iii. The sign of the new race from Abraham was circumcision and the sign of the new nation from Moses was the Mosaic Law.
 - a. The Mosaic Law is to the new nation of Israel what circumcision is to the new race of Jews.

- b. The Mosaic Law given to Moses and the Jews is a complete compilation of the Laws of Divine Establishment from food to the function of Law Enforcement to military function and every factor of the Laws of Divine Establishment.
 - c. This Moses received in the 40 days he was up on the mountain and the Decalogue came first because EVERY NATION MUST BE FOUNDED ON FREEDOM AND THE DECALOGUE DEFINES FREEDOM IN TERMS OF THE LAWS OF DIVINE ESTABLISHMENT.
 - d. The Decalogue is not a brief of sin or what is or is not sin but a brief on freedom and it just so happens that certain sins are infringements on freedom.
 - 6. Both of these concepts are extremely important and would get and are distorted as the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul progresses.
 - i. Circumcision is the ritual which brought in the new race and is related spiritually to the concept and Status Quo of Super Grace.
- C. Circumcision is related to the Mosaic Law Rom 2:5
 - 1. It relates to the Laws of Divine Establishment and the content of the Mosaic Law relates to the fact that national stability comes from the Laws of Divine Establishment principles.
 - 2. It relates to the spiritual part of the Mosaic Law indicating that after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone faith must turn to the written word of Bible Doctrine and must link up with Positive Volition in the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - 3. Thereby circumcision became very important in the spiritual as well as the nation history of Israel.
- D. The Greatest of all Jews the Ultra Super Grace Jew Moses almost died the Sin Unto Death. **Ex 4:24-26**
 - 1. He was about to enter Egypt without circumcising his son and was a failure to recognize the relationship between the father of the new race and God promise to a new nation which would come from that race.
 - 2. Abraham coming out of reversionism turned everything around by the ritual of circumcision.
 - 3. Now here Moses is coming out of reversionism like Abraham and moving toward Status Quo Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and would move into Ultra Super Grace but was about to enter Egypt WITHOUT the sign of Super Grace in his youngest son therefore God put him under the penalty of death.
 - 4. Moses therefore had to call his wife when they were staying on the edge of Egypt to go and circumcise the boy else Moses would die and she did so and through the foreskin in his face and walked out on him.
 - 5. This was significant in that Moses could not enter Egypt to free the Jews with his son uncircumcised but neither could he go into Egypt with a milestone hanging around his neck and she went back to her parents and they were divorced and that was the end of that.
- E. The race to the nation:
 - 1. No Jew could partake of the Passover without circumcision which was related to the new race, the new nation and the concept of on to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace. **Ex 12:48**
 - 2. The Jews were under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline for lack of circumcision of the soul to accompany the ritual, **Jer 6:10, 9:25-26.**
 - 3. Circumcision of the soul meant that the unbeliever living under the Laws of Divine Establishment and connotes the believer moving toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

4. This circumcision of the soul was therefore just as important as circumcision of the body, and physical circumcision occurred for Jews as infants not being believers or unbelievers not having come to the point of accountability and making a decision with regard to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
5. The infant was circumcised physically but the circumcision of soul is spiritual and very important meaning Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and while all Jews were circumcised physically the circumcision of soul was the great issue and the Plan of God for anyone in the Jewish nation.
6. Circumcision connotes the spiritual heritage of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and his physical and spiritual heritage and being a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ he became a Jew at circumcision and this was the distinction of the race and the plan and purpose of God for the new race which called for NOT ONLY physical circumcision but also spiritual circumcision which was something in the soul to match it.

F. All ritual in the bible:

1. Finds the individual doing something such as animal sacrifice, circumcision, lifting the cup and drinking it but RITUAL WITHOUT REALITY IS MEANINGLESS.
2. THE REALITY IS THE Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Rom 2, Ex 12, Jer 6:10, Gal 2:8, Col 4:11, Eph 2:11, Tit 1:10** make an issue of this and use circumcision as an example.
3. To be physically circumcised is meaningless unless there is in the soul Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and spiritual growth to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
4. The ritual otherwise becomes mutilation without doctrine in the soul to match the significance of the ritual.

G. In the Church Age circumcision has no spiritual significance 1Cor 7:18-19, Gal 5:2-3

1. It relates the Jew to us unique racial and national origin and his origin from Super Grace.
2. The origin of the church is from the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit which eliminates the spiritual connotation of circumcision in the Church Age and therefore it does not have a spiritual connotation and is not a ritual for the Church Age except for the physiological benefits.
3. Circumcision will again be a spiritual issue in the millennium when Israel is restored again.

H. Illustrations of the use of circumcision:

1. Circumcision was used to portray the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception leading to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace **Deut 10:16, Jer 4:4**
2. It was use to portray the Edification Complex of the Soul **Deut 30:6, Rom 2:28-29**
3. It was used to portray Scar Tissue of the Soul and Emotional Revolt of the Soul, the last stages of reversionism **Jer 6:10, 9:25-26, Ez 44:7, Acts 7:51**

I. The Problem of Mutilation **Acts 15:1, 24, Gal 6:12-13**

1. Mutilation of ritual has been one of the satanic means of turning people away from doctrine and getting their soul straightened out and by this opening up the soul to EVIL the policy of Satan to rule earth.

IV. Circumcision in the Church Age has no spiritual significance but is used as an analogy:

A. It is used in analogy to the ritual baptism, or the Eucharist etc.

1. It also indicates the Super Grace believer has no more use for the foreskin of evil and reversionism and that these are removed in the Spiritual Life of the Royal Family of God as the dead skin of the foreskin of the phallus is removed in circumcision.
2. Jews in the time of the the Ultra Super Grace believer Jeremiah who had been in reversionism and recovered and the Jews were in reversionism under the influence of evil and Jeremiah used circumcision in his day to make this same point as Paul.

3. All 3 of the Ultra Super Grace believers in Human History, Moses, Jeremiah, Paul used circumcision to teach Bible Doctrine and the fallacy of ritual without reality and that ritual has reality from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul **Jer 9:25-26**
 - i. Boasting of the believer should be in his being caused to understand Bible Doctrine and Prospering to knowing Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - ii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ manufactures GRACE as blessing for the believer advancing in the Spiritual Life of Divine Discipline for the reversionistic believer.
 - iii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ controls history and manufactures justice on the earth and he takes pleasure in these things.
 - iv. He takes pleasure in blessing the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace
 - v. He takes pleasure in expressing his love through Divine Discipline for the reversionistic believer.
 - vi. He takes pleasure in controlling Human History and historically judging the nation who are uncircumcised physically because this has significance but he will judge Israel by the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline because they are uncircumcised of soul since there was no one in Israel advancing to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace except Jeremiah himself.
 4. To be uncircumcised of soul means to have not Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and is caused by Negative Volition toward Bible Doctrine on the part of the believer.
 - i. Being uncircumcised of soul means the believer will be hurt by someone or lonely or have some problem which he cannot cope with in his reversionism.
 - ii. Being circumcised of soul means we will have blessing at all times especially on special holidays and we will have capacity for all aspects of life and be able to cope with adversity and disaster in life of any category.
 - iii. We are in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and pressing toward the mark of Ultra Super Grace.
 - iv. The difference between the circumcised believer and the uncircumcised believer is the level of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 5. ***We make everyday Christmas by pressing in our Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and then on again to Ultra Super Grace and thereby the day we die we will think that that day is Christmas and there never will be a day like this and we will have so much happiness that we cannot stand it and we will have to go to be face to face with the Lord just to handle all the happiness.***
- B. In Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we will worship in the Filling of God the Holy Spirit as part of the function of the royal priesthood of the Royal Family of God.
1. Studying Bible Doctrine is the highest point and process of worship in the Christian Way of Life.
 2. This being the center of worship is the secret of circumcision of soul and is the daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception for consistent inculcation and metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 3. In this dispensation of the Church Age the unique form of worship for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit as our mentor in learning Bible Doctrine.
 4. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is essential for the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and any other form of worship **John 4:24**

- C. As members of the Royal Family of God in the Church Age we boast and pride oneself from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and confidence in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
1. We have great Esprit DE Corps in the Spiritual Life as believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace with maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 2. This is an expression of Category I Love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ Capacity of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace continuing to Ultra Super Grace.
 3. Boasting in the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as a result of maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the highest form of worship for the Royal Family of God.
 4. As we move from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace through to Ultra Super Grace we have absolutely NO confidence in human ability or thinking or talent.
 5. Once we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace as stage I of Spiritual Maturity and receive our Super Grace blessing package we have a phenomenal confidence in life BUT we must press on to Ultra Super Grace and while on the way to Ultra Super Grace we will develop an unshakable confidence which by the time we reach Ultra Super Grace will give us the ability to cope with any problem, adversity, disaster or satanic opposition none of which can every effect our enjoyment of life.

Phil 3:3

v3: For we and only we, in the Royal Family of God in Super-Grace, keep on, because of persistence in Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine, being the true circumcision for the Church Age, who worship in and by the spirit of God, under Filling of God the Holy Spirit, and boasting, glorying and pride oneself from Esprit DE Corps from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, being totally confident in Christ Jesus, and have absolutely no confidence in the human ability or thinking or talent or any factor which intrudes on Perception, Cognition, Inculcation & Metabolization of Bible Doctrine nor the infirmities of the flesh as adversities.

Lesson #65 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:3

- I. Apostle Paul was one of the truly great men of Jewish history even before his salvation.
 - A. As a young man he showed manifestations of a multi genius life and was unusual in many fields.
 1. He was an astute politician and one of the most zealous of the Pharisees and was leading them as a young man as ruler of his nation.
 2. He had demonstrated his scholastic ability in the Hellenistic world having gone to tarsus university as well as being a member of the famous Jewish graduate school of Haliai.
 3. He was well qualified to digress and cover the concept of HUMAN CELEBRITYSHIP.
 4. While we cannot fit into his category we can recall other Christmas celebrations or holiday celebrations spent in other areas aside from church and the social life and intense activities associated with these.
 - B. Documentation for Paul's reversionism.
 1. Paul has at this point just come out of reversionism and is a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and is pressing toward Ultra Super Grace.
 2. In 2nd Tim 3 he is in Ultra Super Grace and moving toward the end of his life under dying grace blessings the greatest blessings of life for anyone who has moved through the Christian Way of Life through Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to Ultra Super Grace.
 3. It was the Will of God that Paul's 3rd missionary journey should take him west into Spain.
 - i. Rome as an empire controlled Italy and the Greek area and the Balkans into Turkey called "Asia" and down to the Euphrates river.
 - ii. The Adriatic Sea divided the Roman empire into 2 sections:

- a. The western side which was the part where Latin was the official language including the north African coast.
 - b. The Eastern Side was the part where Koine Greek was the official language.
 - c. Every Roman aristocrat and senator was bilingual and spoke Koine Greek and Latin and these were equivalent languages.
 - iii. Paul during his 1st and 2nd missionary journeys had spent a great deal of time in the eastern empire and had evangelized and taught in Capadocia, Roman Asia, North and south Galatian area, Solician Gates, Syria, Palestine and all over the eastern ½ of the Mediterranean and some time in Italy.
4. After his 3rd missionary journey had started he should have gone from Ephesus to ROME to SPAIN instead he went EAST. **Rom 15:24** (AD58)
 - i. He knew that on his 3rd missionary journey he should have gone to Spain and that this was the Will of God.
 - ii. **Rom 15:25** Paul states what is NOT the Will of God and there is an emotional pull for most people toward the HOLY LAND or Palestine.
 - iii. Many gentiles do not feel that their Christian Way of Life is complete until they walk around the holy land and have deep thoughts about Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iv. This is strictly an emotional desire some of which are legitimate and which we all have.
 - v. It makes it easy to understand how such a great Jew a great politician and astute Pharisaical statesmen and how he would want to go back to a place where he had many friends.
 - vi. Saul was born in Tarsus and was a Roman citizen by his birth and by race he was a Jew and by his inclination he was a Jew and a pharisee of the Pharisees.
 - vii. It is not surprising that instead of going to Spain he went back to Jerusalem for a visit.
 - viii. When we think of Spain we think of bull fights, beautiful women, low crime, and a beautiful civilized place.
 - ix. Spain in the ancient world was NOT any of these things, and it was still a WILD country with a FEW beautiful ports and it was barely conquered by Rome when Paul was ORDERED by the Lord to go to Spain.
 - x. When you compare the rugged mountains and wild tribes and bandits and beautiful coastal cities with your own home where there was everything you remembered and were comfortable with it was a very strong emotional pull for Paul to go to Jerusalem not Spain.
5. At this point Paul entered emotional reversionism and this was just as clear as JONAH who was ordered to Ninivah in Syria when he tried to go to Spain.
 - i. Jonah went west and should have gone East while Paul went east when he should have gone west.
 - ii. **Rom 15:28**, The problem was that the Lord did not include Jerusalem in the agenda for Paul's 3rd missionary journey and this was only Paul's Idea.
 - iii. Although Paul eventually intended to do the Will of God this emotional departure from the Plan of God was to cost him in a very serious way.
6. These 3 passages demonstrate that it was the Will of God for Paul to go West to Spain not East to Jerusalem.
7. After Paul's visit to Ephesus and the riot of the Silversmith Union he was headed west in the correct direction still in compliance with his order of Acts 20.
 - i. In v1 the Riot caused Paul to have concerns when he was in Macedonia and it was here in Corinth still going in the right direction that he turned and went from Corinth he sailed for Troy EAST.

- ii. Now instead of moving in the right direction he is moving in the antithetical direction and from Troy he would not even go back to Ephesus.
 - iii. From Troy he sailed to Miletus close to Ephesus and called for the Pastor Teachers of Ephesus to come down to have a conference and he dared not go to Ephesus.
 - iv. From Miletus he went south east on his way to Jerusalem.
 - v. It was in this conference 36 miles from Ephesus Paul told the pastors it was his intention to be in Jerusalem on the day of Pentecost. **Acts 20:16**
 - vi. Paul sailed past Ephesus in order to not spend time in Roman Asia as he was HURRYING to get to Jerusalem by Pentecost.
 - a. When you are going in the wrong direction you are hurrying.
 - b. When you get into reversionism you hurry and move fast.
8. Paul was warned to NOT go to Jerusalem by God the Holy Spirit:
- i. Acts 21:4-9
 - ii. Acts 21:10-13
 - iii. God the Holy Spirit used people to NOT go to Jerusalem and that it was not the Will of God.
9. Paul is now in reversionism and disobeyed completely Acts 21:14-17
10. When Paul arrived in Jerusalem Acts 21 he was now in full emotional reversionism and was susceptible to whatever the inclination of the geographical area here called Judaism which is a form of reversionistic legalism.
- i. The church in Jerusalem was so infected that it had lost its leadership in the Christian world and was as low as any church could be in reversionism.
 - ii. The unbelievers were in a massive form of Judaism which would end in the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline in 40 years.
 - iii. When Paul met with the pastors in Jerusalem he took bad advice from the leaders of the Jerusalem church Acts 21:2-+24
 - iv. NO BIBLE TEACHER EVER HAS TO COMPROMISE IN ORDER TO GET A HEARING FOR BIBLE DOCTRINE AND PAUL IS THE GREATEST BIBLE TEACHER IN ALL OF HISTORY.
 - v. There never has been nor ever will be a man who has the power and dynamic ability to teach Bible Doctrine as Paul did.
 - vi. Therefore when Paul entered a town he did not have to compromise to get a hearing for the word.
 - vii. These men of Jerusalem told Paul that he was known as one who MURDERED many Christians and in the congregations in Jerusalem there were many widows and children of people Paul executed and they still remember what Paul did before being a christian.
 - viii. These people will not come out to hear you unless you do something to set up rapport with them.
 - a. This still occurs today and even in theological seminaries HOW To have rapport and get a hearing by the people and how to be all things to all people.
 - b. They teach in seminaries how to be an ecclesiastical politician and talk out of both sides of your mouth and be nice to ugly vicious mean people who demand attention.
 - c. This is alive today even more so than it was at this time for Paul.
 - ix. To set up rapport with these people they told Paul that he had to show he was a true Jew and he was not only Royal Family of God and there is in this dispensation NO JEW, NO GENTILE, only Royal Family of God.
 - x. They told him to offer a VOW and give a donation and when you have done this we will call everyone together for a conference about Bible Doctrine.

- xi. This is a total compromise of Bible Doctrine and NO ONE ever has to stoop to compromise Bible Doctrine nor set up any system of rapport with the people and Bible Doctrine stands on its own and Positive Volition will come to the hearing of Bible Doctrine regardless of any other particular principles involved.
 - xii. Many pastors have the most obnoxious personalities and the most awful ways of presenting Bible Doctrine and rub members of the congregation the wrong way yet these people have no problem listening to the Bible Doctrine taught and being objective and growing in grace.
 - xiii. Bible Doctrine does not need Public relations fronting nor hypocrisy nor functions of legalism to get a hearing from people.
 - xiv. There is today a system of legalistic taboos which have nothing to do with Christianity but are a facade for fundamentalist Christianity.
 - xv. A believer can observe any taboo he desires but WHEN this is done and a taboo is in no way commanded by the word of God and it is done to gain God's attention or his blessing then you are stuck in the mire of legalism.
 - xvi. Paul fell for this and went to the temple and got into the compromise of legalism **Acts 21:26.**
11. This was the beginning of the Divine Discipline for Paul **Acts 21:27-32** Paul went back to the temple to complete the function of his vow in the temple.
- i. He was spotted by the judiazers from Asia and south Galatia the very people who stoned him to death at Lystra and when they saw him in the temple they were immediately suspicious and aroused the people.
 - ii. There was a terrible riot and pursued Paul out of the temple and caught him in the square between the temple and the Mark Anthony Barracks and the Roman soldiers stationed there saw these Jews trying to kill Paul.
 - iii. They did not immediately kill him because they got in each others way all wanting to have the privilege to killing him personally.
 - iv. When the Roman soldiers came out they fulfilled the principle that Military Restores Order.
 - v. In perfect order they moved out even though outnumbered by the crowd and cracked heads with their spear shafts and pierced where it was needed and the crowd moved back and the GREATEST believer in all of Human History was delivered so that he might have time to recover from his reversionism and move to Ultra Super Grace and actually become the greatest believer.
 - vi. They brought him into the compound and took him to the office of the commander and he was a man who had to PAY a great price to gain Roman citizenship and when he discovered that Paul was a Roman citizen by BIRTH he had great respect for Paul but knew he had a HOT prisoner on his hands. **Acts 21;31-**
12. It became obvious that Paul was not safe even in the Mark Anthony barracks and as soon as he left the Barracks he would be assassinated for there was a band of 40 from the Sickari who had gotten together and taken an oath that they would not eat until they had killed Paul
- i. These were like the Thugee of India in Israel.
 - ii. The commander upon receiving this information decided that there should be a transfer of Paul to a safer area the Roman headquarters for the province if Palestine.
 - iii. Paul was given a very strong escort and moved at night transferring him to Cesarea in 59AD
 - iv. Paul was in Cesarea for 2 years to AD60 during which time he recovered from his reversionism and during this time he met the 3 most famous judges of Roman history.

- a. Felix Acts 24
 - b. Festus Acts 25
 - c. Agrippa Acts 26
 - v. Paul stood before the most famous judges of his day and in addition to these 3 men he also stood before the highest court of Rome until he appealed to Caesar when he saw he was not going to be released.
 - vi. Paul at this time knew he must be released and get to Spain where he was supposed to go in the first place.
 - vii. This meant a change of venue again for Paul to Rome.
 - viii. Paul was put aboard a ship at the right time going to Rome with an escort and during this trip there was a shipwreck at Malta and then went on to Rome.
 - ix. When he arrived in Rome because no one could make much of the indictment he was put under house arrest until he could be seen by Nero.
13. His imprisonment at Rome was 2 years and during this time he put down all the Bible Doctrine regarding reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace in the prison epistles.
- i. Everything needed for the believer to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is found in Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians and Philemon.
 - ii. Paul wrote Philippians at this time and is in Super Grace Status Quo but has not yet attained Ultra Super Grace **Phil 3:12-19**
 - iii. He presents in this chapter the perspective of the Super Grace believer:
 - a. v4 – His human celebrityship and how inconsequential it is
 - i) To the person with the wrong Scale of Values and priorities it is the highest and most valued thing in life.
 - b. V5-6 he gives the false perspective of Judaism
 - c. v7- he gives the true perspective of Super Grace
 - d. v8 he gives the priorities of Super Grace to prepare the student for how to move ON TO Ultra Super Grace the ultimate objective of the Spiritual Life.
 - i) He himself fulfilled these things when he wrote the pastoral epistles especially Timothy.
 - iv. The pattern of Paul and Timothy in their advance in the Spiritual Life is EXACTLY parallel.
 - a. Both advanced to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and both went into a dive into reversionism, both recovered from reversionism and moved back to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and both accepted the challenge of going from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace and wearing the highest honor offered by God in the mantle of opposition of intensive opposition from Satan with intensifies the blessing of the Super Grace package.
- C. Paul's Human Celebrityship – The concept of the Wrong Priorities

Lesson #66 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:4, 2Tim 4:5

- I. The FINAL OBJECTIVE:
 - A. Although this is rarefied atmosphere on the edge of the Spiritual Life it is still a stated objective for the believer in the Church Age to move from infancy to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and then beyond to Ultra Super Grace and receive incredible blessing in dying grace.
 - B. The 2nd series of commands in the changing of the guard from Paul leading the early Church Age to Timothy as a Super Grace Pastor Teacher who had the potential for Ultra Super Grace.

1. Paul is one of the most unusual believers in Human History being one who went all the way to Ultra Super Grace
 2. Review the multi genius individuals of Human History, Moses, Jeremiah, Paul, Caesar, Napoleon.
 3. Where Paul is in Phil 3 Timothy is in 2nd Tim 3+4
- C. In the changing of the guard there is a ritual which must be accomplished here as when there is changing of the guard at Windsor.
1. There is a series of Carry on Orders for the Pastor Teachers in Super Grace Status Quo.
 2. Here we have the 2nd series of commands for the Pastor Teacher to carry on in leadership of the early church.
 3. Not everyone can receive the colors and lead the next generation in the Spiritual Life and it requires the breaking of the barriers in the Spiritual Life and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and then moving into Ultra Super Grace.
- D. The 1st command
1. From the Ultra Super Grace Paul to the potential Ultra Super Grace Timothy the command is for Timothy to remain sober, well balanced and especially self disciplined.
 2. Without self discipline NO ONE ever grows up and there is failure to integrate into the whole concept of grace and the objectives of grace and to break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 3. In the same way of recovery from reversion and his return to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Timothy is commanded to retain his self discipline and continue on to Ultra Super Grace.
 4. No one ever dies better than the Ultra Super Grace believers such as Moses, Jeremiah, and Paul and Timothy will receive dying grace blessings as well.
 5. This self discipline is not drudgery but brings on the greatest happiness in life.
- E. The 2nd command
1. This command is NOT for the new believer to witness personally but is a command for the Super Grace advancing believer to do the evangelical work of witnessing and training new Pastor Teachers.
 2. The greatest witnessing is accomplished by those who have the greatest accumulated knowledge of Bible Doctrine in their Stream of Consciousness of the Soul this being the Ultra Super Grace believer.
 3. Any evangelist with the spiritual gift of evangelism is covered in this command.
 - i. The Gift of evangelism cited in Acts 21:8, Phillip, Eph 4:11, 2Tim 4:5 as a command to Timothy in anticipation of his reaching Ultra Super Grace.
 - ii. As he continued his spiritual growth he would have the ability to evangelize most effectively like our current day missionary evangelizing, teaching and training new Pastor Teachers and traveling to do so.
 4. As apostles were closed out the Pastor Teachers still had to be trained and this was a command to train them.
 5. The command to endure opposition from evil is the phrase which makes this a command for the Ultra Super Grace believer.
 6. This command is anticipatory of Timothy reaching Ultra Super Grace and in reaching Ultra Super Grace he will totally fulfill his ministry and no pastor can take his congregation beyond his own spiritual growth.
- F. Principles:
1. No Pastor Teacher can carry out his ministry apart from daily study of Bible Doctrine himself.
 2. The daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is the means of his own spiritual growth and also the means of feeding his congregation.
 3. By constantly and consistently leading his congregation the Pastor Teacher leads his congregation to his own level of spiritual growth which should be at a minimum Maturity

Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and much better to Ultra Super Grace, the Status Quo of glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the tactical victory of the Angelic Conflict.

- i. It is obvious that most Pastor Teachers today do not even study enough to get to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is why programs in the local church are the order of the day.
 - ii. There are some great men who have been in Ultra Super Grace that does not limit anyone in the congregation from reaching Ultra Super Grace.
4. Furthermore NO congregation can exceed the spiritual growth of their Pastor Teacher therefore the Pastor Teacher must consistently and continually study hard and faithfully teach Bible Doctrine.
 5. Therefore the Pastor Teacher like Timothy, must press on to lead his congregation to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and through the maturity barrier and take them to Ultra Super Grace so that when they die they will have the greatest happiness in life.

G. Looking forward to DYING:

1. Paul is the leader and he went as far as it is possible to go in this life and THEREFORE WE CAN ALWAYS FOLLOW THE APOSTLE PAUL.
 - i. Other Apostles did not go this far but Moses and Jeremiah did however very few believers have.
2. Paul here is issuing the command to PRESS ON to Timothy and in effect to all Pastor Teachers.
 - i. Paul has issued commands to Timothy specifically but to all coming up Pastor Teachers in the Church Age:
 - a. The carry on Commands v2
 - b. The Carry on commands for Ultra Super Grace Pastor Teachers v5
3. The reason for these commands is that Paul is seeing his final time on this earth and is appreciating his Dying Grace blessings and he calls this his being poured out as a libation.
4. The Cup of the Libation is the body of Paul, the content of the cup is the Soul of Paul.
 - i. When his soul leaves his body HE WILL BE DEAD and the pouring out of the cup is a perfect picture of the EASE of the believer in Ultra Super Grace under dying grace leaving this body in death.
 - ii. This is the next and greatest step in the life of Paul.
 - iii. The steps in the life of a believer under Positive Volition include Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, Ultra Super Grace, and finally dying grace.
 - iv. Death unravels the mysteries of eternity and terminates the problems of life.
5. Paul is dying at the writing of this passage, the greatest of all people of all time is about to leave this earth in death under dying grace.

H. The retrospective resume of Paul's Tactical Victory: v5

1. Paul has broken the greatest barrier of life.
 - i. We as believers after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception consistently with the objective of breaking the barrier of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. When we do we immediately receive our Super Grace blessing package.
 - iii. Then we keep moving up from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace and eventually to Dying Grace and ultimately break that barrier into eternity and receive Surpassing Grace blessings.
 - iv. This is what Paul has done moving through every objective of life and reaching the pinnacle of life.

2. In the sphere of dying grace Paul is making the statement that he has fought the honorable fight and achieve the pinnacle of the Spiritual Life and as a result has become a stabilizing rod for every generation after him.
 - i. Paul fulfilled every concept of the tactical victory and has maxed his tactical victory to complement the strategic victory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross, resurrection, ascension, and session.
 - ii. This anticipates v8 where he will receive the Ultra Super Grace Surpassing Grace rewards.
 3. Paul here uses the same word Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ used on the cross when his Substitutionary Spiritual Death was imminent Teleo here Tetelestai by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 4. Paul has finished in the past and not left anything unfinished but has not regrets despite having failures and entering reversionism and carnality just as we all do but NO REGRETS.
 5. Metabolized Bible Doctrine is guarded and preserved in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul of Paul and of each of us by the perpetuation of the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and moving on once Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace has been reached.
 6. This statement can only be stated by the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and is moving on to or has reached Ultra Super Grace.
- I. Anticipation of Surpassing Grace Rewards:
1. There are decorations for the Ultra Super Grace believer and these decorations will be perpetuated forever and Paul will wear all of them, the highest decoration which can be received from God.
 2. This decoration worn by Paul worn forever will glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever.
 3. Think about your own life:
 - i. Will you glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever?
 - ii. You will not glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ because you have a Resurrection Body which every cluck Christian in history will have.
 - a. This does not glorify God in any SPECIAL way but does prove “greater is he that is in us than he that is in the world”.
 - iii. We will be minus the Old Sin Nature and Human Good but so will all believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and this is part of Ultimate Sanctification and we also will have ultimate happiness.
 - iv. There are blessings and rewards for the Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers which are so far beyond the basic things for the believer in heaven that it is unimaginable.
 - v. These are the STEPHANOS or WREATHS of rewards which are the highest decorations of the Roman army.
 4. This is a command for us as believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ to MOVE ON, KEEP MOVING and break the barrier of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and KEEP MOVING to Ultra Super Grace.
 - i. The difference between Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace is the unusual mantle of total and complete opposition from satanic forces and systems which INTENSIFIES happiness vs just total happiness
 - ii. The crown of righteousness == the Medal of Honor for all those believers who reach and break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and It comes in 2 categories:
 - a. For Super Grace
 - b. For Ultra Super Grace
 - iii. The Crown of Life == for Ultra Super Grace believers only.

- iv. The Crown of Glory == Extra for the Pastor Teacher who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and leads his congregation there.
- 5. The total issue is if you are not a Super Grace believer or Ultra Super Grace believer YOU ARE NOTHING IN HEAVEN just a happy ultimate sanctification person walking in heaven singing hymns in a Resurrection Body.
 - i. There will be incredible differences in eternity between the believers who vary their spiritual growth from infancy vs those who break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
 - ii. Those in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace will have the most phenomenal blessings for every day forever in eternity.
 - iii. These believers have no special attributes and if any of them can reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and some to reach Ultra Super Grace **THEN WE CAN DO IT!**
 - iv. These are OUR objectives in the Christian Way of Life.
 - v. Although there will be no sorrow pain or misery in heaven there will be vast differences between sipping mint juleps on the veranda of your plantation mansion and picking the cotton down in the fields.
- 6. Paul is emphasizing here that HE WILL BE RECEIVING THESE REWARDS AND BLESSINGS and this has in it NO Arrogance.
 - i. Romans as the greatest military men in history and they recognized the importance of going above and beyond the call of duty and they also gave decorations and monetary stipend with every decoration.
 - ii. They started with Arm Bands == to the Bronze Star or Silver Star.
 - iii. They had necklaces == to the Crosses, Distinguished Service, Navy, Air force
 - iv. They had Campaign medals on a cross strap ==
 - v. The highest of all is the WREATH == Like our Medal of Honor or Victoria Cross etc
 - vi. The Romans said decorations went UP from least to greatest and the highest was for the head.
 - vii. The lowest wreath was the Oak Leaf Wreath, Then the Laurel Wreath, Then the highest was Woven Grass Wreath
 - viii. These were the civic crowns or wreaths.
 - ix. It is therefore fitting that the Stephanos or Wreath should be transferred to the Church Age New Testament Scripture as nomenclature of the highest decorations which the Royal Family of God can receive.
 - a. Mark Shannon on Guadalcanal moving through Japanese barrage and went from an to man during a 3 hour bombardment saved about 40 marines and for this received the SILVER STAR.
 - b. Our medals change and vary greatly but the Romans never did.
 - c. The Roman who received this would rather wear that Wreath than be ruler of the whole empire or the wealthiest man in the world.

J. The Wreath of Righteousness:

- 1. This is HONOR in the sense of fulfilling divine statutes or duty toward God.
- 2. Dikaiosune represents the 2nd stage of word construction in the philology of Hellenistic languages and the primary words were Dike and Dikaios and with suffixes they attain entirely different meanings.
 - i. Dike == Righteousness
 - ii. Dikaios == Adj for righteousness.
- 3. The reason we know this is from the suffix “sune” which indicates the development of the Greek sense of law.
- 4. Therefore the NOUN was not found in Homer or others in epic poetry.

- i. The suffix indicates refinement of Abstract Thought which the period of Epic Poetry had none in the 9th or 8th centuries BC.
5. Dikaiosune therefore became a word for CIVIL VIRTUE, OBSERVANCE OF LAW, FULFILLMENT OF ONE'S DUTY and this is how it entered the 5th century be the highest period of abstract thought.
6. Plato used this term for his UTOPIA in his Dialogues linked this with Sophrosune which means to be rational, mentally sound, reasonable, have common sense and have the ability to be on the inside and have so much Frame of Reference and ability that you can work oneself from an inner ignorance to an outer cognizance, by reason, logic, vocabulary, Frame of Reference.
 - i. Plato said these 2 words were EXACT equivalent
 - ii. Paul used Dikaiosune in this sense as a state of life and fulfillment of duty toward God linking the noun with the content of thinking in the soul as did Plato.
7. Therefore Dikaiosune is the perfect way to describe breaking into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and going on to Ultra Super Grace.
 - i. It is a fulfillment of the duty and responsibility of the Royal Family of God whereby the believer breaks the maturity barrier and fulfills every objective designed by God in GRACE for EACH OF US.
 - ii. Our final objective in this life is to reach Ultra Super Grace and it is OPEN to each and every believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. We can only reach this objective by strict academic discipline and self discipline and academic discipline and recognizing the authority of your right Pastor Teacher and getting under his teaching and STAYING THERE.
 - iv. This can be attained by any and every believer and going into dying grace is like a smooth cruise from life into eternity and is as easy as POURING WINE FROM A CUP.
- K. Whenever you see sune as a suffix on any noun in the Greek language you are not seeing a simple meaning but abstract thought which can be reduced to reality by a proper Frame of Reference and vocabulary and working your way through it.

2Tim 4:5-

v5: But you, Timothy, especially you and only you, always be well balanced, under self control, self disciplined, in all things continuing your functions under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, endure opposition from evil, execute THE work of the function of an evangelistic missionary traveling and training new Pastor Teachers for the indigenous population, carry out completely and fully your own spiritual gift ministry of Pastor Teacher as an Ultra Super-Grace believer.

2Tim 4:6

v6: For you see even now, EMPHATICALLY, I, Paul, an Ultra Super Grace believer, am already being poured out as a libation at the point of dying grace; the time under dying grace on this earth, of my striking the tent, hoisting the anchor, being unyoked from life, being released, my departure from life is at hand, imminent.

2Tim 4:7

v7: I have fought that good, noble, honorable fight, seizing and holding the high ground of Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace, I have finished, carried out or completed the race course of life in the past and not left anything unfinished and have no regrets of any kind, I have retained or guarded therefore, preserved that which is believed, the Doctrine resident in my Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, maintaining the High Ground of Ultra Super-Grace ,

Lesson #67 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:4, 2Tim 4:5

- I. Review of Paul's Reversionism, recovery, writing of the Prison Epistles:
 - A. Review comparison of Paul's Status Quo in Phil 3 and Timothy's Status Quo in 2Tim 3
 - B. 2Tim 4 is the Ultra Super Grace objective and principles and Paul has in this writing moved from Ultra Super Grace to Dying Grace.
 - C. 2Tim 4 is the completion of the changing of the responsibility for dissemination of Bible Doctrine from the Apostles, Paul being the Greatest, to Pastor Teacher with Timothy leading as a Super Grace and potential Ultra Super Grace believer.

- D. V2 has carry on orders for the Super Grace Pastor Teacher and v5 has carry on orders for the Ultra Super Grace Pastor Teacher.
 - 1. There is a recognition of continued progression in the Spiritual Life after Super Grace and the principle stands that the Pastor Teacher cannot bring his congregation any further in the Spiritual Life than he has advanced to.
- II. The Objective of the Christian Way of Life.
- A. All believers have the potential of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and from moving from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to Ultra Super Grace.
 - 1. There is NO EXCUSE for anyone in the Spiritual Life who has Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine NOT REACHING Ultra Super Grace if God permits you to live long enough.
 - 2. Ultra Super Grace is just as available to each of us as it was to Paul and remember it took Paul a while to get there having fallen into reversionism and therefore we also can make it to Ultra Super Grace.
 - 3. Ultra Super Grace is an objective and reaching it makes dying all the sweeter.
 - 4. Having been an Ultra Super Grace believer and the greatest bible doctrine teacher in all of Human History Paul will be one of the MOST decorated believers in eternity.
 - B. The rewards for the believer who receives surpassing grace is (gr) “Stephanos” == Wreath and there are several available for advanced believers.
 - 1. This also has a function for the Ultra Super Grace believer which goes along with it RULERSHIP with the Lord.
 - 2. The Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will make out all of the OERs for all the believers in the Human Race.
 - i. This will be a shock to most believers in the Church Age having known nothing of Bible Doctrine and only been focused on doing service for God and legalism.
 - 3. This will occur at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ **Rom 14:10, 2Cor 5:10, 2Tim 2:12, Heb 6:7-12**, etc.
 - i. Every believer will stand here and there will be decorations for some and nothing for others and those with decorations will wear them for all of their life.
 - C. We at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God are born again and are at that point a spiritual infant.
 - 1. If we function under Positive Volition and take in Bible Doctrine we grow and eventually grow up to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God (with possible falls into reversionism and recovery).
 - 2. If we continue after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we continue under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and continue to advance we WILL ultimately reach Ultra Super Grace.
 - 3. After reaching Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace Status Quo when our life is ended we will be the recipient of Dying Grace blessings to break into the eternity barrier.
 - 4. In Eternity we will receive surpassing grace blessings IF we have reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 - 5. This results in MAXIMUM capacity for loving Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ since loving Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ requires Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - D. Wreaths are decorations for the believers who have reached in time Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 - 1. Wreaths do not express the entire range of decorations given at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ but only the HIGHEST and those who have reached a maximum level of growth in the Spiritual Life in time.
 - 2. There will be other decorations however there will be many people who will pass before the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ and will receive nothing except the burning of their Human Good.

3. The greater the amount of Human Good for any given believer the greater the fire on that day.
 4. These people will ONLY receive Ultimate Sanctification which is the Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature minus Human Good and minus the Lake of Fire.
 - i. This has incredible happiness attached to it and it is infinitely better than being in the Lake of Fire but it does not even begin to compare to what you should have, WILL have if you stay with Bible Doctrine.
 - ii. What you can receive in eternity as maximum blessing requires breaking into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, Ultra Super Grace and receiving Dying Grace and Surpassing Grace in eternity.
- E. The objective of this study is the Doctrine of Surpassing Grace and the Doctrine of the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ.

III. The Doctrine of Surpassing Grace AND / OR the Doctrine of the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ AND / OR The Royal Family of God Efficiency Ratings

A. Biblical Principle of Nomenclature:

Eph 2:7

v7: That, in the approaching Ages of the eternal future, He, God, might demonstrate his surpassing grace riches in generosity toward us who are in Christ Jesus.

1. Surpassing Grace is being in eternity with the optimum in spiritual achievement and maximum in blessing and reward the ultimate in glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. Surpassing connotes something beyond Super Grace and TIME.
 2. The road to glory is GRACE:
 - i. We go from Saving grace to Living or Logistical Grace to Super Grace to Dying Grace to Surpassing Grace or to Ultra Super Grace to Dying Grace to Surpassing Grace.
 - ii. This falls into 3 categories for the believer:
 - a. Immaturity
 - i) Salvation Grace
 - ii) Living or Logistical Grace
 - b. Maturity
 - i) Super Grace
 - ii) Bravo Grace of Super Grace blessings added to Logistical Grace
 - iii) Ultra Super Grace
 - iv) Dying Grace for both Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace believers.
 - c. Eternal
 - i) Ultimate Sanctification of the Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature, minus Human Good, minus the Lake of Fire.
 - ii) Surpassing Grace Eternal Decorations and Rewards
 - d. In addition when there is negative progress this is reversionism
- B. There are 2 special blessing paragraphs in the grace Plan of God:
1. Reward in Time:
 - i. Super Grace blessing for those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 2. Reward and Decoration in Eternity
 - i. Surpassing Grace blessings and rewards for those who have reached in time Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 3. Rewards in Time for the believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in 5 categories: (Review these in Detail)
 - i. These are all intensified for the believer who has reached Ultra Super Grace in time under a maximum intense pressure and persecution from Satan and his forces

and systems which do nothing but INTENSIFY the blessing and happiness of the Ultra Super Grace believer (Moses, Paul, Jeremiah, ETC).

- a. The Believer does NOT have to receive maximum persecution in order to reach Ultra Super Grace although there will be periods of intense distraction pressure in an attempt to prevent the Super Grace believer from going on to Ultra Super Grace.
 - ii. Spiritual Blessings
 - a. Cat I Love Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - b. Sharing the Happiness of God
 - c. Ability to handle any situation or disaster in life
 - iii. Temporal Blessings
 - a. Wealth, success promotion, prosperity in every field at any time or situation in history.
 - b. This is OFTEN the only reason why believers continue to attend bible class.
 - iv. Association Blessings
 - a. Those in ANY periphery of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God are blessed by their relationship or association with the Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believer including geographic areas.
 - b. This can be directly from God or directly from the Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believer.
 - i) The believer may provide things for those associated with them by giving them things.
 - ii) God may directly provide blessing to those associated with the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - v. Historical Blessings
 - a. The believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace will be a spiritual atlas and stabilize his generation in history
 - b. The believer who move on to Ultra Super Grace will also stabilize his generation but also provide a stabilizing rod for extended periods of history.
 - c. These believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God are always on the right side of Human History and support their generation of history.
 - vi. Dying Blessing
 - a. Every believer has a choice in life of going with the Love of God for blessing or for Divine Discipline.
 - b. Every believer has a choice of divine expression in Love through blessing for spiritual advance or through Divine Discipline for spiritual decline or reversionism.
 - c. This is totally determined by the attitude of the believer toward Bible Doctrine and each of these 2 alternatives have a termination point.
 - d. The termination point for reversionism is the Sin Unto Death
 - e. The termination point for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is Dying Grace
 - f. For the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he has the best in life and when his life is ended he has better than the best in Dying Grace.
4. Churches and their congregations MUST realize that EVERYONE has a right to hear and respond to the teaching of Bible Doctrine without regard to their social status, occupation, grooming or dress.
- i. This is the best church to attend and it is the best friendliest church where everyone minds their own business at all times.

- ii. Dress and grooming are personal choices and with spiritual growth will come changes made in the individual by the individual taking in that doctrine.
- 5. Rewards for believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Eternity:
 - i. Although God has designed these blessings for ALL who would be believers in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ ONLY those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will receive it.
 - ii. This does not take away from the fact that even as the worlds worst believer in your generation you will have the same Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good and minus the Lake of Fire as any other believer.
 - iii. This is a special blessing and reward above and beyond Ultimate Sanctification.
 - iv. All believers will be extremely happy in eternity but there will be degrees of happiness based on the decorations received at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ for the spiritual advance made in eternity.
- C. Definition:
 - 1. Surpassing Grace is the status of special blessing and reward in eternity for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace in time.
 - 2. Surpassing Grace is a Status Quo above and beyond Ultimate Sanctification albeit in the same sphere of Ultimate Sanctification.
 - 3. Surpassing Grace is the ultimate in regenerate mankind for glorifying God to the maximum.
- D. The Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ is the basis for administration of surpassing grace blessings and rewards for believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God **2Cor 5:10**
 - 1. The Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ is the Royal Family of God Efficiency Report.
 - 2. Those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God will receive decorations which are phenomenal which will be forever in eternity
 - 3. Those who fail to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and fall into reversionism are going to be in a different category but still under Ultimate Sanctification.
- E. The reversionistic believer can lose his surpassing grace blessings but NOT his Salvation nor ultimate sanctification **2Tim 2:11-13**
- F. The Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ eliminates any necessity for judging or maligning other believers. **Phil 2:10-11**
 - 1. It is obvious that it is not our job nor our prerogative to judge or malign any other believer for any reason.
 - 2. The people who do this are generally STUPID and most often FEMALE or a idiotic catty male.
 - 3. We are not to hand out OERs it is not our JOB unless we hire believers and then we MUST evaluate them and if they fall short of expectations and policies and procedures they should be FIRED.
 - 4. This also applies to the local church and to any area where you have authority over others especially where there are other believers under you.
- G. The daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception is the KEY to breaking into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God which includes reaching Super Grace and moving on to Ultra Super Grace and concludes with Dying Grace.
 - 1. This is the basis for rewards and blessing in eternity under surpassing grace **James 1:25, 2:12-13** compared.
- H. Analogy to the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ **Heb 13:6**
- I. Wreaths or Crowns are the highest decorations in eternity and are given ONLY to believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and this is the "Medal of Honor" category.
 - 1. See the Roman Crowns earlier ALL MADE of GOLD.

2. There are Wreaths of Honor for the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God when he receives surpassing grace blessings:
 - i. Wreath of Righteousness
 - a. This is the decoration given to ANY Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believer for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - b. This means that he has received the Super Grace blessing package in time.
 - c. This is the 3rd class civic wreath like the laurel or oak leave one for Roman soldiers.
 - d. This simply means he has reached Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and this will glorify God forever.
 - e. *There is NO excuse for any believer especially those who have come up in the Spiritual Life under the Col to NOT have this wreath.*
 - ii. Wreath of Life
 - a. This is the decoration for Ultra Super Grace believers ONLY. James
 - b. This believer has to wear the mantle of pressure and opposition in Ultra Super Grace for a period of time like Moses, Paul, and Jeremiah certainly and most likely Timothy did.
 - c. In time this is more than just reaching Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace Status Quo but wearing the mantle of opposition for a period of time.
 - iii. Wreath of Glory
 - a. This is ONLY for the Pastor Teacher who reaches Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace AND leads some members of his congregation to Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 - b. The Pastor Teacher cannot grow by listening to someone else teach Bible Doctrine but must grow by his own Study and he cannot bring his congregation beyond his own growth.
 - c. Illustration:
 - i) If the Pastor Teacher reaches Super Grace and brings X into Super Grace they will wear the wreath of Righteousness and he will have several plantations and be allocated 50 mint juleps per day.
 - ii) If the Pastor Teacher reaches Ultra Super Grace and brings X into Ultra Super Grace then he will have 50 plantations and as many mint juleps per day.
 - d. The Wreath is something you wear but what goes with it VARIES greatly.
 - iv. There may be 3 or maybe MORE than 3.
 - v. All of these BELONG for breaking into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

2Tim 4:8

v8: In the future in Phase III, eternity there is laid up, stored away, preserved or reserved for me a decoration wreath or medal of that righteousness (Dikaiousune) because of total fulfillment of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God spiritual progress from Super-Grace to Ultra Super-Grace to Dying Grace, which the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, the totally objective righteous evaluator or judge who will award or give to me on that day at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ and not to me only but also to all those Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace believers who love his appearing at the exanastasis or rapture of the church, having Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ in time.

Lesson #68 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 4:1

- I. The necessity of Discipline
 - A. Thayer came up with the idea of educating and training all sorts of people in the United States of America to become the officers corps of the United States of America Army and Navy and he used the remaining fort at West Point to do so.

1. Within the framework of US Military Academy at West point they had a great system of self discipline which began with beast barracks and went on until graduation day and this went on and on despite many attacks against it throughout its history.
 2. The attacks came from stupid politicians which we have had in this nation through every generation and West Point has been made the object of every experimentation of every political whim and used to show visiting dignitaries of American Marching and demonstrate some of the principles of United States of America history and it has then been used as a political football as well.
 3. There have therefore been problems at the Military Academy throughout its history even to this day and they survived them all because of the tremendous system of self perpetuating discipline.
- B. This is also pertinent in the formation of the church in the Church Age and the principle is not simply academic self discipline but is the idea of the daily intake of Bible Doctrine under the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and recognition of the authority of the Pastor Teacher and the concepts of growing in Grace in the Spiritual Life and reaching and surpassing Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
1. These things all continue despite every aspect of history some good and some bad and whether there is great historical prosperity and advance or great historical adversity and decadence these principles still persist.
 2. Throughout the 2000 years of the dispensation of the church the objectives remain the same and the stabilizing factor throughout this period has been the local church where Bible Doctrine is studied and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is honored and where Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God occurs by a maximum number of the congregation as a result of the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- C. There will come a time when the Lord returns and we will be with him for all eternity.
1. This concept leads to a new concept in history called ULTIMATE SANCTIFICATION.
 2. Every person who has ever believed in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from Pentecost to the end of the Church Age will be assembled in Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature, minus Human Good and never to be near the Lake of Fire.
 - i. All believers the worst and best, reversionists to Ultra Super Grace believers.
 3. Beyond the Status Quo of Ultimate Sanctification there are a series of decorations which as they rise in their greatness they glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever to the maximum.
 4. There will be great variations in heaven between the blessings and decoration of believers
 5. All believers will be there under Ultimate Sanctification principles and have the Resurrection Body and total perfection forever.
 6. At our death there will be for all believers, no more sorry, pain nor death ever.
 7. BUT we have been so propagandized that all people are created or born or deserve to be equal all which are not true, and we have come to think that everyone will be the same in heaven and it will be a super socialistic brotherhood and everyone will fall into each other's arms and rejoice with May Pole dances forever.
 8. This is NOT the case and whatever heaven is IT IS NOT THAT, and there will be vast distinctions in heaven based on the objectives you achieve in time.
 9. The amazing thing about this requirement is that there is NO excuse for any believer ever to FAIL to reach these top 3 decorations and they are open for every believer and decreed in Eternity Past for all believers and it is only your attitude toward Bible Doctrine which determines if you will reach this sphere or not.
 10. There will be many many believers in heaven under ultimate sanctification with a Resurrection Body MINUS ANY decorations and there will be those with varying decorations which are NOT revealed to us and there will be some with 1 or more of the top 3 decorations.

- D. Review the basis and background for the 3 wreaths of Blessing and reward for believers who reach and surpass Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
1. All wreaths as rewards are given to believers on the basis of breaking the barrier to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and are the highest decorations which a believer can receive and which will glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever.
 2. All other believers will receive varying decorations based on their spiritual advance.
- E. Paul began to see the principles of maturity and we saw Paul recovery from reversionism and regain his Status Quo as a Super Grace believer and moved on further to Ultra Super Grace and is encouraging Timothy to follow his example, having gone through the same reversionism and recovered to Super Grace, and move ahead to Ultra Super Grace.
1. Receiving these Stephanos decorations as believers do not provide basis for claiming greatness as a believer but DO provide the opportunity to GLORIFY Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for all eternity TO THE MAXIMUM.
 2. Review the 3 Stephanos Wreaths and all are for breaking into and remaining in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 3. The means of achieving Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God is through consistent persistent daily Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- F. There are Wreaths of Honor for the believer who reaches and/or exceeds Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God when he receives surpassing grace blessings these all being MATURITY Wreaths:
1. Wreath of Righteousness **2Tim 4:8**
 - i. This is the decoration given to ANY Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace believer for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is the most common of the wreaths.
 - ii. This means that he has received the Super Grace blessing package in time.
 - iii. This is the 3rd class civic wreath like the laurel or oak leave one for Roman soldiers.
 - iv. This simply means he has reached Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and this will glorify God forever.
 - v. *There is NO excuse for any believer especially those who have come up in the Spiritual Life under the Col to NOT have this wreath.*
 2. Wreath of Life
 - i. This is the decoration for Ultra Super Grace believers ONLY. **James 1:12, Rev 2:10**
 - ii. This believer has to wear the mantle of pressure and opposition in Ultra Super Grace for a period of time like Moses, Paul, and Jeremiah certainly and most likely Timothy did.
 - iii. In time this is more than just reaching Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace Status Quo but wearing the mantle of opposition for a period of time.
 - iv. You do not receive this for suffering but by continuous Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine after Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace has been achieved.
 - v. No one can love Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ like the Ultra Super Grace believer no one can love Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as this believer not having enough Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to do so with.
 - vi. This decoration glorifies Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ forever and this is a part of the Surpassing Grace Package of Blessings for the Ultra Super Grace believer which is vastly greater than ultimate sanctification.
 - vii. There are going to be a lot of buck privates in heaven and many who will be somewhere in between and there is no excuse in heaven's Table of Organization for everyone NOT being a general or admiral.

3. Wreath of Glory
 - i. This is **ONLY** for the Pastor Teacher who reaches Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace **AND** leads some members of his congregation to Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace. **Phil 4:1, 1Thes 2:19-20**
 - ii. The Pastor Teacher cannot grow by listening to someone else teach Bible Doctrine but must grow by his own Study and he cannot bring his congregation beyond his own growth.
 - a. NO pastor can take his congregation beyond his own spiritual growth.
 - b. His message must reflect his own personal study and therefore communicate the needed information so that those who stick with his ministry will also break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond.
 - c. He must be faithful in his function under his spiritual gift in order that he break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 - d. He must faithfully communicate Bible Doctrine in order to lead his congregation to his level of spiritual growth so that a lifetime of effective studying and teaching results in leading others past Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God into Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and based on this he receives the wreath of glory.
 - iii. Illustration:
 - a. If the Pastor Teacher reaches Super Grace and brings X into Super Grace they will wear the wreath of Righteousness and he will have several plantations and be allocated 50 mint juleps per day.
 - b. If the Pastor Teacher reaches Ultra Super Grace and brings X into Ultra Super Grace then he will have 50 plantations and as many mint juleps per day.
4. 2 things occur when a Pastor Teacher is faithful in the function of his spiritual gift:
 - i. He continues to grow spiritually through his own personal study and this results in his breaking into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and eventually to Ultra Super Grace.
 - ii. He communicates the results of his study to his congregation in an expository manner teaching line upon line and precept upon precept resulting in the spiritual growth in his congregation so that those who are under consistent persistent Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine taught will also break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iii. In this way the Pastor Teacher attains maximum spiritual growth without which he cannot lead his congregation to maximum spiritual growth and NO congregation can grow on programs, devotionals, textual sermons, epigrams, counseling, lonely heart clubs, or any other substitute for consistent teaching of Bible Doctrine.
 - iv. The Royal Family of God can only grow in the Spiritual Life under strict academic discipline in the function of the local church and through the Filling of God the Holy Spirit to maintain objectivity, good manners, poise and concentration constantly on the word of God and assimilating it and transferring the Bible Doctrine from the Left Lobe of the Soul to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul converting Gnosis to Epignosis on a constant daily basis.
 - v. The Royal Family of God can only grow in the Spiritual Life by the daily intake of the spiritual food of Bible Doctrine **1Cor 11:14-15**
 - vi. The pastors work which remains at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ and is not burned will be the basis for reward of the Wreath of Glory.

- a. There will be Pastor Teachers in heaven with ONLY ultimate sanctification and NOTHING else.
 5. The Wreath is something you wear but the exceptional blessings which go with it VARY greatly.
 - i. There may be 3 or maybe MORE than 3 Wreaths???
- G. Review the concept of the spiritual atlas and stabilizing rod for history of the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Ultra Super Grace respectively.
 1. The believer has this as his primary objective in the Spiritual Life but he must also take in enough Bible Doctrine to be able to properly interpret contemporary history and without this he will react to historical disaster moving into reversionism and fail to fulfill the objectives which God has designed and keeps us alive in order for under living or Logistical Grace.
- H. Principle of the Wreath of Righteousness:
 1. All believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God not only have maximum love for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ but they love the rapture as the parade in which they will receive and display their formal decorations.
 - i. NO everyone will be decorated and be able to display their decorations ONLY those who have it coming under the previous campaign which starts for the believer the moment he enters the Plan of God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - ii. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive 39 irrevocable assets for our Spiritual Life in time and eternity and we also are given a specified time on this earth AFTER salvation and then we depart from this life by the rapture or death.
 - iii. There will be decorations and a parade which begins with the rapture as all believers of the Church Age will pass in review and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ will then give decorations to all the Royal Family of God and to those who who have broken into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God he will give the WREATHS of honor.
 - iv. Production or works are not ever an issue and we will not receive the wreaths for any human activities of production such as praying, witnessing, suffering or working around the local church but ONLY for Spiritual Growth which comes from Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine consistently.
 - v. PRODUCTION is a result of spiritual status not ever the means of spiritual status.
 2. The Wreath of Righteousness is the total fulfillment of spiritual progress and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and is the most common of the wreaths.
 - i. We start at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God as an infant believer knowing NOTHING of the Spiritual Life or Plan of God.
 - ii. We then advance in the Spiritual Life IF we have and persist with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and eventually pass through adolescence and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iii. When we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive a Super Grace blessing package in 5 categories.
 - iv. All Super Grace believer receive the Wreath of Righteousness as do all Ultra Super Grace believers.
 3. There are 3 categories of Wreaths of honor see ABOVE:
 4. The believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God have great capacity for Loving Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ since this takes maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to accomplish.

- i. You cannot know the unseeable without knowing Bible Doctrine the means of him revealing his essence.
- ii. You cannot love what you do not know therefore it takes a maximum of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to KNOW God and thus to love God.
- iii. Reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace allows the believer the opportunity to function under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and when this believer gets to Ultra Super Grace this is vastly increased.

Phil 4:1

v1: Therefore My beloved brethren, Church Age believers in the Royal Family of God, deeply desired brethren on Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, whom I long to see, My object or source of happiness because of your Positive Volition, and my Victory Wreath of Glory, so in this way from your persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception from the Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace teacher, stand fast, keep on being stabilized by advancing not retreating in The Lord, reaching and holding experiential sanctification while waiting for ultimate sanctification, ones worthy of love from God.

1Thes 2:19-20

v19: For who is our confidence, hope 3 of confident assurance or expectation, or Happiness, or wreath or crown of exaltation, in the presence of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ rewards will be imputed to your Resurrection Body, or our esprit DE Corps or Wreath or Happiness, Is it not even you the Super-Grace and Ultra Super-Grace believer the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in the presence of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the rapture.

v20: For you even you are our glory and happiness.

1Pet 5:4

v4: And when the chief Shepherd is appears you will receive the unfading wreath or crown of glory.

- I. There is a clear distinction between the fact that God Loves all believers and the believers who are WORTHY of the Love of God.
 1. Those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God are the ones worthy of the Love of God.
- J. This highest decoration concept works back into the Old Testament Scripture for believers there and for another category.
 1. Stephanos is peculiar to the Roman Army but it was first used for those winning in the Greek Games like the Olympic or Pithian games, and this was the highest decoration which led to a life of greatness.
 - i. This was how the Greeks used this concept and when Latin and Greek became equivalent languages STEPHANOS was then used for the Civic Crown and it was a Wreath.
 - ii. This therefore came into the New Testament Scripture as the highest decoration for the believer who achieved Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond.
 2. The Jews did not have Stephanos or the concept of the Crown or Wreath and the only crown they knew was that which the king wore.
 - i. It is not technically correct to say Moses or Jeremiah or other believers who reached Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace Status Quo in the Old Testament Scripture would wear a Stephanos Wreath of Honor.
 - ii. God used another means of explaining the highest decoration for the believer in the Old Testament Scripture who reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iii. This is related to the eternal Holy City **Heb 11:9-1, 13, 16**

Heb 11:9-10

v9: By means of Bible Doctrine, He (Abraham) lived as a temporary resident with reference to the land, as a foreign land, dwelling in tents with Isaac and Jacob, Joint Heirs of the same promise.

v10: For he himself kept waiting with anticipation for a city having foundations whose designer and builder was The God.

Heb 11:13

v13: According to Bible Doctrine resident in the Soul of the mature Believers all these died according to the promise of Dying grace, not having received the surpassing grace promises but having seen the same from a distance, but having saluted them upon reaching Super Grace or Ultra Super-Grace and embraced them upon dying and having acknowledged that they were strangers and transients while living on the earth.

Heb 11:16

v16: But on the other hand as a matter of reality they themselves desire and strive for something better than what is offered in this world, that is the heavenly blessing and reward. Therefore The God is not ashamed of these same ones who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God to be designated their God, for he has prepared cities for these same ones.

3. When Abraham left UR he lived in Tents and was not permitted to live in the great cities of the ancient world.
 - i. He did however anticipate a great city built by The God as his reward.
 - ii. These believers of the Old Testament Scripture upon reaching Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace Status Quo understood their surpassing grace promises and upon dying embraced these promises and surpassing grace blessings and were passing through earthly life from GRACE to GRACE.
 4. For the believer who reaches the objective of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in the Old Testament Scripture the term is that God is NOT ASHAMED of them.
 - i. These have fulfilled the objectives designed for them in Eternity Past.
 - ii. He first demonstrates his lack of shame in them by giving to them the great blessings of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God for the Old Testament Scripture believers.
 - iii. These will be decorated in eternity by the function of Cities.
- K. The crown or wreath is used for the decorations of the believers in the Royal Family of God and for the believers in the Old Testament Scripture times the Cities are used to depict their blessings for eternity.
1. The Ultra Super Grace believer in the Old Testament Scripture would be MOSES.
 2. Even at the time of his birth his parents in Status Quo Super Grace knew that they were looking at an infant who would some day be an Ultra Super Grace believer.

Heb 11:23

v23: By means of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul when Moses was born, was hidden for three months by his parents, because they saw an infant pertaining to the city which Abraham would receive in eternity; and they were not afraid of the edict of the Pharaoh (Acts 7:20).

Acts 7:20

v20: "In which time Moses was born, and was very, very beautiful or handsome as a child, and he was to The God an infant pertaining to a city {asteios} and all his life at every stage of growth, and nourished up in his father's house three months."

Rev 21:2, 10, 11

v2: And I saw the holy city, the new Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, made ready as a bride adorned for her husband;

v10: And in the Spirit he carried me away to a great, high mountain, and showed me the holy city Jerusalem coming down out of heaven from God,

v11: having the glory of God, its radiance like a most rare jewel, like a jasper, clear as crystal.

3. They understood that Moses would be the greatest believer in the Old Testament Scripture history and along with Paul he would be one of the 2 greatest believers and stabilizers of all of Human History.
 4. The city is equivalent to the decoration wreaths of the Royal Family of God Church Age believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond
 5. Rev 21:2-10-11 relate the city to the Crown of Glory
 6. Therefore it is obvious that God had not overlooked any generation of history nor the believers of varying generations who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- L. Never has there been so little interest in the word of God as in our generation.

1. In the last generation there were many expository teachers of Bible Doctrine traveling from city to city always having a wide hearing and those who faithfully dug in to study and teach consistently until they brought their congregation to maturity.
2. In our generation there is a dirth of expository teaching and everyone is moving in a different direction and Christians have their own concepts of what spiritual growth is and what the Spiritual Life should be.
3. These have fallen away from the local church to outside organizations which are in fact hindering a whole generation from fulfilling the Plan of God and reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
4. There is not excuse for anyone to NOT continue their advance in the Spiritual Life are reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and getting at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ the "WELL DONE" from him.
 - i. Off the subject New years Resolutions are for WEAK people and Strong people make good decisions as situations arise.

Lesson #69 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:4

- I. Perseverance:
 - A. Without keeping up with Bible Doctrine consistently it is very difficult to NOT be discouraged in trying to learn Bible Doctrine and a specialized vocabulary.
 1. In order to grow in the Spiritual Life there must be perseverance in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 2. It takes professionalism and not emotionalism to be persistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 3. Emotion is something you enjoy not something on which you depend for fun or to function.
 - B. Perseverance NEVER fails and the point is in everything you do you must STICK with it since you never know when perseverance will BREAK through for you.
- II. Review The digression from 2Tim 3 to Phil 3 is the result of Paul and Timothy being in the same Status Quo
 - A. Paul's Jerusalem Reversionism vs Timothy's Ephesian Reversionism and the move to Ultra Super Grace.
 - B. It is the anticipation of Paul that Timothy will do as he did go on from reversionism to Super Grace and ultimately to Ultra Super Grace.
 - C. Timothy like Paul had been a human celebrity and in v4 Paul digresses to discuss human celebrityship and how it must NEVER be a hindrance to spiritual advance.
 1. The fact is that celebrityship is not even usable in the Spiritual Life despite being exploited by some church or religious organizations for financial help which is wrong and Evil and out of the Plan of God function for the local church.
 2. Human celebrityship can be a hindrance but it should not be.
 3. The question is will success spoil the believer or not.
 4. The advancing believer must ignore any human celebrityship and move his function into the Angelic Conflict for most efficacious functions.
 5. Spiritual growth does not necessarily mean setting aside human celebrityship some times it does and others not.
 6. However celebrityship has to be ignored under certain circumstances and this is what is discussed in v4.
 - D. Paul had great reason to put confidence in his human accomplishments or celebrityship.
 1. His critics claimed to be great judiazers while Paul was the absolute greatest of these.
 2. He points out that none of these people have ever attained the level he had in Judaism but they are trying to say security is in this human celebrityship and success.
 - i. Judaism was one of the 2 greatest Frame of References for human success in the ancient world and Paul had been in Judaism and had as a YOUNG man gone all

the way to the top and his critics who followed him around were still climbing the ladder to the top.

3. Paul recognizes his superiority over his critics who are struggling in the field of Judaism while he had actually attained the top in this field.
 - i. Paul has said in v3 that he does not have confidence in the human sphere of accomplishment but here he says he could have such confidence.
 - ii. Paul was a greater person in the area of Judaism than any other person and what Paul is saying is that if salvation were based on Legalism he would be the ONLY saved person on the earth.
 - iii. Legalistic persons all have a high level of competitiveness since all legalists are driven by arrogance which compels them to try to go higher or be better in the legalistic realm than anyone else.

E. V5 and 6 give us the false standards of Judaism for the time of Paul.

1. This is impertinent to us except in some fundamentalist circles and for the 7th day Adventists.
2. Paul had the highest rating that you could possess in Judaism and had it at a very early age and he was humanly successful as early as Napoleon was.
3. Some people are successful early in life and some later in life and Julius Caesar was the most stabilized person of success in history since it came to him later in life whereas Alexander the Great was the most successful by Age 23 and he died at age 26.
 - i. Moses had great human celebrityship when he was young and great spiritual achievement later in life.
 - ii. Moses is going to receive all the great rewards of the New Holy City and Paul will receive all the wreaths of honor for the Spiritual Life in the Church Age.
4. Review the concepts of Genius and the greatest men of multiple areas of genius in history and their abilities.
 - i. The men who end up great in history are not the ones who are really smart men and there are far more dumb people great in history than very smart ones.
 - ii. Dumb people tend to orient to reality more quickly than those who have great perspicacity.
 - a. Example: Einstein
 - iii. Many people with great genius are totally disoriented to the reality of life.
 - iv. Genius is useless unless it is oriented to the reality of life.
 - v. This is why both Paul and Moses were oriented to life and history.
 - a. Moses was a musical genius see the psalms and some of the Pentateuch
 - i) He was a military genius and was being groomed to be rule of Egypt.
 - ii) He was great in equitation and archery and a GREAT soldier and when the 3 greatest Egyptian generals could not stop the Ethiopians Moses took a scratch army out and decisively defeated them and saved Egypt from the Ethiopians.
 - iii) He was an engineering genius and unlike those of today he also was a literary genius and he built the 2 great treasure cities of the Thutmose Empire and did this before age 40.
 - iv) He also wrote a large portion of the Torah
 - b. Moses was by far the greatest genius of Egyptian history and when he left the Bastard Son of Thutmose II took over and has been recognized as the greatest Pharaoh of Egyptian History. **Heb 11**
 - vi. Moses walked out on this human celebrityship seeing before him the objectives of the Spiritual Life and surpassing grace.

- a. As a result of this he walked out on the human celebrityship and focused on his spiritual objectives and moved into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and all the way to Ultra Super Grace.
 - b. He like Paul went into reversionism and recovered and moved into Super Grace and then to Ultra Super Grace and had one of the greatest deaths under dying grace in the Old Testament Scripture.
 - vii. Paul was the same as Moses and was famous as a young man and spiritually great as he got older.
 - a. He was famous as a Roman citizen and also in Judaism and was a multi genius in this system.
 - b. His critics were all Judaizers and therefore what greater way to destroy the critics totally than to simply give your own credentials in the area where they are striving.
 - 5. In the early church all Christians were susceptible to Judaism and its legalism and were impressed by legalism and it gave them something to shoot at being antithetical to their background in the phallic cults.
 - i. This appealed to them and gave them something to work for and Paul had to get their focus off of human achievement and get it on the maturity barrier and not be deterred by these other things.
- F. Categories of Human Celebrityship under Judaism.
- 1. Ritual
 - i. Circumcision for believers occurred later in life and it was a big deal for them but Paul was circumcised because he was BORN a Jew and circumcised on the 8th day of his life.
 - ii. Judaizers took this ritual without the reality of salvation and used it as a basis of being critical of Paul who did not teach anything including it as necessary for salvation or spirituality.
 - iii. These judaizers spent a great deal of time learning all there was about Judaism and getting to the point of accepting circumcision as a ritual and when they got to this point they felt they had made great advance in relationship with God.
 - iv. In reality they had not for the reality is in Bible Doctrine not the ritual of circumcision.
 - v. This same thing applies today for those who consider baptism needed for Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and it becomes a divider because the WRONG importance is attached to this ritual.
 - vi. You cannot attach an importance to a ritual which the bible does not delineate for it.
 - vii. Paul is therefore saying that whenever you take a ritual like circumcision and try to relate it to salvation or spirituality or spiritual advance this is false and causes a great deal of trouble.
 - viii. This same thing occurs when the issue becomes the Eucharist ritual.
 - 2. Racial
 - i. Some people care nothing about ritual but are extremely concerned about Race.
 - ii. There are times in history when certain races rise to the top in history and show vigor for 100 or 200 years and then disappear and this is demonstrated clearly by the Romans who in fact were a conglomeration of 4 races not just 1.
 - iii. Today we find Italians who think they are descended from the Romans but most likely they are from Greeks or Turks and every country in the world has at one time or another invaded Italy.
 - iv. The Germans have a thing about how great they are as a race but they are the greatest barbarians in history and have only come into modern history in the past couple of hundred years and just before the middle ages the Germans were

- wearing skins and living in caves and worshiping TREES and this is why we have a Christmas tree at Christmas time and is the basis for the song “O Tannenbaum”.
- v. The Anglo Saxons which is where we in the United States of America get our culture are people who painted their skin blue and went out to the area of stone henge and contacted demons and had the most ghastly system of thing imaginable and barely got civilized because of the invasions which occurred there.
 - vi. As a result an Englishman is a conglomeration of every race imaginable coming together, some are very Scandinavian and some very German.
 - vii. The only people in this country who should NOT have racial confidence are the American Indian since the totally LOST the game.
 - viii. The point is that there is no such thing as RACIAL confidence and no such thing as a PURE RACE.
 - a. The problem of Hitler was that he never went to school and spent his early life painting houses and smelled too much paint thinner and as a result got so high on it he became disillusioned about the purity of the German race.
 - b. The Purest race you can come to is the Jew themselves and they are not even pure being ½ gentile starting with Joseph who married an Egyptian woman.
 - c. This means that everyone in the tribe of Ephraim and Monasses are ½ Egyptian.
 - ix. Anyone who has any Jewish descendants at all is considered Jewish by the word of God and Paul fell into this category and mentions it from.
 - x. Although there is no basis for racial confidence while most of the European people and those on the British Isles were living in forests and wearing skins and hoping for a warm day from one of their gods the Jews had a fantastic culture already.
 - xi. There are 2 GREAT peoples in Human History but they were not of a pure race, the Romans and Jews.
 - xii. When Paul says he was from the RACE of Israel he is stating something that many of the Judaisers did not have that is being descended from the Jewish race.
 - xiii. Many of his critics were proselytes and gentiles being converted to Israel not born into it.

3. Family

- i. Paul was descended from the tribe of Benjamin of Israel and most of the critics of Paul did not even know their descent and were not Jews in the first place.
- ii. Benjamin was the warrior tribe of Israel and they had the first King over Israel and therefore had ROYAL celebrityship and were Loyal to David in the revolution therefore they had honor and character celebrityship, they were part of the southern kingdom and possessed stability and had Laws of Divine Establishment superiority.
- iii. This was TRULY a great thing and Paul was Born from the lineage of that tribe.
- iv. If relationship with God or spirituality was based on family prominence then Saul of Tarsus would have been a very prominent person from birth.
- v. The reality is that ancestry and any human celebrityship has no meaning in the Spiritual Life and each and every believer has the option and opportunity to simply move along and advance consistently to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- vi. For every believer the most important aspect of salvation is that they are born again into the Royal Family of God and their human celebrityship or total lack thereof has absolutely NO MEANING.
- vii. We must all forget the principles of human celebrityship in order to concentrate on the true objective of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

4. National:
 - i. Paul was nationally a Jew and a patriot as well and this refers in his case to the conservative Jewish culture in contrast to the LIBERAL Hellenistic culture.
 - ii. Some Jews had become entranced by the Hellenistic culture brought in by Alexander the Great while others like Paul stuck to the Torah and word of God as it existed for them.
 - iii. Alexander the great became a one world person and was in the process of starting the first United Nations in history when God took him right out of history.
 - iv. It is great to be conservative but the unbeliever as a conservative is going straight to HELL and he will have 2 things to bother him in hell:
 - a. The Lake of Fire
 - b. Those horrible Liberals
 - c. Being conservative is wonderful but it won't get you into heaven.
 - v. Paul was nationalistic and patriotic and did not have the one world concepts of the Hellenistic Jew and he had resisted Liberalism in the Greek culture and was an old fashioned conservative.
 - vi. If salvation or spirituality were attained by nationalism and conservatism then Paul would have been the first to be saved.
5. Religious:
 - i. Before his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God he was JUST LIKE the rich young ruler.
 - ii. Paul was like one who believes in the United States of America in the Monroe doctrine and he believed in keeping Israel SEPARATE from the other nations because of its unique mission and purpose and function in life and its great history.
 - iii. Paul in the United States of America would have been a STRONG adherent to the Monroe doctrine and he would have been leading the way in the execution of presidents which we have had that violated it starting it with Woodrow Wilson, Franklin Roosevelt, H. Truman and all the rest of them.
 - iv. Paul was more of a conservative than any of us would ever be because he had more understanding of things relating to conservatism.
 - v. There are 2 kinds of conservatives in life:
 - a. Those who luck out in life and have things they want to keep and are conservative because they want to hang on to what they have achieved and don't want the liberal scum like hippies and welfare recipients to get it.
 - b. Those who are smart and understand the Laws of Divine Establishment and the principles behind it and these are the TRUE CONSERVATIVES AND THIS WAS PAUL.
 - vi. The writers of the New Testament Scripture mentioned the Pharisees many times considering that the readers knew and understood the pharisees and did not emphasize the general doctrines of the pharisees but where those doctrines differed from the doctrines of the Lord.
 - vii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was Pro Pharisee but legalism had destroyed them during his ministry and they opposed him.
 - viii. In the 4 gospels therefore ONLY where the Lord differed from the Pharisees do you find reference to any Pharisical doctrines and because of this you get a false impression of the Pharisees because you only see the FALSE doctrines of the pharisees.
 - ix. The Pharisees also have many true doctrines and Paul even used one of them stating that he was a pharisee and believe in the resurrection and this riot was trying to destroy someone who believes in the literal physical bodily resurrection.

- x. The tradition of the Pharisees begins with scribes and theologians and they were said to have begun in 459 BC with Ezra and continued through the 2nd century BC until the title merged with the Hazedians in order to destroy Antiacus Epiphany in the Maccabean Wars.
- xi. Around 134 BC they became known as Pharisees and Separatists and became powerful under the rule of John Hecanus seeking to control the religion of the State.
- xii. Ezra as the first was as accurately on doctrine as you could be and many Pharisees were and some were even saved in the days of our Lord and did not oppose him.
- xiii. On the death bed of Alexander the Great there were some scribes who came to him and he was very impressed with them and wanted to make sure they manned his empire but these were suppressed after his death and his generals fought over the empire and what became Hellenistic empires and monarchies.
- xiv. There was a very famous man in Israel named Alexander Hecanus and in BC76 he advised his wife Alexandra Salome to make peace with the pharisees which she did by putting the government into their hands so from BC76 to the time of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ they dominated the Sanhedrin.
- xv. They suffered under the rule of Antiper the Son of Herod and after Herod's death the pharisees petitioned for Roman Rule and this was their terrible mistake.
- xvi. Doctrinally and politically they were conservative and admired conservatism in Rome but forgot that Rome was very voracious and in suffering from power lust was constantly grasping for more territory and to steal, rob and pillage in the provinces and only Caesar saved this situation.
- xvii. In our lord's time the pharisees opposed Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ because they saw in him a hindrance to their political plans and saw him coming as the true king of Israel the son of David which would put them in opposition with Rome and they were playing up to Rome all the time and could not afford this embarrassment from the Lord.
- xviii. There were exceptions to the opposition of the pharisees to our Lord in Nicodemus and Joseph of Arimethia, Influence of Gemalio, Saul of Tarsus as a pharisee offered himself to be employed by a Saduseen high priest to persecute Christians in Damascus as he had in Jerusalem.
- xix. Saul of Tarsus was one of the more famous in the party and theology of the pharisees and he was out to get rid of Christianity and saw it as a great threat and as a pharisee opposed all of these things.
- xx. Before his salvation as a young man Paul was responsible for literally thousands of Christians dying in the first persecutions in Jerusalem and all throughout Judea and in his going to Damascus he was saved and his purpose was to get rid of the Damascus Church which had become strong.
- xxi. The Pharisees represent religious competence in legalism Paul as Saul of Tarsus was the worst sinner who ever lived being the most religious of the pharisees.
- xxii. Being a pharisee contributed to his religious Zeal to kill Christians and if Paul had confidence in the flesh he would have depended on the religiousness of the pharisees.
- xxiii. The judiazers who were not even true Jews but who had been converted at a later time as admirers of Israel were the great persecutors of Paul.

6. In every one of these areas Paul far exceeded and excelled above his critics.

G. His confidence in the Flesh Goes On in v6:

1. Zeal:

- i. judiazers persecuted Christians and were now persecuting Paul as a Christian and had become his lifetime enemies and were so vindictive that they hounded them all the way to death but God made a fantastic mantle of opposition for Paul from

these judiazers which he gave to Paul as the highest honor in Ultra Super Grace since Moses.

- ii. He exceeded and excelled and was actually a greater celebrity in the field of Legalistic Judaism than any of this opposing judiazers in his mantle of opposition.
- iii. Saul of Tarsus until the very moment of his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God had a tremendous desire to KILL all Christians in existence in the world.
- iv. So if the standard of measurement is ZEAL Paul again was far superior to his opponent judiazers for he had persecuted and killed all kinds of Christians and this was his obsession.
- v. While the judiazers opposed Paul and only persecuted GRACE oriented believers Paul as Saul had persecuted ALL kinds of Christian believers when he was a judiazer.
- vi. In his zeal he killed all Christians but his critics only attacked Grace Oriented believers and if the Christian was Legalistic they left them alone and this was a “tongue in cheek” statement showing his critics that he again exceeded them having killed all sorts of Christians and they were only after him and therefore far greater in this area than they.

2. Sanctimonious:

- i. Just having this kind of person around makes your “grace” hackles rise and to hear them talk is monstrous to you.
- ii. Paul is saying that when it came to being a smug, sanctimonious Self Righteous person He was FAR greater than they could ever be.
- iii. Keeping the law as a way of life results in Self Righteous Arrogance and Paul was always smug and Self Righteous and kept the law and as he did his arrogance and smug sanctimonious Self Righteousness increased and he had a totally sanctimonious attitude at the point of his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- iv. As an unbeliever Paul was a very MORAL man but is recorded in the bible as the worst sinner who ever lived.
- v. There is a sinful activity worse than any immorality and so great was Paul’s Self Righteousness and he did so many things under this motivation like killing Christians and dispossessing believers that he was the Worst Sinner ever to live.
- vi. As Saul of Tarsus he was the epitome of Self Righteousness and by keeping the law he was the destroyer of the Church before his Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

H. The bottom line for Paul:

1. Paul as Saul of Tarsus was the most legalistic Self Righteous smug arrogant unbeliever in this field of celebrityship.
 - i. NO one was ever greater in keeping the law and distorting it into a system of smug sanctimonious Self Righteousness.
 - ii. Paul says that these GAINS or ATTAINMENTS he had made in the area of human celebrityship are worthless
2. As members of the Royal Family of God we no longer have the legalistic categories of Judaism as standards of human celebrityship but some of these norms and standards have moved into our lives as standards or principles even though we don’t have judiastic celebrityship but we have athletic, entertainment, business, artistic, musical, socialite, military, professional in every field celebrities.
 - i. Judaism still exists but times have changed and the point is WHATEVER CELEBRITYSHIP WOULD KEEP YOU FROM BIBLE DOCTRINE AND ALL PEOPLE HAVE SOME FORM OF CELEBRITYSHIP THIS IS WHAT IS GOING TO DESTROY YOU.

- ii. We must never allow any area of human celebrityship to destroy our concept of what is actually important in life ie Bible Doctrine.
3. If you are stupid enough to allow any area of human celebrityship come between YOU and Bible Doctrine then you deserve to go into reversionism because you are too stupid to wear a crown in eternity.
- i. Nothing should ever be allowed to conflict with Bible Doctrine study EVER for any reason and we must all always take the attitude of what is first priority in our life.
 - ii. We will all be tempted to miss to see something we very much like but we MUST avoid these tests.
4. Doctrine must always win these tests and in our times there are many areas of celebrityship and many areas of interest for us but WHEN ANYTHING CONFLICTS WITH THE STUDY OF THE WORD OF GOD IT THEN BECOMES YOUR ENEMY.
- i. We all have norms and standards in the soul and areas to which we attach our capacity for life and admiration for some area of celebrityship which we enjoy.
 - ii. We often strive for these things and areas making them a lifetime obsession which often means distraction and reversionism since this striving results in neglecting of Bible Doctrine and bringing to ourselves serious Divine Discipline troubles.
5. By moving into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and even continuing into Ultra Super Grace we can avoid these things.
- i. Consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine orients the believer to the Grace perspective and this Grace Orientation is the first floor of the Edification Complex of the Soul and most important since it recognizes that there is only one celebrity in the Royal Family of God and that is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the Lord.
 - ii. There are many Super Grace heroes but only one celebrity.
6. Under norms and standards from Grace Orientation and Bible Doctrine teaching the Standards of human fame or Gain are therefore eliminated.
7. All of the things or gains which Paul had achieved and maxed out in the field of human celebrityship he lumps together as GAINS and confines them to Divine Viewpoint attitudes saying that they are losses or disadvantages.
- i. Paul recognizes that every area of human celebrityship when it conflicts with Bible Doctrine is OUT and considered LOSS.
 - ii. All 7 areas of human celebrityship he had attained he lumps together as **GAINS** and considers them all together a great **LOSS**
 - iii. From the standards of Judaism these 7 areas of celebrityship were Gains or Advantages but for Paul having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and moved into Ultra Super Grace these all lumped together are a great **DISADVANTAGE AND LOSS**.
 - iv. Confidence in Human Gain and celebrityship is characteristic of reversionism therefore the reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and beyond establishes a new Scale of Values and capacity for life to accompany the blessings of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - v. There must come a time in your life when you will face the issue of something which you truly enjoy coming into conflict with Bible Doctrine so that you have the privilege of making this choice.

I. Principle:

- 1. This is the perspective of the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and is under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - i. There are 3 categories of believers under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:

- a. Super Grace who will receive the wreath of righteousness
 - b. Ultra Super Grace who will receive the Wreath of Life
 - c. Pastor Teachers who lead to these areas who will receive the Wreath of Glory.
 - ii. All leave this life either by dying grace or in the rapture.
2. This attitude is not acquired by renouncing or giving up any human recognition or achievement.
- i. This is what fundamentalists like to do in giving up things or returning their awards because God is not glorified by it or give up some type of career.
 - ii. NEVER GIVE UP ANYTHING UNTIL BIBLE DOCTRINE FORCES IT OUT OF YOUR LIFE.
 - iii. People run around looking for things to give up to become martyrs and this is simply a characteristic of reversionism not of spiritual growth.
 - iv. When Bible Doctrine forces something out that is different.
 - v. Until this occurs NEVER Give up some career.
 - vi. Everyone wants to go to the mission field which is cluttered with idiots and only a few great ones.
 - vii. We don't need more people in the mission field but we do need people to stay home and get into Bible Doctrine and GROW up in the Spiritual Life so that you are not running around giving up things.
 - viii. Things which are not supposed to be part of the Spiritual Life and Plan of God MUST BE FORCED OUT BY BIBLE DOCTRINE not given up because some prissy person tries to do one better than you.
 - ix. Nor should it be someone else's personal attitude but it must be what the Metabolized Bible Doctrine in your own soul demands for you to give up something.
 - x. If you do this giving up things stuff you are in great danger of entering Self Righteous Arrogance and sliding quickly into reversionism and you will never quite realize what has hit you.
3. You don't have to ever give up anything which is fun, pleasure or great for you and the only place there is any denial is when it conflicts with Bible Doctrine and bible teaching.
4. It is the attitude of those believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and beyond where all human achievement or fame is eliminated from the soul to be replaced by the celebrityship of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- i. You don't give up being great in your profession when you become a celebrity in your field but when you reach the point of Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ you go right on being a great professional but you don't attach any importance to YOUR greatness but attach the importance to the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - ii. You don't stop being a great businessman making millions of dollars but what you do is cease to attach any importance to wealth and attach the importance to the celebrityship of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and go right on making millions of dollars.
 - iii. You don't take off your 4 stars and say you cannot be a great general or any ranking officer and be a Christian and this is stupid since you should be a much better general officer as a Christian but you don't attach so much importance to the 4 stars but attach it to the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iv. This is true in any and every field in life and you don't have to stop being a great dancer because some legalistic Christian said it is the devil's art but you go right on being great in dancing but don't get a fat head about your techniques and ability and attach the importance to the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

5. The objective of this passage is not to have you run out and GIVE UP ANYTHING but it is a matter of priorities in life NOT attainments or giving something up and we must keep our priorities straight, Bible Doctrine first.
6. If you have been promoted in some area or activity of life do not reject or renounce that promotion.
7. BUT continue to take in Bible Doctrine and grow in grace and perhaps God will keep you in that sphere and use your spiritual growth and success to glorify himself in history.
8. God has many blessing designed for you in Eternity Past and in giving you these blessings GOD IS GLORIFIED, not you, the organization, any person or group of people just GOD.
 - i. We share the plunder of the strategic victory of the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ on the cross, his resurrection and ascension and we enjoy the benefits of our own tactical victory where maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul WILL provide the standards, capacities and objectives to enjoy to the maximum what God has provided.
 - ii. It may be that you can look back like Paul and see achievements of the past which were gains but are now assigned as loss.

Phil 3:4

v4: Even Though I myself might be having great reason for extreme absolute confidence in the human sphere. If any other man of the same category of Judaisers, in all of human history, assumes he has reason for confidence in the flesh or human sphere, and they do, I have more:

Phil 3:5

v5: Circumcision on the eighth day, of the Race of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, a conservative Hebrew from the Hebrews; with reference to the law a Pharisee, a conservative separatist,

Phil 3:6

v6: now with reference to zeal, historically always an incredible constant presser and persecutor of the church, now with reference to smug sanctimonious Self Righteousness in the sphere of keeping the law having become blameless.

Phil 3:7

v7: But what categories and quality of things, human celebrityship and false standards of unbeliever reversionism, greater than any other, were ever gains I had to me, those same gains I, myself, conclude as an expert, as a loss or disadvantage because of the Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

Lesson #70 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:8

- I. Freedom through military victory:
 - A. US Army in China during the Boxer Rebellion included the 14th & 15th US infantry regiments and both distinguished themselves.
 - B. Kelvin Titus, Trumpeter, scaled the walls under enemy fire and planted the US flag on top proving that the walls could be scaled.
 1. Then as a result of receiving the Medal of Honor he attended West Point and became an officer and eventually commanded the 14th regiment in which he had won the Medal of Honor.
 2. The 14th received its name “Golden Dragons” in the Boxer Rebellion.
 - C. The 15th took their name from a Chinese word and it remains on their crest “Can Do”
 - D. Both the 14th and 15th Regimental Crest both still have the same Chinese Castle and the walls which they scaled one with a Golden Dragon and the other with 3 Black Dragons and on the 15th crest it says “Can Do” and on the 14th crest it says “Right of the Line” based on the Honor they received in the War Between the States.
 - E. In WWII the 15th Infantry regiment was one of the most distinguished regiments in that war and they were attached to the 3rd infantry Division.
 1. The most famous company in that regiment was Company B, Baker Company today Bravo Company.

2. Sylvester Anotolak Sgt B Company Cisterna Italy, near Anzio Beach head the first man in B Company 15th regiment. 3rd Infantry division to receive the Medal of Honor 1944
 3. Audie L Murphy Sgt was next to Ontolak's position and he was pinned down 1 Year and 1 Month later He received his medal of honor
- F. In WWII the 3rd Infantry Division broke all records for bravery with 39 Medals of Honor to 1 division in 2.5 years of fighting.

II.

- A. (gr) Alla Men Ge Kai – 4 Greek particles
1. This is indicative of the authority which God had delegated to men like Paul as a communicator of Bible Doctrine NOT as an apostle.
 2. This means “LISTEN”, ‘GET YOUR MIND OFF OF YOUR TROUBLES’.
- B. Paul is telling his congregation in the Philippians to FOCUS totally on what he is saying and he is basically reprimanding them strongly.
1. Forget the words and concentrate on what I AM SAYING TO YOU.
 2. The congregation must concentrate on what is being taught since the subject is very important here as it goes into what you are thinking and what are your priorities and what is most important in life to YOU.
- C. Paul here is saying that he is an EXPERT GUIDE in this subject and Paul is still the greatest expert in the field of Theology ever.
1. His confidence comes from his Authority from his consistent Studying and Spiritual Growth and is speaking as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace moving quickly to Ultra Super Grace and is therefore a real EXPERT.
 2. Having recovered from his reversionism and regained his Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and learned a few more things Paul is now ready to take the congregation with him to Ultra Super Grace.
 3. His conclusion is based on his reversion recovery and NEW doctrines which have not come to him.
 4. Since Paul has again moved into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and is moving toward Ultra Super Grace which he has just discovered.
 5. This is why the believers must recover their concentration and refocus their attention and keep their thinking from wondering and LISTEN.
- D. This is a dogmatic fact that no one in any age or generation has ever nor will ever come close to the spiritual advance of Paul.
1. From his position in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace moving to Ultra Super Grace Paul renders a conclusion that ALL THINGS related to human achievement and celebrityship are always LOSS.
 2. In the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God there never will be a time when the things of human achievement will be anything but a total LOSS.
 3. This is total freedom from arrogance or human achievement which would distract from Bible Doctrine.
 4. Paul here is under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and beyond.
 5. Paul here looks back on his former human achievements and sees it all as one huge total loss even though it was great achievement in a multitude of areas.
 6. The many areas of his human celebrityship are gathered into one total LOSS or DISADVANTAGE.
 7. Paul is not speaking with regret or self pity with regard to his loss or forfeiture of all the human celebrityship factors he had in his life before Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- E. It is not every believer who can take something which has made him prominent in life and forfeit it for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ saying that he regards his achievement as a pile of s*(t or Excrement.

1. The point is that Paul's priorities are focused on Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and what he did in the past is totally meaningless.
 2. All human celebrityship is equivalent to Excrement and this is how the Scale of Values of the believer who is maturing should be like.
- F. Many believers have what is needed to achieve in life and do it right and well in any you area you are in and will have great success and some will be famous BUT IF you progress spiritually while you are achieving in the human realm it will never be an issue with you or a problem.
1. Success will remain low on the Scale of Values and will recognize that GRACE is the source of everything and all of us are nothing in the eyes of the Lord and only by his great sense of humor and only to stick it to the devil he has taken some of us and given to them great abilities and great success and it is all a GRACE function.
 2. Any time anyone gets to feeling High and Mighty and thinks that God cannot do without them God will then say to them "You are right so come right on HOME".
 3. People often get these idiotic grandiose ideas from OTHER PEOPLE and Bible Doctrine must wake us up to the Question "Who told YOU the you are great", "Who set up these standards for greatness", obviously it was OTHER people.
- G. People tell you how great you are and if they don't you remind them.
1. People set standards for greatness and then achieve them and claim greatness for self and others with them.
 2. The amazingly ironic thing is that in God's Sight or in comparison to GOD we are absolutely NOTHING, like an ant in the kitchen.
 3. In this GRACE plan he has seen fit to take this NOTHING and make something of it to resolve the Angelic Conflict.
 4. When we learn Bible Doctrine and get smarter we simply go along for the ride to see where it will take us and never LOSE TRACK of the fact that we are NOTHING.
 5. Therefore when anyone tells us that we are nothing with insults and antagonism we simply chuckle since we already know that from Bible Doctrine.
 6. When people tell you how great you are and this complement just rolls off of you then you are on the right track but if you begin to believe it then you are destined to failure.
- H. God never gave the gift of Pastor Teacher or any communication gift to a woman simply because they are RESPONDERS and when a woman is told by one she appreciates or likes that she is great in some way SHE LOVES IT AND RESPONDS TO IT.
1. As a Pastor Teacher a woman being told by 2-3 people that she is great she would be in the clouds and never realize that her lesson was a flop.
 2. This is also why women are such great teachers of children but they cannot teach adults.
 3. Ladies all have some charm or something great and it is not hard to find something to complement them on and they have a right to respond to these complements BUT as a Pastor Teacher if someone told you you were great you would be completely USELESS because of it.
 4. Since MEN are to be the initiators they are to be the communicators.
 5. Understanding this we then understand that ladies are more vulnerable to Flattery than men but MEN are more sensitive than women.
- I. The initiator is and has to be more sensitive than the responder and this is both GOOD and Bad.
1. When he gets his feelings hurt and sulks this is bad but then he is also sensitive to what the woman wants to hear and that is good.
 2. The Pastor Teacher is a man with the Spiritual Gift but he is sensitive to the needs of the congregation his audience without anyone having to tell him.
 3. Women are tough in the soul because they have to be because they live in the responder area of life.
- J. Paul saying that all his human achievement are like PILES of Excrement is telling us that he has his priorities straight because he is on the road to Ultra Super Grace.

III. The Doctrine of DUNG:

- A. We have this word for Excrement many times in the scripture and will learn Bible Doctrine from it.
- B. Definition within limits of reason:
1. As used in the word of God excrement or dung is used to illustrate or portray certain principles of Bible Doctrine generally in a NEGATIVE way.
 2. This is because not only is excrement objectionable to the olfactory sense but it is totally waste produce of the body and makes because of this an excellent illustration.
 3. 6 Words for Excrement in the bible, 5 in Hebrew, 1 in Greek.
 - i. (heb) ashpIt == a fimaterian or DUNG Hill. **1Sam 2:8, Ps 113:7, Neh 2:13, 3:14, 12:31**
 - ii. (heb) gEel == used only for human excrement. **Job 20:7, 1Kings 14:10, Ez 4:12+15, Zeph 1:17**
 - iii. (heb) gulal == ordure ??. **1Kings 14:10**
 - iv. (heb) domem == **Jer 8:2, 16:4, 25:33**
 - v. (heb) peresh == Human Excrement, Ex 29:14, Lev 4:11, 8:17, Animal Excrement Num 19:5, Mal 2:3
 - vi. (gr) skubalon == a fimaterian connotation or PILES of DUNG (this is not the only word in Greek for Excrement but the only one with a DUNG HILL concept).
 4. The word of God uses DUNG with numerous synonyms just as in English.
 - i. There are adjectives pertaining to the matter in many ways.
 5. Dung is used to describe the celebrity standards of Judaism in Phil 3:8
- C. After reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace far above us is Ultra Super Grace.
1. Upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace we receive great amounts of GRACE Human Success and achievement and prominence in many categories.
 2. It is possible that we can get so carried away with these things that we go backward through the maturity barrier into reversionism instead of pressing on to the higher ground of Ultra Super Grace.
 3. Paul is at this stage for him is calling these things piles of DUNG and by this understand that any success will not ever spoil Paul since he has already passed the test of human celebrityship.
 4. Paul will not be deterred nor detracted away from Bible Doctrine because of the great blessings he has and has capacity for life that goes with his promotion, success and greatness and has maximum Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- D. Dung is used to describe the administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline to a nation.
1. It is used to describe the military defeat of the nation by which it is thereby destroyed.
 2. The loss and destruction of the military destroys national freedom and functions and the dead soldiers are described as dung on the ground because they have been wasted.
 3. Dung must be regarded in sense of WASTE and their death on the battlefield accomplished NOTHING and the nation nor freedom was preserved.
 4. THEY died in vain according to the word of God and it says whenever a nation loses its freedom and is destroyed under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline it says the soldiers died in vain but in a more dramatic way by comparing them to WASTE, dung. **Jer 9:22**
 5. The civilian population along with the military which is destroyed after the fall of a nation is also described as dung also. **Jer 16:4**
 6. In the time of Armageddon those who are killed are described as Dung, **Jer 25:33**
 7. Reversionists and Demon Possessed unbelievers die in battle when their country goes under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline **Jer 8:2**
 8. Dung is used to describe what happens to people when a nation disintegrates **Zeph 1:17**

- E. Dung is used to portray the judgment of the wicked and is applied particularly to the prosperous wicked who purchase all the colognes of life and like to smell so beautifully acceptable. **Job 20:4-7**
- F. Dung was used to threaten and intimidate the Jews to facilitate their surrender to the Assyrians. **2Kings 18:27, Is 36:12**
1. The Jews on the wall were not intimidated because Isaiah had given them enough Bible Doctrine that they could interpret contemporary history and by this they were neither intimidated by what he said nor the great armies closing in on the gates of Jerusalem.
 2. They did not react and fall into reversionism but responded to Bible Doctrine in their own Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and correctly interpreted history and RESISTED.
 3. This is the important principle and we must realize that without Bible Doctrine we WILL react to historical disaster but with Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you will have the ability to correctly interpret contemporary history and stand up to the many problems like the south did at the end of the war between the states.
 4. These people at the time of the end of the war in the south had a great reserve of Bible Doctrine in their souls and the loss of the war did not have an adverse effect on them because they could correctly interpret history.
 - i. It is only in current times that people say “why did the south lose”.
 5. The people knew United States of America history and there were 2 doctrines which everyone knew:
 - i. Manifest Destiny
 - ii. Monroe Doctrine.
 6. It is only when you have a generation of legalism or reversionism looking back in history do they question the value of historical results.
 7. If you as a believer are under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine right now and if historical disaster comes the question we must all answer is “DO you have in your soul the means of coping with the disaster from enough Bible Doctrine so that you will not react to history and go into reversionism and react to history”.
 8. There are people in reversionism right now from the congregation of Berachah because they cannot cope with what the bible says about historical disaster as in Jeremiah and other passages.
 9. When we do our job as unto the Lord then you can take a strong reprimand and if you react to any correction of your abilities then you are doing the job for the approbation lust you have.
 10. Many people find it easy to get shocked in a church like Berachah and if this is so they cannot ever stand in the gap on the outside in historical or any disaster.
 11. The sooner we orient to contemporary history the sooner you will be insulated against any shocks in the local church.
 12. We must be able to properly answer the questions about what we will do if communists invade or moslems rise up or there is violence in our streets and you cannot call the police.
 13. Historical disaster at the time of this lesson was on our doorstep {(ff) it is my considered opinion that the only reason we avoided historical disasters in the 70’s is a direct result of the ministry of R. B. Thieme Jr and a very FEW others HOWEVER the level of degeneracy in the population has increased so much in the past 30 years or so that it is again knocking on our door} and if you react to it or any personal problem and scream to God as to WHY ME! You have not Bible Doctrine at all.
- G. The interruption of the Jewish age and the administration of the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline is described as dung. **Mal 2:3**
- H. Dung is used to describe the fall of mighty ones in historical disaster. **Lam 4:5**

1. This is used to describe a woman who makes her living by her charm and beauty ie a very high class prostitute.
 - I. Dung is used to describe the USELESSNESS of the reversionistic believer. **Luke 14:34-35**
- IV. Once you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace there is something greater than that and you must focus on it and reach it as Paul did.

Phil 3:8

v8: In fact, most emphatically, therefore, even I also, myself; NOW YOU BETTER CONCENTRATE; as an expert in total confidence from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine, dogmatically conclude from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Super-Grace, the all things of human achievement, success, approbation, fame, advantages, eminence and celebrityship to ALWAYS be loss, because or for the sake of the surpassing greatness of the principle of the knowledge of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ my Lord. Because or for the sake of whom I have caused to forfeit or suffer the loss of the all things of human celebrity-ship or achievement and I, myself, keep on concluding, since recovering Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, them piles of dung or excrement, in order that I may gain Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, moving on to Ultra Super-Grace.

Lesson #71 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:9

- I. Freedom through Military Victory:
 - A. Douglas Monroe, Signalman 1st Class, US Coast Guard, Guadalcanal Landing Craft commanded 24 boats 27 Sept 1942, 22 years old killed getting over 500 marines in a marine Battalion off the beach.
- II. Parenthesis on Grace Orientation: (v9-11)
 - A. No matter how far you advance in the Spiritual Life you must always reorganize and re-evaluate to keep the principles of Grace Orientation always before you.
 1. This is to regroup the thinking of anyone who is advancing in the Spiritual Life.
 2. For the one who breaks the barrier to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and takes every objective beyond that barrier DYING is the greatest experience of life.
 3. V9 Grace Orientation in Phase I == Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God
 - i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we receive 39 irrevocable assets for our Spiritual Life in time and carry them into eternity.
 - ii. This is where we all have been in our past.
 4. V10 Grace Orientation in Phase II == Believer in Time
 - i. This is where we all are NOW in life
 5. v11 Grace Orientation in Phase III == Believer in Eternity
 - i. This is where we will emphatically be in the future.
 - B. This is to remind us that no matter how far we advance in the Spiritual Life we must always stop and regroup, re-stabilize and re-orient to Grace in order to stay on balance in life.
 - C. Phase I:
 1. Paul the worst sinner who ever lived at a moment in his life was by God the Holy Spirit entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. We can all look back to when we were saved even if we don't remember exactly when and where.
 - ii. In the Christian Way of Life EVERY Day is a special day when you live each day as unto the Lord.
 - iii. When you get to the point of living every day as unto the Lord you will be blessed as you never have been in life.
 - iv. Living every day as unto the Lord alike is blessing without all the problems of life.
 2. Any believer who grows up enough to realize that Pauline Bible Doctrine in the scripture is the highest peak of Bible Doctrine anywhere and this believer should see the emphasis of his life related to SAVING GRACE and Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.

3. The reality of discovering Paul is the reality of spiritual growth and pressing close to the barrier of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. There are very few Ultra Super Grace believer who had a historical impact on history like Paul or Moses.
4. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as the God man humiliated himself to become a perfect human being and even as a perfect human being there is a great gap between that and being perfect eternal God with a perfect essence.
 - i. It was because of the perfection of the Essence of God that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ had to become a man to pay the price in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death for all human sin since the perfection of God can have nothing to do with sin.
 - ii. Eternal salvation and the Substitutionary Spiritual Death of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ for sin was based on the fact that the 2nd member of the trinity became a real man.
 - iii. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was perfect humanity and perfect eternal God, he was minus imputed sin and minus the Old Sin Nature and minus personal sin and was therefore unique.
 - iv. The uniqueness of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ went beyond the Substitutionary Spiritual Death and went to the grave in his physical death then resurrection and later ascension to being at the right hand of God the Father.
 - v. At the right hand of God the Father Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ occupies a position unique in all of human and angelic history and he was and remains superior to angels in his humanity.
 - vi. He as a superior human established a tactical victory in the Angelic Conflict and WE at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God are entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and will SHARE all his human uniqueness in eternity.
5. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God any person who expresses Faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone is taken by God the Holy Spirit and entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. We share his Eternal Life and his Absolute Righteousness and everything that he has and is.
 - ii. This is exactly why Christianity is NOT a religion but a personal individual relationship with God through Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. Religion in history is the WORST thing ever to happen while Christianity is the absolute best in the establishing of the Royal Family of God.
6. When Paul is discovered he wants that discovery to be related to the Grace of God and positional sanctification and positional truth.
 - i. While on the road to Damascus to KILL Christians there and destroy the church there Saul of Tarsus received Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and was entered into union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - ii. Immediately the worst sinner who ever lived had Eternal Life and had the Righteousness of God and shared the son-ship and heir-ship of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and became at that moment a member of the Royal Family of God and a Royal Priest and share the rulership of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as part of the Royal Family of God.
 - iii. This was an instantaneous thing and he did not feel these things but only realized them after great intensive study over the years but he liked to go back to this moment of his life at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.
7. Grace begins for all believers at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and the Plan of God for him began at that moment.

- i. When future generations discover Paul he wanted them to think of the Grace of God and how the worst sinner ever was given in a short moment of time Eternal Life.
 - ii. There is not greater manifestation of the Grace of God than the Baptism of God the Holy Spirit at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
8. Paul is not standing on his own Self Righteous like the Judiazers nor depending on the high standing of human achievement or celebrityship.
 - i. Paul's Self Righteousness as an unbeliever far exceeded his contemporaries and his critics but he does not want to be remembered for his greatness in the field of Judaism or his Self Righteousness.
 - ii. It is most likely that Saul of Tarsus when he was saved on the Damascus road did not have a single friend since he had broken all barriers of Self Righteousness.
 - iii. Self Righteous people generally are obnoxious and very unpopular people and a pain in the ass to be around.
 - iv. Paul's Self Righteous was above and beyond all the people who have ever lived
 - v. To have righteousness in the sense of integrity and honor is wonderful but to have Self Righteousness is absolutely terrible and the only thing worse than this is to FLAUNT this Self Righteousness.
 - vi. Arrogance + Self Righteousness can only be classified as indefatigably insufferable.
9. Paul is not interested in being associated with his Self Righteous past but in contrast wants to be associated only with the Absolute Righteousness received from God at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. (Romans - "Blessed in the man who does not condemn himself in the things he does")
 - ii. We do not have to make efforts to recover from our sordid past achievements or degradations but simply continue living as unto the Lord.
 - iii. Don't be ashamed of your Self Righteous parents or your holier than thou Christian parents.
 - iv. When you think that to prove you don't have Self Righteousness that you have to become a hell raiser YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND GRACE EITHER.
 - v. All you are doing is showing that you have to PROVE something and in jumping into the I HAVE TO PROVE SOMETHING SYNDROME you have moved into an opposing extreme.
 - vi. By this you have become a 1st class ASS.
 - vii. By this you are not going anywhere spiritually and we must remember that we don't have to ever prove anything to anyone just learn Bible Doctrine and keep moving ahead.
 - viii. When we keep trying to prove something all we do is prove we are totally unstable.
 - ix. It is only Bible Doctrine which counts and never should we think we must move from nomian to antinomian Status Quo to prove something to others or self.
 - x. When you assimilate Bible Doctrine there are some things you will give up and some things you will not and you cannot move from one bullying system to another and the holier than thou group does this under the concept of Self Righteousness.
 - xi. Whether you are involved in legalistic functions or antinomian functions you are not proving anything in either case.
 - xii. The point is that we must RELAX AND TAKE IN Bible Doctrine consistently.
10. Paul does not want to be associated with his former Self Righteousness but he is not going to flip to the opposite side and constantly raise hell with the girls.

- i. Do not simply close a closet with your former skeletons and go build another closet with bigger and better skeletons.
 - ii. Bible Doctrine is the stabilizer and staying with it will bring great comfort to us.
 - iii. As Paul we must desire ONLY to be associated with GRACE, Bible Doctrine, IMPUTED RIGHTEOUSNESS which cannot be LOST ever.
 - iv. All kinds of believers have this type of righteousness whether legalistic Self Righteous or antinomian and it will not RUB OFF ever.
 - v. The concept is that we must not react to a former bad situation and by this get into another bad situation.
 - vi. Remember though we will all sin BUT carnality has a means of instant recovery but you can be an ASS all of your life without recovery and the only recovery is to be consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 - vii. Respectability is no more a Christian advance than rolling with the girls in the gutter.
 - viii. Somewhere in between is the right idea and when we are moving through the in between we must remember to mind our own business since many others are moving there too with their own standards and ideas of that is good or not good.
11. As we move through life we must avoid both Christian Self Righteousness and Lascivious Lawlessness and move forward toward Metabolized Bible Doctrine.
- i. We all will zig and zag occasionally but if we move too far one way or another we will be out of bounds.
 - ii. We must move forward with Bible Doctrine and not move sideways as this is not any spiritual advance in either direction.
 - iii. The idea that you have to react to their former background and go the opposite way in life is completely WRONG.
 - iv. Through all of this we must remember to never stick out nose into another's business and to let everyone find their own way forward under Bible Doctrine.
12. Paul is only interested in being associated with the imputed Absolute Righteousness from God which he received as we all do at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God through faith alone in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ alone.

D. A backward look:

- 1. This does us some good as long as understand salvation and Grace Orientation with regard to salvation often clears up a great many things.

III. Knowing Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ:

A. You cannot know Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ without the intake and metabolization of Bible Doctrine

- 1. You cannot love Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ until you know Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and you cannot know him without Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.

B. Under the constant function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception we can come to know Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

- 1. We can appreciate eternity when we reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God with a maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 2. This is also the importance of knowing God the Father and God the Holy Spirit from the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.

C. The power of his resurrection:

- 1. In as much as Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was raised by the omnipotence of 2 members of the trinity this becomes a mandate to become totally cognizant of the other 2 members of the trinity, God the Father and God the Holy Spirit.
 - i. At Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we only know Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and what we know to be saved varies greatly.

- ii. The power of his resurrection reflects the 2 other members of the trinity involved in his resurrection.
- iii. This is therefore a mandate to understand the other 2 members of the trinity.
- 2. To know the omnipotent power of his resurrection is to have maximum knowledge of Bible Doctrine through the constant function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- 3. The more Bible Doctrine the believer knows the more he understands the power which raised Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from the dead, the power behind his resurrection.
- 4. This means knowing the power of God the Father who raised Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from the dead, **1Thes 1:10, 1Pet 1:2**
- 5. This means knowing the power of God the Holy Spirit who raised Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ from the dead, **Rom 8:11, 1Pet 3:18**
- 6. The power of resurrection is only one of many historical manifestations of God's unlimited power in the devil's history.
 - i. Satan is ruler of this world and the resurrection took place in his world under his nose and he could not prevent it.
- 7. The more Metabolized Bible Doctrine the believer absorbs the greater becomes his understanding of the power of God.
- 8. The believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace has just begun to know and appreciate the power of God and the Ultra Super Grace believer has maximum cognizance in this sphere.
 - i. While the power of his resurrection gives the believer appreciation for LIFE in time it also anticipates the glories and blessings and decorations of life in Eternity.

IV. The first inclination of the discovery of Ultra Super Grace by Paul.

- A. The Ultra Super Grace believer wears the mantle of undeserved satanic opposition and suffering and this mantle is participation in the undeserved suffering of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - 1. This is continual totally undeserved suffering wrapped around the believer like a mantle as the highest accolade of honor for the Ultra Super Grace believer of his royal knighthood.
 - 2. This is the highest reward and honor in time and in this Status Quo the blessings of Super Grace are vastly intensified.
 - 3. This suffering makes the blessing sweeter and sweeter and they never disappear.
 - 4. This is the first hint that Paul has just discovered that there is something beyond Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and he is moving toward it. **2Tim 3:8-12**
- B. Many sufferings of the believer are related to Divine Discipline for carnality or reversionism but undeserved suffering is always designed for blessing for the believer.
 - 1. The mantle of opposition as undeserved suffering for the Ultra Super Grace believer is the highest honor and decoration any believer can receive in time.
 - 2. This honor habitually occurs in the life of the Ultra Super Grace believer ONLY.
 - 3. All Ultra Super Grace receive the same suffering and pressures from Satan as Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ received related to his death.
- C. Paul expressed his desire and determination to move from his Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace which he has discovered as the next objective of the Spiritual Life.
 - 1. It is Paul's desire to get the maximum out of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God after recovery from reversionism.

V. Grace Orientation for Eternity.

- A. No one knows the time place or manner of his death and Paul is here saying that this is an unknown to him as well and for all of us DEATH seems very remote.
 - 1. However healthy people die just as suddenly as people who are very unhealthy.
 - 2. NEVER get the idea that you are anchored to this earth permanently for LIFE hangs by a VERY fine thread which can be broken at any time resulting in our death.

- B. Paul is saying that he is not aware of how or when or where he is going to die but he is totally confident that he WILL DIE.
1. He says that he knows not how or when or where he will die but he does know it will be GREAT and after death he knows he will receive incredible decorations forever.
 2. This is Grace Orientation to death and eternity and it results in death not being something you fear but may in fact look forward to but on a day by day basis why bother to even think about it.
 3. Paul simply wants to cross the finish line or goal of Ultra Super Grace in his Spiritual Life.
 4. In history we are mixed in with the dead ones in life believers with unbelievers but at the point of death there is total separation of the believers from the unbelievers.
 5. This separation is based on attitude toward Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in life.
 6. There is some potential in how the Resurrection Body is to be received whether by death of rapture and there is no question as to whether it will be received but the MANNER of how it will be received.

Phil 3:9

v9: (Parenthesis Open) also that I may be found or discovered in him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, NOT having and holding my own self righteousness derived from keeping the Mosaic Law BUT that Absolute Righteousness which is acquired or imputed by means of faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God, that righteousness which is from the source of The God at the point of faith in Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ.

Phil 3:10

v10: that I may, during my life, come to know him, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, through Ministry of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception, and the inherent omnipotent power, of God the Father and God the Holy Spirit, of his, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ, resurrection and the fellowship, association with and participation in his Undeserved Suffering or Evidence Testing, taking on the same form as the oppositional sufferings related to his physical death.

Phil 3:11

v11: If in some unknown way of leaving this life, by death or the rapture, I may reach and cross the goal or finish line to the exit resurrection (Exznanastasis) away from the DEAD ONES, the spiritually dead ones, the unbelievers under the 2nd death of the Lake of Fire (Eph 1:19-20) (Parenthesis Close)

Lesson #72 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:12

- I. New Years Eve 1975
- II. The objective toward which Paul is moving in his Spiritual Life ie. Ultra Super Grace.
 - A. Review the correlation between Phil 3 and 2Tim 3 and the fact that Paul is ready to pass on the leadership of the church to Timothy.
 - B. This passage is of great significance since it point to the ability of the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace being able to understand and properly interpret contemporary history.
 1. Our government and many other people in this nation then and much more so now have created for us historical disaster and have done so from reversionism both believer and unbeliever under the system of the genius of Satan.
 2. These people are under the influence of Evil the policy of Satan in EVERY decision they make in their lives.
 3. A believer lacking doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul historical disaster will cause reaction in the soul which leads to the 8 stages of reversionism and results in a living casualty.
 4. We as believers are alive for the singular purpose of moving from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and then from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace to dying grace.
 5. This is what glorifies Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in time and is our objective in the Spiritual Life giving us great capacity for life and incredible blessings in time and eternal rewards as well.

6. Review the highest decorations the Wreaths for the believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 7. It is the sole responsibility of the Pastor Teacher of any and all congregations to constantly and continuously study and teach Bible Doctrine in order that he grow to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and beyond and therefore be able to lead his congregation to that level as well.
 8. It is reaching the objectives of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in the GRACE Life of the believer which glorifies God NOT DOING THINGS FOR GOD.
 9. We can only glorify God by reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and RECEIVING our package of Super Grace blessings for time.
 10. There is a time and status for doing things for God, spiritual production which is the RESULT of spiritual growth not the cause of it.
- C. Here Paul denies that he has reached the objective of Ultra Super Grace having recovered from reversionism and regained the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
1. Paul writes this now in AD62 as a Super Grace believer and when he then writes 2Tim in AD68 he has already reached the Status Quo of Ultra Super Grace.
 2. During his first imprisonment he writes the “Prison Epistle”, Ephesians, Colossians, Philippians, Philemon, Corinthians which are the epistles which summarize more Bible Doctrine than any other segment of the scripture but they only take the believer to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and state the objectives of Ultra Super Grace without giving any details.
 3. It is the “Pastoral Epistles” which can take the believer into the Ultra Super Grace concept.
- D. We must realize that we all have some advancing in the Spiritual Life to do and there never will be a time in life when we can do without Bible Doctrine.
1. There are all kinds and categories of Divine Discipline
 - i. For reversionism, Warning, Intensive and Dying Divine Discipline
 - ii. Carnality Discipline
 - iii. Self Induced Misery where we sow what we reap in reversionism
 2. We can learn in life and our Spiritual Life the easy way or hard way.
 - i. The Easy Way: Listen and concentrate on what the Pastor Teacher is presenting on all subjects of doctrine.
 - ii. The Hard Way: Go on our own merry sloppy way ignoring and rejecting Bible Doctrine and fall into reversionism and wait until we hurt so badly that we seek out someone to counsel us who in fact should be studying in order to present doctrine to the whole congregation NOT JUST YOU!
 - iii. Personal counseling is using someone else for a crutch and every time you have a problem in life you LEAN on that crutch.
 3. In opting into reversionism remember that you will HURT and learn the HARD way and when you scream with misery and return for Bible Doctrine YOU MUST START FROM THE BASICS AGAIN TO ADVANCE AND REGAIN THE LEVEL OF MATURITY.
 - i. Screaming is of no value and you have to begin again at the beginning and go back through all of the basic doctrines to make advancement and this is the ONLY means of recovery.
 - ii. When you go to some pastor for counseling who will give you epigrams and comforting words you cannot recover and this will only drag you into self pity arrogance and pouting.
 - iii. When you make mistakes in life EVERYONE knows you are a jackass you don’t have to go to someone to tell them all the details of it as the details are not important it is only the recovery that counts.

- iv. We all fail and there is no sense in commiserating about it we just pick ourselves up and MOVE ON.
 - v. No one is perfect in this life and the point is that if you are still alive and hurting then GOD HAS A PLAN FOR YOUR LIFE and you simply have to get up and MOVE ON again.
 - vi. The only answer to your failures is the Grace Apparatus for Perception in a local church or in your own home on recorded lessons but you cannot do it in counseling or finding people who sympathizes with you.
 - vii. NO ONE NEEDS SYMPATHY.
 - viii. Doctrine is behind everything and the basis for everything.
- E. The amazing thing here is that the greatest bible scholar or teacher is now telling us that he is NOT PERFECT.
1. Paul uses a disjunctive particle of abstract thought here in which ONE thing is related to another in similar terms.
 2. The objective of Ultra Super Grace is attained by reaching and retaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and maintaining the consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and advancing so high spiritually that God can give you the highest decoration of time for any believer the Mantle of Continual Opposition from Satan.
 3. This mantle of opposition serves to enhance beyond imagination the greatness of the blessings of the 5 categories of our super grace package.
 - i. Moses, Paul, the most intensive mantles and also Jeremiah, and several others.
 4. Paul here drops the thinking of his past in reversionism and his total complete failure and all of that is forgotten and there is no thinking about the past failures.
 - i. We must all learn to gather all of our skeletons and move them into the closet and LOCK it and move away from it and lose the key and move on.
 - ii. Paul is here turning his attention to his existing state of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace moving rapidly toward Ultra Super Grace.
 - iii. Quinon Proficit Deficit
 5. Paul is FOCUSED on moving on to Ultra Super Grace and he is not DISCOURAGED by his past failures and movement into reversionism but is consciously moving ahead to Ultra Super Grace.
 6. There is no such thing as Human or Spiritual Greatness where we allow our failures to DISCOURAGE you for any reason.
 - i. None of us can ever be in any way detracted by our failures
 - ii. We may not be personally disturbed by our failures but there will always be someone around to remind us of our failures.
 - iii. A nagging wife, a bitchy young woman who wants you to marry her even if it is not the right time.
 - iv. There will always be people around to remind you of how big a failure you have been, what a jackass you have been, how poor your judgment is and on and on.
 7. The problem is for us as the REMINDERS when we start to remind people of THEIR failures we forget that WE also have sinned and failed and GOD has graciously forgiven you and given to you under the principles of grace the opportunity to move on SO before we condemn others for our failures we must get the huge telephone pole out of our own EYE.
 - i. This might take a lifetime.
 8. No matter how big a failure you have been or how much people remind you of your failures or how much you have been kicking your self for failing so miserably, YOU MUST GET UP AND MOVE ON AND FORGET THE PAST.
 - i. This was the LIFE OF DAVID.
 - ii. This is a wonderful principle of GREATNESS.

- iii. Great people are not those who have never failed but the ones who have NEVER allowed their FAILURES to hold them back.

- F. Paul on 29 May AD57 Paul reached Jerusalem and the all time low in his life.
1. In having been there 7 days he was under the Sin Unto Death and being attacked by a Jewish mob in the area of the temple and rescued by Roman Soldiers in the Marc Anthony Barracks.
 2. He was delivered by a small military force who pressed back the crown and broke some heads in the process to discourage rioting in a manner as it should be.
 3. Paul then was kept in the Barracks until he was transferred to Caesarea where he stayed for 2 years in prison and was tried by Felix, Festus and Agrippa and during this time recovered from his reversionism.
 4. He appealed to Caesar and won a change of venue to Rome and his voyage to Rome began in the fall of AD59 and ended in the spring of AD60 and included a great storm and shipwreck.
 5. During this time Paul was totally recovered and in Status Quo Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 6. As a believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace he had the great opportunity of writing the world most concentrated form of doctrine in all of history.
 7. NO ONE CAN REACH ANY STAGE OF SPIRITUAL GROWTH WITHOUT AN UNDERSTANDING OF EPHESIANS, PHILIPPIANS AND COLOSSIANS.
 8. When he gets to 2Tim, written in AD68 Paul attained the highest status of any member of the Royal Family of God.
 9. Paul is therefore on the right side of Human History and pressing on toward Ultra Super Grace.
- G. By the constant intake of Bible Doctrine Paul and all of us as believers can TAKE the high ground of Ultra Super Grace by constant and consistent intake of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.\.
1. It takes a great deal of function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception today, tomorrow, the next and next and so on so that you can FINALLY arrive to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and being still consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Incultation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine finally reach Ultra Super Grace.
 2. Attitude toward Bible Doctrine must be and remain positive on a consistent DAILY basis.
 3. Paul had to his account more people killed by his own Self Righteousness than any person in history and on his way to continue this in Damascus the Lord SEIZED and HELD him there.
 4. The result of this was the despite the fact that Paul was going to murder more Christians and on his way to Damascus to do this he was stopped and turned around to become the greatest believer in all of Human History
 5. He is the greatest trophy of the Grace of God and had been OVERTAKEN by GRACE and Seized and held by grace JUST AS WE ALL ARE.
 6. Just as Paul realized and put down for us he and we all have security for both life in time and eternity and no matter our failures there is no way we can ever NOT BE WITH THE LORD.
 7. We have been overtaken so that we can in turn overtake the objectives of grace of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and possibly Ultra Super Grace.
 8. The LORD overtook each of us at Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God and Seized and Held each of us and we have ETERNAL salvation and Life and cannot ever lose it.
 9. After Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God we are held by the Lord under a system of grace provision so that we each have all that is needed to acquire Bible Doctrine and move toward the Grace objective of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

- H. Principles:

1. Everything which Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did to save the believer has a meaning in both time and eternity.
2. God has both purpose and meaning for the individual believer and an objective for every believer.
3. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ overtook man in time but provided the objectives and blessing, decorations, promotions and rewards in Eternity Past.
 - i. Overtaking you in time means that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ took you prepared to BLESS YOU IN TIME AND ETERNITY.
 - ii. When you were saved God already knew you would be and salvation here as being overtaken by Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and because he did so and we are a part of the Royal Family of God it was all known by God the Father in Eternity Past.
 - iii. As a result of this knowledge in Eternity Past, every provision was made for you to reach all the grace objectives and have the greatest happiness and blessings in both time and eternity.
 - iv. In addition, God by so blessing and rewarding you in both time and eternity is GLORIFIED.
 - v. All of this was worked into the Divine Decree in Eternity Past and God knew all of this before we ever existed.
4. Once saved or overtaken the objectives of time include:
 - i. Living Grace
 - ii. Super Grace
 - iii. Ultra Super Grace
 - iv. Dying Grace
 - v. All of these require Bible Doctrine in order to comprehend their total ramifications and all are related to the most fantastic blessings.
 - vi. As each of these objectives is reached the blessings intensify and the rewards, blessings, honors, promotions from God totally apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere continue.
 - vii. Reversionism hinders these and just as Paul did it can be recovered from to continue advance.
 - viii. Paul's reversionism should have resulted in his Sin Unto Death but he lived and continued to advance and become the greatest believer in Human History.

Phil 3:12 (seizing the high ground)

v12: Not that I have, before now, already received, obtained or attained permanent Ultra Super-Grace status nor have I before now, already reached the objective of Ultra Super-Grace BUT now then I keep on pressing and driving on in hot pursuit, closing in, if also I might gain, overtake, seize, grasp, take possession, accomplish, attain and hold the high ground of Ultra Super-Grace on account of which high ground objective of Ultra Super-Grace I am also seized, held, and overtaken by Christ, Jesus

III. New Years Eve 1975:

- A. Wishing a happy new year has become a nonfunctional wish just like Good morning or Good afternoon etc.
 1. Wishing someone a happy new year is silliness since they will most likely in our time NOT have one and you won't bring them happiness and wishes won't bring happiness.
 2. Happiness cannot be found apart from the Grace of God and "Happy New Year" is more or less an idiom expressing NOTHING.
- B. Happy exists in 3 categories in life:
 1. Pseudo Happiness based on relationship with Satan and the Cosmic Dynasphere, in reversionism and under the influence of evil.

2. Temporal happiness based on observation of the Laws of Divine Establishment only gives you a Happy New Year as related to the Laws of Divine Establishment taught in the scripture.
 3. Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace Happiness is based on reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and Sharing the Happiness of God.
- C. Wishing happy new year is basically hypocritical and Empty wishes for empty people is the best it can be used in any way.
- D. Wishing a Box, Bottle, Book and Bag
1. The Box **Ex 25:38**

Ex 25:38

v38: Both It's snuffers and their snuff boxes shall be of pure gold.

- i. This is part of the description of the golden lamp stand in the tabernacle and along with it is the forgotten snuff box which was used to collect the burnt wicks of the candles from the lamp stand in the tabernacle.
- ii. It is the snuff box which has special significance for us under the concept of happy new year.
- iii. The Lamp stand had a central stem with a lamp at the top and then lower it had 3 branches on each side with the lamps coming up even and each lamp was a bowl and there was a wick in each one and oil was poured in and the oil came up through the wick and burned and it was the ONLY Light in the tabernacle.
- iv. The tabernacle had no windows and when you were outside looking at it you saw a large clean attractive tent without any special beauty and all the beauty of the tabernacle was on the inside but that beauty could not be discerned unless the lamp stand was lit.
- v. When the tabernacle was pitched anywhere it was the responsibility of one segment of the Leviticus priests to KEEP the lamps lit.
- vi. therefore there was a light burning constantly and the Leviticus priests had to constantly come in a TRIM the burnt wicks.
- vii. There were no waste baskets in the tabernacle but on the lamp stand there were Golden snuff boxes and these burnt wick trimmings were put into the SNUFF boxes.
- viii. This is described to us in the bible and has great significance and this lamp stand was beaten out of a talent of pure gold and nothing was ever cut off or broken off and was fashioned without breaking any of it off and it was a work of pure art.
- ix. ONE Talent of pure gold was 11 months salary and in the depression in the United States of America it would have been about \$20,000 and the item itself had great intrinsic value before being formed into the lamp stand.
- x. Once the Lamp Stand was created it became one of the most valuable articles of furniture of all time.
- xi. Its greatest value was in the description and its significance in the tabernacle and it was an illustration and shadow of the union of the Royal Family of God with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in positional sanctification.
- xii. The central stem represents Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ sitting at the right hand of God the Father in his battlefield title of King of Kings and Lord of Lords.
- xiii. There are 6 other lamps in addition to the central stem and 6 is the number of SIN, In-completion while 7 is the number of Completion and when you put them all together all of these stems were united with the central stem and by this means UNION with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was portrayed LONG before the Church Age and before it existed historically and anyone understood its significance.
- xiv. The GOLD in the lamp Stand refers to the deity of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the beating out of the gold is the Hypostatic Union with emphasis on the

- Cross and the talent of gold was a alone but eventually became 7 lights and Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was ALONE seated at the right hand of God the Father but from this royalty comes the family of royalty from all believers on the branches.
- xv. The tops of the branches represented the resurrection of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and the oil in the lamps represents the indwelling and Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the light revealed the beauty of all that was inside the tabernacle.
 - xvi. Every article in the tabernacle was used to portray some facet of Doctrine in all of its glorious beauty.
 - xvii. Outside it was a drab tent albeit clean and neat but inside it was a place of beauty with white cloth with cherubs on it with scarlet and purple and all the golden objects along with the lamp stand.
 - xviii. All of this came into view when the lamp was lit and the lamp was not ever out when the tabernacle was pitched anywhere.
 - xix. The LIGHT speaks to us about learning Bible Doctrine and when it is one we see the beauties and glories of the person and work of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and all that God has put together in the grace Plan of God from Eternity Past to eternal future.
 - xx. We see the relationship of man to the ruler of this world and the Angelic Conflict contemporary and past interpretations of history.
 - xxi. The Burning wick represents the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception whereby Bible Doctrine is transferred from the bible through the teaching of the Pastor Teacher to the soul of the individual believer under Positive Volition.
 - xxii. The burnt wick is the Metabolized Bible Doctrine stored in your soul after the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and it is stored in a gold snuff box representing your soul and its value to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, God the Father, and God the Holy Spirit.
 - xxiii. Therefore we have burnt wicks stored in a golden snuff box representing all the Metabolized Bible Doctrine you have learned by which you have grown in grace and progressed in the Spiritual Life to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - xxiv. The wish therefore is for a FULL BOX OF BURNT WICKS or a full soul of Metabolized Bible Doctrine by which you can grow in the grace Plan of God and knowledge of our Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

2. The Bottle **Ps 56:8**

Ps 56:8

v8: You have taken account or kept track of or written my fugitive life in reversionism in Nob and Gath; my tears are being put in your bottle as your mourning! Are they not in your book as warnings that recovery is only from Perception, Cognition, Inculcation, Metabolization & Application of Bible Doctrine?

- i. This psalm was written as a description and the story of his reversion in Nob and Gath and his reversion recovery.
- ii. Tears are caused by varying categories of Divine Discipline on the reversionistic believers and David had many tears having been captured by the King of Gath and sentenced to death and as he wormed his way out of it by feigning madness and putting himself in disgrace and as he was the direct cause of the invasion of his country by the philistines who reasoned that if David has gone mad there is no one to stop us.
- iii. The tears are his change of attitude toward Bible Doctrine leading to his reversion recovery. {(ff) Ah HA! So Jeff was right David was in reversionism at one point, I wish the Col would make up his mind about poor old David!!!}
- iv. Tears in the bottle represent divine encouragement for reversion recovery and David being still alive after reversionism could still recover.

- v. God recognized the changing of David's mind about doctrine and God and by putting those tears of Divine Discipline in a bottle he provides for David more time lengthening of his life for reversion recovery and return to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- vi. The tears were caused by David's suffering from Divine Discipline and Self Induced Misery but when God put the tears into the bottle he automatically gave David the time for recovery and advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and fulfill the great plan of God for his life.
- vii. Therefore the wish is for those in reversionism "Tears in the Bottle" in fact the bottle full of tears and the time, opportunity and grace provision in the continuation of life so that reversionism can be recovered and advance made to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

3. The Book **Mal 3:16**

Mal 3:16

v16: Then those who were under fear, reverence, awe and occupied with the LORD spoke one to another; and the LORD gave attention to it and heard it, therefore, a book of remembrance was written before him for those who were under fear, reverence and awe in Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, the LORD and kept thinking about his person.

- i. Being under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ we fulfill this principle.
- ii. The book of remembrance is taken from the time in which Malachi was written and of the Persian empire and it was custom of the Persian king to write the names of deserving people in the empire in a book of remembrance and on special holidays to open this book and invite to court those whose names were written in it.
- iii. These were then given special promotion, wealth, riches, decorations of one sort or another.
- iv. The books connotes the blessings and rewards for the believers in time under the Super Grace package and just as the Box depicted the rewards of surpassing grace so the book has the concept of the 5 categories of Super Grace blessings for the believer who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God from consistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
- v. When each of us breaks into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God God will provide for us those things in our special Super Grace package including dying grace blessings.
- vi. There are 3 things mentioned here this book for the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God:
 - a. Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ mentioned 2 times and infers maximum category I love we call Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - b. This is characteristic of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Ultra Super Grace believer being totally under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- vii. The 2nd thing noted is the fellowship of mature believers who speak one to another.
 - a. This indicates the wonderful fellowship and relationship between those who have reached and entered Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and indicates that once you pass Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God you should have capacity for Cat III Love which will express itself in relationship among those who are believers.

- b. Not only the principle of friendship and finding great friends but also the ministry of refreshment and encouragement which can only exist in the remnant of believers who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- viii. The 3rd thing mentioned refers to the perpetuation of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God for those who keep thinking about the person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - a. This is to think categorically and compute and this was used for one taking many different colors of Yarn and weaving them together in a very beautiful Rug.
 - b. This came to mean weaving THOUGHTS of all sorts into a beautiful pattern of LIFE.
 - c. This is the concept of Super Grace, Ultra Super Grace, Dying Grace and Surpassing Grace.
- ix. The Lord preserves the memories which deal with the spiritual advance of any believer and we will never go unnoticed by the Lord when we accumulate Metabolized Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- x. The Lord therefore promotes, blesses the believer who reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- xi. The wish is for a FULL Book of Remembrance with blessings, rewards, dynamics of impact of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.

4. The BAG **John 12:4-6**

John 12:4-6

v4: But Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples who was intending to betray him, said,

v5: "Why was this ointment not sold for three hundred denarii (\$10,000) and given to the poor?"

v6: Now Judas said this, not because he cared for the poor but because he was a thief, and also because as the thief he carried the money bag and he used to steal what was put into it.

- i. It is for those who will never make it and will fail to remain under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and persevere in the function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
- ii. Judas opens his mouth to criticize a woman in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Mary who took all of her life savings thousands of dollars and bought a tremendous lot of the Oil of Spikenard and anointed the feet of our Lord and dried them with her own hair.
- iii. This was a beautiful act of grace which Judas was first to criticize.
- iv. His criticism in v5 was as phony as you can ever hear and he is exposed in V6.
- v. Judas was treasurer for the disciples and was a thief and when any large amount went into the bag at any time he took a cut by stealing.
- vi. He was a Thief, Liar and Phony.
- vii. BUT we have these as believers in every congregation in every local church no matter the level of doctrinal teaching who can deceive others in many ways.
- viii. When you have to tell someone you are doing your job as unto the Lord you are as far from that as possibly imaginable and this is as phony as you are.
- ix. Any believer can pick up the language of doctrine without actually having the doctrine.
- x. No one with any sense and with any level of doctrine can see right through this facade.
- xi. These people use grace concepts to impress people and they are con artists and try to con everyone.
- xii. These people are just like Judas and what he said was a GOODY concept and exposed him as a welfare state type.
- xiii. Judas was a liar, thief and phony and not even a believer

- xiv. This however is directed toward people who use the language and don't except the doctrine and what they know is GNOSIS and it is not Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe and they learn the vocabulary by listening occasionally.
 - xv. The tragedy is that there is NO EPIGNOSIS and they USE GRACE.
 - xvi. Judas was an unbeliever used by Satan but Satan can use and control believers in reversionism and this is through the extremely dangerous infiltration of EVIL down the vacuum into the soul in the 6th stage of reversionism, Blackout of the Soul where any believer becomes USEABLE.
 - xvii. On the surface you wear a facade of interest in the work of the Lord and have a protection whereby you tell everyone that you are doing your job as unto the Lord and what a grace person you are.
 - xviii. Christianity is for you only a means of expression of your approbation, power lust and arrogance.
 - xix. You are a reversionist under the influence of evil and say the right thing and make the right motions when with other believers of the same ilk but you are a phony, you know it and God knows it.
 - xx. You talk about being a GREAT person but are arrogant, vicious and Vain accepting no authority but your own and use Bible Doctrine as a front to gain a relationship with another person or group.
 - xxi. The Wish for the believer in reversionism is just as the plans of Judas were frustrated when the valuable ointment was not sold and NO money was put into the treasury bag for him to steal so that his plans were frustrated at that time and thereafter, SO the wish for the believer in reversionism in this category an empty Bag and that your plans might be continually frustrated and your Divine Discipline might be intensified and if it is the Will of God that you depart from our midst under the Sin Unto Death.
 - xxii. He who is not with the Lord he is against him and when believers are against the Lord it confuses the new idiot believers coming up.
- 5. Therefore Happy New Year and Happy EVERY DAY for both believer and unbeliever reversionists.
 - 6. Therefore the wish for the advancing believer is a FULL, BOX, BOTTLE AND BOOK
 - 7. The wish for the reversionist is for an EMPTY BAG.

Lesson #73 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:13

I. Principles:

- A. Everything which Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ did to save the believer has a meaning in both time and eternity.
- B. God has both purpose and meaning for the individual believer and an objective for every believer.
- C. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ over took man in time but provided the objectives and blessing, decorations, promotions and rewards in Eternity Past.
- D. Once saved or overtaken the objectives of time include:
 - 1. Living Grace
 - 2. Super Grace
 - 3. Ultra Super
 - 4. Grace
 - 5. Dying Grace
- E. All of these require Bible Doctrine in order to comprehend their total ramifications and all are related to the most fantastic blessings.
- F. As each of these objectives is reached the blessings intensify and the rewards, blessings, honors, promotions from God totally apart from the Cosmic Dynasphere continue.

G. Reversionism hinders these and just as Paul did it can be recovered from to continue advance.

II. The Estimate of the Situation:

A. Brethren is used for members of the Royal Family of God and recognize that each of us is royalty forever and in union with Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the palace of God forever.

1. The pattern of Paul's recovery and the fulfilling of the grace objectives forms an important part of the message to the Royal Family of God.
2. Brethren is thus used NOT in a fraternal sense but a vocative of recognition that he is talking to and communicating Bible Doctrine to a very special group in Human History in the Church Age.
3. The Church Age is the age of the formation of the Royal Family of God and this applies to all believers in this Church Age until the rapture terminates the Church Age.

B. Paul is hereby evaluating, estimating and considering himself OBJECTIVELY

1. This is something which all believers must do periodically and determine his objectivity
2. Subjectivity in the Spiritual Life is a hindrance to the advance in the Spiritual Life and reacts to various things such as:
 - i. Authority
 - ii. People
 - iii. Teaching of Bible Doctrine
 - iv. Personalities
3. By such reaction this believer always ends up in reversionism unless this is caught in time.
4. Paul here is evaluating himself not only for himself but for us.
 - i. As Paul we must evaluate self humorously, objectively with total relaxation in order to continue to grow in the Spiritual Life.
 - ii. We must avoid taking self too seriously.
 - iii. Understanding the GRACE objectives in the Spiritual Life we MUST realize that GRACE says we are 0 (ZERO) before God.
 - iv. It is important to avoid listening to the NICE things people say about us IF these things make us take ourselves too seriously.
 - v. Taking oneself too seriously results in one becoming an INTENSE personality which is a form of arrogance.
 - vi. Once you take yourself seriously the next step is Arrogance, Blind or Obvious and if it is blind arrogance many times friends will not even tell you it is there.

C. At this point Paul's evaluation is accurate at this moment in his life, AD62 in his first Roman imprisonment.

1. Paul is saying that he at the time of writing in the first Roman imprisonment, has not yet attained the Status Quo of Ultra Super Grace in his Spiritual Life.
2. We know that in writing the pastoral epistles he HAS already attained Ultra Super Grace but they were written in AD68 some 6 years later.
3. Paul here has recovered from reversionism and moved into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace but NOT YET into Ultra Super Grace.

D. To determine personal objectivity consider:

1. If a person relates what they are at any particular moment in time to what they have been in the past they do so for 1 of 3 reasons both being subjective.
 - i. Relating self to the past because they are arrogant
 - ii. Relating self to the past because they are filled with self pity
 - iii. Relating self to the past because they are in some kind of sulking mood
2. All of these relate to the past of one's life and relates the past back to the present and therefore objectivity is destroyed and subjectivity takes its place and in subjectivity you are defending a weak point of:
 - i. Arrogance
 - ii. Subjectivity

- iii. Self Pity
 - iv. Hypersensitivity
 - 3. This makes YOU WRONG.
 - 4. Being objective means we must look at self as we are RIGHT NOW not based on our past good or bad.
 - i. In Paul's case this means he is not considering himself as a:
 - a. Reversionist
 - b. Unbeliever Murderer
 - c. Former Super Grace believer prior to reversionism
 - d. Any other Status Quo of success from the past.
 - e. Any other failure of the past.
- E. It is Paul's deliberate objective having regained his Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace Status Quo to MOVE ON in the Spiritual Life to Ultra Super Grace.
- 1. This MUST also be our objective in the Spiritual Life to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and then enjoying our Super Grace package of blessings to continue our advance as far as possible in our life.
 - 2. Paul is pointing out that neither he nor should we ever be handicapped by any past failures.
 - i. This is true objectivity and whatever failures we have had in the past they should NEVER handicap us in our Spiritual Life.
 - ii. The only thing which should ever handicap us or stop us from moving ahead in the Spiritual Life is !!**DEATH!!**
 - iii. As long as we are alive GOD HAS A PLAN FOR OUR LIFE AND IT IS TO **ADVANCE** NO MATTER HOW FAR WE HAVE GOTTEN BEHIND.
 - iv. We must move ahead and continue to do so throughout our whole lives.
 - 3. As Paul we MUST constantly forget all the failures of the past which have any potential for being a handicap in our spiritual advance and we must not sulk about them.
 - i. He forgot his reversionistic failure and we must forget any and all failures of our past.
 - ii. You never advance in the Spiritual Life by dragging your feet while handicapping self with some past failures.
- F. Principle of What lies behind:
- 1. This refers to Paul's reversion as well as any other past sin which might disturb him or cause a guilt complex.
 - i. Our past failures are NEVER to be a deterrent in our spiritual advance and the ONLY deterrent to our spiritual advance is **DEATH**
 - ii. As an unbeliever Paul murdered THOUSANDS of Christians thinking he was doing God a failure.
 - 2. Carnality is totally handled by the rebound procedure and if you have sinned and us the process then you simply FORGET the sin and move on. 1John 1:9
 - i. God forgives and forgets as we should.
 - ii. Guilt is about the worst thing we can have over us and it is a vicious form of carnality and it destroys the area of the battles of the Angelic Conflict the thinking of the SOUL.
 - iii. We have no right to GUILT.
 - 3. Reversionism handled by persistent and consistent Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine and daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - i. Over a period of time the reversionist will eventually recover his Spiritual Life and Status Quo,.
 - 4. The recovery is completed when the believer has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - 5. Paul has followed this pattern:

- i. Reversion recovery
 - ii. Re-entrance into the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace
 - iii. Therefore the prison epistles Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, Philemon represent doctrine of the Advance in the Spiritual Life.
 - iv. Every doctrine needed for the first stage of spiritual advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace is contained therein with great detail.
 - v. From the divine decree to reversion recovery and entrance into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - vi. Paul has not stopped there and now indicates in Philippians that there is an ultimate objective even beyond Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace that being Ultra Super Grace.
6. In Ultra Super Grace Status Quo Paul wrote 3 books the Pastoral Epistles:
- i. Timothy 1 & 2
 - ii. Titus
 - iii. When he wrote these he was in the highest Status Quo any believer could reach.
- G. The believer who has reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace should be constantly pressing or straining forward in the Spiritual Life toward the ultimate objective of Ultra Super Grace.
1. Paul is in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and looking forward to reaching Ultra Super Grace but NOT looking back toward reversionism or any other failure in his life.
- H. Principles:
1. No greater emphasis on the importance of Bible Doctrine can exist than in performing all the functions found in this passage of forgetting past failures and pressing forward pursuing the ultimate objective of maturity moving from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace.
 2. The constant function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception not only causes recovery from reversionism but is also the means of achieving all the objectives of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God - Super Grace
 - ii. Highest Honors of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God - Ultra Super Grace
 - iii. The greatest possible blessings in time in the perfect transfer from time to eternity - Dying Grace.
 3. Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is also the key to avoiding the trap of being hindered by past failures in your spiritual advance by becoming subjective hypersensitive and therefore being unhappy, discontented, disenchanted or any other reactor factors of life.
 4. Past failure MUST NOT interfere with present victory.
 5. Past discipline must not hinder present blessing
 6. Past apostasy must not hinder present glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 7. Therefore never let your failures keep you down.
 - i. All believers fail but not all have made recovery to move on to tactical victory of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 8. ONLY the Sin Unto Death can block reversion recovery.
 9. As long as you are alive keep pressing forward in the Spiritual Life and NEVER stop having Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and if you do RESUME again.
 - i. As long as you are alive GOD has a purpose for your life and this purpose is NOT to make up for past failures in life but to be absolutely consistent in the intake of Bible Doctrine and keep moving forward.

- ii. You cannot lose salvation nor Eternal Life but you can lose your fantastic blessings for time and the decorations and rewards for eternity and this is losing a great deal.

III. The advance of Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine:

- A. Consistent Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and daily function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception is the means of consistent advance in the Spiritual Life.
 1. Having made the advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and looking and moving forward to Ultra Super Grace he looks forward to a GREAT DEATH as well.
 2. Paul now is pressing forward toward Ultra Super Grace and is doing so for the PRIZE of blessing and decoration with some sort of wealth and success.
 3. All members enter the Protocol Plan of God by means of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
- B. Principle:
 1. God will provide under the principle of living or Logistical Grace the time and all necessities for reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God after Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. From going from spiritual infancy to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and then on to Ultra Super Grace and Dying Grace.
- C. Summary: v12-14
 1. There are many things which can keep a believer from advancing in the Spiritual Life:
 2. Reactions to historical disasters is one such thing and others have to do with development of arrogance and hypersensitivity and feeling that he must prove self to someone else.
 3. Many claim to do their job as unto the Lord and at least part of the time are doing it as unto themselves SEEKING APPROBATION AND RECOGNITION.
 4. They may have known or blind arrogance and in both cases it hinders their spiritual advance.
 5. Some people think they are advancing when they are actually going backward because their Mental Attitude is carrying them backward.

IV. Continued Advance:

- A. When you have a bad Mental Attitude and come to bible study with it this is NOT going to contribute to your advance in the Spiritual Life.
 1. Your Mental Attitude means that while attending bible study you may be exerting an effort going forward but YOUR MENTAL ATTITUDE IS TAKING YOU BACKWARD.
- B. As believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace we must all continue to think objectively from Divine Viewpoint.
 1. We are not to think subjectively and hold opinions about things to which we are not entitled to hold opinions about.
 2. This is used for people who stick their noses into other people's business or ones who have NO RIGHT nor AUTHORITY to evaluate anything in life.
 3. The objective Mental Attitude is the Divine Viewpoint of life from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul
 4. This gives the ability to do these things in forgetting what failures are behind us and to press on forward to the ultimate objective of the Spiritual Life, Ultra Super Grace and NOT to walk around in a state of hypersensitivity, arrogant subjectivity and all the little petty things which upset people.
 5. The objective Mental Attitude begins with advance in the Spiritual Life toward Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace by the accumulation of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and continues as the believer reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God

6. **There is a critical point and when we move out of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace toward Ultra Super Grace WE WILL BE TESTED IN OUR MENTAL ATTITUDE.**
 7. **This is part of our spiritual growth and there are times when we will have testing which will call for ALL OF THE DOCTRINE WE HAVE ACCUMULATED in order to maintain that OBJECTIVE MENTAL ATTITUDE OF HUMILITY AND GRACE ORIENTATION.**
 8. There must be objectivity in Mental Attitude as we advance from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace toward Ultra Super Grace.
 - i. Subjectivity will stop us cold before we reach the ultimate objective of Ultra Super Grace.
 - ii. **We are most vulnerable in our Mental Attitude in our adolescent spiritual Status Quo and AFTER WE HAVE REACHED SUPER GRACE.**
- C. The end of this verse recognizes that believer who have already reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and are moving toward the ultimate objective of Ultra Super Grace very often pick up a NEW subjective Mental Attitude.
1. God will reveal this to you, NOT through your own objective thinking but through the communicator of Bible Doctrine you right Pastor Teacher.
 2. There is only one person in any local church who has a right to judge in the local church and that is the Pastor Teacher.
 3. It is not an enjoyable thing for the Pastor Teacher but a necessity for the benefit of the congregation.
- D. Paul is talking to Super Grace believers and is telling them what they should be doing but not commanding them to do it knowing that they are about to have the greatest Mental Attitude testing of their Spiritual Life.
1. All believers like anyone who is advancing toward any objective MUST BE ALERT AND THIS COMES FROM OBJECTIVE THINKING.

Phil 3:13

v13: **Members of the Royal Family of God, I even I consider, estimate or evaluate myself even myself, objectively, as not yet to have attained, overtaken, seized, reached and held the deliberate objective according to the specified Norms and Standards of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, the ultimate of Pleroma, Ultra Super-Grace, however, now one thing on which I concentrate, constantly forgetting or deliberately assigning to oblivion those things which have already happened and lay behind, the things of the great sins related to reversionism as a handicap, and constantly and eagerly vigorously pursuing advancing or straining or pressing toward the front or what lies ahead, through the function of Grace Apparatus for Perception as the Ultra Super-Grace objective.**

Phil 3:14

v14: **I keep on advancing, pressing and closing in toward the next goal or objective of Ultra Super-Grace across no man's land, for the purpose of the reward, wealth, success in Super-Grace and Surpassing Grace packages of blessings and decorations belonging to that upward or highest station or position in life of potential blessing at the Judgment Seat of Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ from that self same God, God the Father by means of Christ Jesus.**

Lesson #74 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:15

- I. The Mantle of Suffering for the Ultra Super Grace believer is the opposition of all the satanic systems and individuals involved.
 - A. Alexander the Metal Smith was a believer who spent his entire life following Paul around trying to destroy his ministry.
 1. God kept his man alive in order that he would be a part of this mantle of opposition for Paul in Ultra Super Grace in order that he might receive the highest honor and decoration a believer can receive.
 2. No one ever hated Paul more than this reversionistic believer and he is one of the judiazers who opposed Paul constantly, ONE OF THE DOGS.
 - B. The Principle of Mental Attitude Testing

1. When you move from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace toward Ultra Super Grace the greatest testing is Mental Attitude testing.
 2. Persistent Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine under the Grace Apparatus for Perception causes the believer to move from spiritual infancy to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 3. IF the believer persists in his consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception he will move forward from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace toward Ultra Super Grace.
 4. Eventually whether he reaches Ultra Super Grace or simply HOLDS position in Super Grace he will leave this life under the greatest possible blessing in his life in Dying Grace.
 5. There is a HUGE difference between Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace just as there is a great difference between Adolescence and Super Grace and reversionism and Adolescence.
 6. There are tremendous variations and numerous categories related to spiritual progress in the Christian Way of Life and the ULTIMATE is that which has been achieved by Paul resulting in his receipt of the Honor of the mantle of opposition which intensified his blessings of Super Grace.
- C. Paul is not ready to make the next advance going from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace and he recognizes that the greatest problem in this advance will be Mental Attitude.
1. In the move from Super Grace toward Ultra Super Grace will be the greatest Mental Attitude testing of all time.
 2. To fail this test could move you out of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God into reversionism.
 3. Any time you go to such a high sphere of this life in glorifying Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in this way, you must have the best possible Mental Attitude.
 4. This Mental Attitude will be challenged in many ways and the greatest one is ARROGANCE.

II. The Doctrine of Mental Attitude

A. Definition:

1. Good or bad it is the sum total of what you think.
 - i. It is thinking reflected in function and life and activity.
 - ii. Activity leading to more thinking.
 - iii. It is response or reaction in life to:
 - a. Authority
 - b. Situations
2. The sum total of your life and what you really are is tied into what goes through your mind in your thinking.
 - i. The thinking in your mind is your Mental Attitude.
 - ii. "As a man thinks in his Right Lobe SO HE IS."
 - iii. A thought can make you or break you in life.
3. Any time you have a thought it can be the making or breaking of you.
 - i. This is what Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ meant when he said not to be afraid of those who can destroy the body, since many things can destroy the body, but beware of that which can destroy the soul.
 - ii. This is the function of EVIL and Reversionism but in effect it is your Mental Attitude which helps to get you into reversionism
 - iii. Your volition is guided by your Mental Attitude and everything you do or not do in commission or omission.
 - iv. What you really are is what you think.

- v. The thinking of the soul determines what the real person is not what you appear to be on the outside nor the facade of hypocrisy which cover thoughts which embarrass you in some way.
4. Every thought in the Right Lobe of the believer can be categorized.
- i. Divine Viewpoint
 - a. The thinking of Metabolized Bible Doctrine from the Right Lobe Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - b. All Divine Viewpoint is not based on doctrine found in the written scripture but that doctrine which has been transferred to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of YOUR OWN Soul.
 - c. Without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul you cannot have Divine Viewpoint.
 - d. It is therefore imperative that the believer take in Bible Doctrine on a consistent daily basis not only for spiritual growth but so that your REAL life and the reality of your life might be focused on Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the living word and Bible Doctrine as the written word.
 - e. Maximum expression of Divine Viewpoint occurs when you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, Ultra Super Grace, and Dying Grace.
 - f. This is where Metabolized Bible Doctrine pays off with the greatest possible happiness in life.
 - ii. Human Viewpoint
 - a. Any thinking in opposition to Bible Doctrine
 - b. The thinking of Carnality
 - c. Most frequently reversionism
 - d. EVIL
 - e. The thinking which is Anti Establishment
 - i) Conscientious Objectors to military service
 - iii. AND Others.
5. Dying begins when you know that you are going to die and you don't have to be in pain or have a fatal disease but when you KNOW you are going to die.
- i. Paul knew he was dying having heard Nero proclaim his sentence of decapitation.
 - ii. He wrote 2nd Timothy after having heard this judgment.
 - iii. 2nd Timothy is an entire document of dying grace and one of great happiness and blessing and indicates some of the great blessings for the one who enters into dying grace at this level of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
6. Words are stored in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- i. NO persons thinking EVER exceeds his vocabulary.
 - ii. Vocabulary is divided into 2 categories
 - a. Non Technical
 - i) This you need to get along in life
 - ii) Normal conversational vocabulary
 - iii) This does not develop any great level of thinking
 - iv) It can however indicate and demonstrate Integrity, Nobility, Good Manners but NO great thought has ever come from GET ALONG vocabulary
 - v) People learn to KNOW what they want and ask for it and always in good style with good manners.
 - b. Technical
 - i) To acquire a technical vocabulary in any field requires STUDY.
 - ii) GENERALLY Studying is one of the most important functions in life.

- a) People in college take many courses and by so doing develop a technical vocabulary in many areas.
 - b) Chemistry, Physics, Medicine, Law, Engineering, Theology
 - iii) Once you become a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ YOU CANNOT ANY LONGER GET ALONG WITH YOUR 'NONTECHNICAL VOCABULARY'.
 - iv) You must come to bible class and get a technical vocabulary for your Christian Way of Life.
 - v) Hypostatic Union, Impeccability, Incarnation, Super Grace, Rebound, Blood of Christ, ETC.
 - vi) Maturity covers a lot of general ground and to say a believer is spiritually mature does not begin to describe or define the technical aspects of maturity.
 - c. Everything in life which you want to enjoy has a technical vocabulary.
 - i) Dancing
 - ii) Sports
 - iii) Wine
 - iv) ETC.
 - d. It is one thing to SURVIVE in life and totally another to enjoy life.
 - i) Your enjoyment of life will never exceed your vocabulary.
 - ii)
- iii. Many of the critics of R.B. Thieme Jr. never when to a single class on technical aspects of theology despite going to some place like Bob Jones University and they cannot understand in any way the technical vocabulary used by him.
 - a. Blood of Christ is a technical vocabulary phrase and is the concepts of everything which Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ accomplished in his Substitutionary Spiritual Death on the cross.
 - i) Redemption
 - ii) Reconciliation
 - iii) Propitiation
 - b. Rebound is used in many ways such as in basketball, in recovery from a dear john situation in love, and in Berachah Church it has been developed into a concept which describes recovery from carnality.
- iv. When your vocabulary contains only the Hells and Damns and other expletives you cannot get anywhere in life.
 - a. All you can do is express and relate to the various types of disparagements in life.
 - b. People who habitually fill in every sentence with various forms of expletives and blasphemes OBVIOUSLY cannot think.
 - c. Once you get to leaning on a few expletives like HELL and DAMMIT you cannot ever get beyond it and you cannot break the barriers of relaxation under pressure.
 - d. This is one reason to SIT in bible study constantly in order to develop a technical vocabulary in order to advance.
- v. Nearly $\frac{3}{4}$ of the hyphenated words we find in the Koine Greek of the New Testament Scripture PAUL made up since the language did not have technical words he needed.
 - a. This is why many cannot understand the Pauline Epistles because Paul took words and merged them with other words and made a technical concept out of it and therefore the original meanings of the words he used in the papyri and other ancient references are not used the same by him.
 - b. He formed them into a technical way and his uses have to be determined.

- vi. You cannot have capacity for life GREATER than your vocabulary.
 - a. Your ability to think is MUCH more important than any sensual pleasure of life.
 - b. You cannot ever appreciate or even develop your emotional patterns for its intended purpose until you have a vocabulary to go with it and think with.
 - c. Many people are incapable of thinking the GREAT thoughts which their soul is capable of holding because they lack a framework for thinking in such terms.
- vii. The beauty of being in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace YOU CANNOT EVER GET THERE WITHOUT A HUGE TECHNICAL VOCABULARY OF TECHNICAL WORDS LEARNED FROM BIBLE STUDY.
 - a. This is why Ultra Super Grace is so very important and is missed by so many.
- 7. Words for thoughts and the thoughts of the believer become his Mental Attitude.
 - i. God has the greatest sense of humor and when we get to Alexander we can really appreciate the humor of God.
 - ii. Alexander HATES Paul and the only reason God keeps him alive and keeps him under intense Divine Discipline and frustration for the single reason that Paul might have the INTENSIFIED blessing of Ultra Super Grace by having this guy opposing him.
 - iii. THIS EXPLAINS WHY SO MANY NASTY REVERSIONISTIC PEOPLE LIVE SUCH A LONG TIME AND WHY GOD KEEPS THESE ALIVE IN REVERSIONISM.
 - iv. The interesting thing is that Paul put Alexander under the Sin Unto Death in 1Tim 1:20 and 2 years later this guy was still alive.
 - v. He was kept alive in order to intensify the blessing of Paul.
 - vi. It is truly wonderful to see obnoxious people in terms of the intensification of your own blessings.
- B. Thinking is the real personality and personality is directly related to thinking.
 - 1. There are 2 kinds of personality:
 - i. Pseudo – What a person wants you to think they are to impress you or gain something from you.
 - ii. Real – what a person actually thinks in his soul.
 - 2. What a person thinks in his soul is what he really is and Mental Attitude determines both the character and life of the person. **Prov 23:6-7**
 - i. We have all had the experience of meeting a person who constantly applies Public Relations gimmicks in order to impress you in some way.
 - 3. Hypocrisy is the background for a principle here:
 - i. In his soul a person thinks hatred, implacability, vindictiveness, etc.
 - ii. They invite you in to sit and talk and builds you up a bit and then laughs about it later as the jackass they are.
 - iii. The real person is not the one who offers you hospitality but the one who thinks hatred and implacability and also offers hospitality.
 - 4. What goes on in the soul is the real person.
 - i. Every member of the Human Race has 2 personalities one real and one pseudo.
 - ii. When the 2 merge and become 1 you have reached or move past Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iii. One of the greatest blessings in life is to get rid of the pseudo personality.
 - iv. No one sheds his pseudo personality until he reaches Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.

- v. Many believers are held up in spiritual advance by constant use of the pseudo personality either to impress others, build them up or satisfy your own arrogance.
 - vi. One of the most relaxing things in the world is one of the Super Grace blessings related to being a totally honest person having ONE personality NOT 2.
 - a. {(FF) I AM GETTING CLOSE BUT NOT THERE YET}
5. Thinking is the real personality and what you are in your thinking is the real you and what you appear to be on the outside is what you want people to think you are.
- i. People of genius are most often totally divorced from reality and their genius is more a handicap than a help and many are so divorced from reality they need help in choosing proper attire and grooming.
 - ii. This holds true in personality as well and YOU are not ever totally oriented to life until you have ONE personality and NOT 2.
 - iii. Every person from the beginning of his thinking processes begins also to develop this 2 personality system.
 - iv. Sometimes it is a defense mechanism, sometimes it covers an inferiority complex or superiority complex covering a lot of arrogance.
 - v. There is nothing more phony to pick up a technical vocabulary as in Christianity and not have the reality behind the words and use the words to cover the real person.

C. The conflict of Mental Attitudes in the believer **Is 55:6-9**

1. This is not a prayer concept despite having been quoted by the Col once as such.

Is 55:6-9

v6: "Seek the LORD while he may be found during your short lifetime, call upon him while he is near;

v7: let the reversionist forsake his way of Negative Volition to Bible Doctrine, and the unrighteous reversionistic or carnal believer under the influence of evil, his thoughts of Human Viewpoint and Mental Attitude Sins of Human Good or evil and let him return to the LORD in reversion recovery, and he will have compassion on him giving time for advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God, and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon in reversion recovery.

v8: For my thoughts of Divine Viewpoint are not your thoughts of Human Viewpoint of reversionism, neither are your ways my ways, says the LORD.

v9: For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my Modus Operandi higher than yours and my thoughts than your thoughts.

- i. Remember Living or Logistical Grace and as long as God gives you life and the means of sustaining it so that you MUST get Bible Doctrine consistently under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - ii. By consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception you will build vocabulary and without vocabulary there cannot be categories and without categorical thinking there cannot be spiritual growth.
 - iii. EVERY soul of every believer is designed to store vocabulary and to come to the place of organizing that into categorical concepts of Bible Doctrine and without this you cannot grow up in the Spiritual Life.
 - iv. People who do not agree with this or accept the academic discipline of the local church get into some system of works such as witnessing or doing things for God.
 - v. This is not down playing the proper functions in the Spiritual Life of the MATURE believer in the local church which could never survive unless many people did many important things to sustain it.
 - vi. When you do these kinds of things to AVOID the academic discipline needed to grow up in the Spiritual Life this is the reversionist going through the 8 stages of reversionism and doing great things for God.
2. This means you have only a short time in this life to move from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and continue to Ultra Super Grace.
 - i. This Paul in Phil 3 and Timothy in 2nd Timothy 3

- ii. *No matter how discouraged you become nor how many times you fail any one who really advances in the Spiritual Life must fulfill this principle of “seeking the lord” during his lifetime.*
 - iii. This believer must also have the Positive Volition needed to move through the Spiritual Life to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- 3. The Lord wants you to have his thinking in your Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and in order to get it there we must be consistent under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - i. God’s thinking is as sophisticated to us a humans as OUR thinking is to a DOG.
 - ii. When you get a dog it has no vocabulary for you to communicate your orders and desires to.
 - iii. This is the problem which God has with us, he has magnificent omniscience with incredible thinking and he has put this thinking into writing for us so that his wishes and desires and plan and objectives can be communicated and WE MUST LEARN HIS THINKING.
 - iv. One of the things which characterizes reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace, Ultra Super Grace and Dying Grace is that your thinking lines up perfectly with that of God.
 - v. All those who reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God can think the thoughts of God in so far as they are revealed to us.
 - vi. We cannot have any great thoughts without transference of Divine Viewpoint thinking to us.
 - vii. God’s Grace Plan included bringing his thoughts down to us and PRESERVING them in the scripture, the bible is the THINKING of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
1Cor 2:16
- 4. One way for us to please God is for us to accumulate his thinking and use it.
 - i. David in Super Grace had operation Bathsheba but this did not slow down his Super Grace blessing package since he went into carnality and eventually recovered from carnality and moved on but did not reach Ultra Super Grace.
 - ii. David had learned the thoughts and ways of God and any time we enter carnality after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God we can use rebound and we don’t bounce out of Spiritual Maturity as a result of it.
 - iii. You can be carnal and recover instantly using rebound but in reversionism we have given up the thinking of God for the influence of EVIL thinking of the plan and policy of Satan and it takes a LONG LONG time to REORIENT our thinking to the thinking of God.
 - iv. The Thinking of God and the Plan of God are called GRACE in many aspects of it.
- 5. God’s way is not some horrible punishment as some people think where you have to stick around in life being bored to death until you do die to get to be with him.
 - i. God sets up a system of the greatest happiness you can ever imagine and God takes great pleasure when HIS thoughts become your thoughts and HIS ways become your ways the things which God gives to you in this life are phenomenal and you don’t have to cater to either the demons or Satan to get them.
 - ii. It is the most relaxing marvelous thing in the world especially in the complexities of our industrialized society where the government is taking more and more and restricting more and more freedom, to be blessed by God is phenomenal.
- 6. When you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace your Mental Attitude is very strong and great and your thoughts and ways are his also.
 - i. Your Mental Attitude test however comes between Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.

- ii. Since Bible Doctrine is the thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ therefore Attitude toward Bible Doctrine is the Divine Viewpoint in life **Phil 2:5**
- iii. To have the Mental Attitude that Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ had while on earth sounds impossible since Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was unique and perfect but it is not telling us we need to be perfect.
- iv. This command is telling us to take Divine Viewpoint thought and put it into our soul that of an imperfect believer.
- v. This function is performed by consistent maximum use of the Grace Apparatus for Perception and accumulating maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. **2Cor 10:4-6**

2Cor 10:4-6

v4: for the equipment and weapons of our conflict are not human attributes but the attributes of unseen divine power from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul given by God to destroy Satan's fortifications or strongholds of EVIL.

v5: attack, assaulting and demolishing Cosmic Dynasphere thoughts of thinking Human Viewpoint and Human Good and every subjective arrogant or proud thought obstacle which attacks the objective that is the knowledge of God in Divine Viewpoint, and making a prisoner every Cosmic Dynasphere or Human Viewpoint thought bringing it under the authority of Christ,

v6: holding in readiness as an instant reaction force, garrisoning the soul with Bible Doctrine to punish every deviation or disobedience of reversionism from obedience of reversionistic Human Viewpoint, when your obedience of daily function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception has been fulfilled by attaining Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.

- vi. The greatest weapon there is in life and the greatest sphere of life to be sought is that of WORDS or VOCABULARY and its proper use.
- 7. No athletic or military or business organization can be any better than the men who lead it.
 - i. When you lose your composure when you are suddenly found on the losing end of something you will then completely lose your position or competition.
 - ii. The equipment and weapons of our conflict are not HUMAN attributes of Muscle, Ability, Power but the attributes of power through God that is what you think which is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
- 8. Rapport in the Royal Family of God is based on Divine Viewpoint. **Phil 2:2**
- D. The function of the Royal Family of God Priesthood demands a new Mental Attitude **2Tim 1:7, Rom 12:2**
 - 1. We do this by acquiring a vocabulary which conveys doctrinal Divine Viewpoint thinking which develops into categorical doctrinal Divine Viewpoint thinking and that you use them from your Frame of Reference therefore demonstrating what the reality of Metabolized Bible Doctrine can be in your life.
- E. Divine Viewpoint from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul produces CONFIDENCE **2Cor 5:1,6,8**
 - 1. We know that when we die we will receive a permanent new home in the Resurrection Body prepared for us by God himself.
 - 2. True confidence is not muscle, attractive appearance nor a special way of appealing to people but true confidence is the Mental Attitude which comes from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - 3. We have delight or pleasure after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in knowing that when we die we WILL be face to face with the Lord.
- F. Areas of life which involved Mental Attitude:
 - 1. Stability of Mental Attitude – **James 1:8**
 - 2. Prosperity – **Phil 4:7**
 - 3. Giving – **2Cor 7,8,9**
 - 4. Worldliness – **Rom 12:2, Col 3:2**
 - 5. Evil – **Matt 9:4**

6. Arrogance – **Gal 6:3**
 - i. A wrong Mental Attitude can deceive you yourself and you are in fact deceived more by your own Mental Attitude than any thing else in life.
7. Inner Beauty – **1Tim 2:9-10+15**
 - i. The Woman’s inner beauty is from Metabolized Bible Doctrine in her Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from consistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - ii. This is the source of capacity for life, love, happiness, blessing etc., and in fact CAPACITY TO BE A TRUE WOMAN AS A RESPONDER.
 - iii. This is the source of capacity to avoid reaction in life to anything.
 - iv. As responders the woman cannot ever take maximum authority and run with it and she must always have AUTHORITY over her in order to be great and the greatness of a woman comes from her response to her authorities in life.
 - v. We have a total reversionistic reaction in women involved in the women’s lib field and these are women who simply have not found themselves yet.
 - vi. With Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul the woman becomes a fantastic responders with true inner beauty.
 - vii. Males must eventually be able to overlook the physical beauty and look for a woman who is willing to go above and beyond to please her man.
 - viii. Overt Grooming complements the inner beauty of a woman in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and it reflects something of the orderliness of their mind.
 - ix. There is no excuse for not being clean and well groomed and the only reason it occurs is from SLOPPY THINKING
 - x. This is or was the reason for such strict uniform requirements in the military because an officer can with a simple glance look at a soldier and determine what kind of person he is based on his thinking which is reflected in his grooming and uniform.
 - a. There were even regulations as to how your shoe strings had to be laced on your boots.
 - b. If you can tell this from the various conditions of a uniform of a military man how much more about a Woman.
 - xi. You can tell a great deal about the thinking of a woman very often by her dress and grooming and how she cares about things in life.
 - xii. The whole story is found in Mental Attitude.
8. Mental Attitude is the key to every spiritual advance or failure and it is a wonderful test for yourself.
 - i. In any communion service you can tell immediately if you have advanced or retrogressed.
9. Mental Attitude receives it greatest testing in advance in the Spiritual Life from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace toward Ultra Super Grace. **Phil 3:15**
 - i. These Philippian believers have along with Paul reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and are beginning their move toward Ultra Super Grace.
 - ii. Paul is here telling them that if they hold different opinions about someone or something for inconsequential reasons their Mental Attitude is wrong.
 - iii. This is what we fall into when we dislike someone and hold a different opinion than they just because we dislike them not because their opinion was wrong.
 - iv. This is forming opinions on the basis of some level of reaction to another person.
 - v. If you get to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace you cannot go to Ultra Super Grace if you have malfunction in your Mental Attitude.

- vi. Paul had discovered that the believers in Philippi in the absence of their Pastor Teacher Apaphroditis there had been a power grab and bad feelings and some people were beginning to think in reaction instead of Divine Viewpoint with regard to each other.
 - vii. They were not thinking based on Divine Viewpoint but based on reaction and response to that reaction instigator.
 - a. Reaction is a negative attitude
 - b. Response is a positive attitude
 - c. Reacting to one thing about a person results in reacting to everything about them and this is a BAD Mental Attitude.
 - viii. Objectivity is seen in the one who reacts to something said by the Pastor Teacher but comes back to bible class.
 - a. Subjectivity is seen in the ones who eventually leave the congregation and go somewhere else.
 - b. Those who persevere in the local church or other organization are those who will react from time to time but their reaction is not a problem because their Mental Attitude of soul controls their life and their Divine Viewpoint overrides everything else.
 - c. This is the principle of self discipline and regulating your own life.
 - ix. For this very reason Marriage is one of the GREATEST battlegrounds in history and when 2 people who think they know each other but DO NOT get married and then discover each other and spend the rest of their lives reacting to each other.
 - a. If the wife says something is one way the husband reacts and says it is another way.
 - b. This man forms all his opinions on what his wife thinks is right and he thinks all of it is WRONG.
 - x. This is a very subtle thing which can trip you up in your advance to Ultra Super Grace and you can never wear the mantle of opposition in Ultra Super Grace as long as there is some dysfunction in the Mental Attitude.
10. Therefore if you form your opinions on the basis of reacting to someone and for no other reason.
- i. You must have facts for basing your opinions on and not just form opinions based on reaction to one person in a group.
 - ii. We all have been this way by means of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine and spiritual growth.
 - iii. HOWEVER there comes a time when you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and keep moving ahead in the Spiritual Life and THIS becomes a test again.
 - iv. Some people's entire social life is based on reaction and opinions.
11. You cannot advance to Ultra Super Grace nor ever hold Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace if you hold the attitude that if you love my you must love my dog.
- i. You must be totally objective about the things you love or people you love.
- G. When your Mental Attitude is totally wrong then God will reveal through the teaching ministry of your Pastor Teacher the problem you are having and the solution to it.
- 1. God is the ultimate source of the revelation and has set up a system for it occurring.
 - 2. You have Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine but don't like the personality of the communicator of that doctrine and GOD will put you under those conditions to BREAK you of building your Mental Attitude and opinions based on reaction.
 - 3. He will use this to break you from deciding something said by another person is wrong just because you don't like that person.

4. We cannot go through life with this bad attitude and he puts us into positions like this in order to get academic discipline and realize that if you are going to have a pure Divine Viewpoint Mental Attitude it must be totally objective and an obnoxious Pastor Teacher occasionally will be a healthy thing for you.
5. Under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine God reveals through that doctrine and the daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception forms our growth in the Spiritual Life and the basis for our thinking by which we avoid building Mental Attitudes on reaction to people or situations in life.
6. You can build a Mental Attitude based on reaction to an adverse circumstance in life and then the Mental Attitude becomes self pity.
7. Both building Mental Attitude on a person or circumstance you do not like is WRONG and it destroys objectivity.
8. In addition God very often says HEY YOU, if you cannot learn it from the instruction of Bible Doctrine then there is another way which involves Divine Discipline.

H. Principle:

1. When the thinking of the believer does not line up with Divine Viewpoint from Bible Doctrine there are 2 ways his Mental Attitude can be corrected to agree with Divine Viewpoint.
 - i. Daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception which is the easy way.
 - a. Additional Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul corrects erroneous thinking and provides INSULATION against Satanic Doctrine and his Policy of Evil.
 - ii. The administration of Divine Discipline to the believer with Negative Volition which is the hard way.
 - a. If you are going to form your Mental Attitudes on reaction to things GOD will therefore give you something TO WHICH TO REACT.
2. Some stage of Divine Discipline often awakes the reversionistic believer to his true condition at which time he has an option:
 - i. He can choose for reversion recovery or the Sin Unto Death.
 - ii. The Sin Unto Death may be a long time in coming if God wants to use this person as part of the mantle of opposition for Ultra Super Grace.
 - iii. If you go through your life reacting to people you will most likely end up in reversionism in time as someone else's mantle of opposition who you do not like as they reach Ultra Super Grace.**
 - iv. In addition to this in your Resurrection Body you will be picking cotton on their plantation.**
 - v. You never can win with a bad Mental Attitude about anyone or anything.**
3. Reversion recovery is classified as "repentance" which means numerous changes of mind decisions from Grace Apparatus for Perception therapy daily by which the believer is able to recover his position in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - i. The period of time for recovery depends on Persistence under the Grace Apparatus for Perception and how far down into the 8 stages of reversionism you have gone.
4. Non repentance and rejection of Grace Apparatus for Perception therapy results in continuous and intensified Divine Discipline until you die horribly under the Sin Unto Death.
 - i. FIRST however he gets to live horribly as someone else's mantle of opposition to enhance their Ultra Super Grace blessings.
 - ii. It should remain in our thinking that the deeper we go into reversionism the greater a blessing we will become for someone going in the opposite direction toward and into Ultra Super Grace.**

- iii. You may not intend to be a blessing but this is how God in his great sense of human and objective system of grace works it out.

Phil 3:15

v15: Therefore, as many as (are) already fully developed, believers in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in Super-Grace A or B, let us, Super-Grace believers, continue objective thinking of Divine Viewpoint from maximum Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul. In fact if you are thinking somewhat differently and have a different Mental Attitude or hold different opinions toward anything, and you are, The God, as the ultimate source of revelation will reveal through the immediate source of Bible Doctrine and your right Pastor Teacher, even that to you for your benefit and in your interest.

Lesson #75 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:16

- I. You will be tested in the field of Mental Attitude as never before in life as you move to Ultra Super Grace from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - A. Mental Attitude testing is always important in any stage of advance in your Spiritual Life since whenever you think you have finally achieved something in the Spiritual Life something comes along and throws you with a Mental Attitude Test.
 1. This may be in the self discipline phase of Mental Attitude
 2. It may be in the Sinful Phase of Mental Attitude
 - i. Vindictiveness,
 - ii. Implacability
 - iii. Self Pity
 - iv. Guilt
 - v. ETC
 3. Resentment of the Pastor Teacher, one in the congregation, a situation, or whatever and Mental Attitude is always tested but never so much as between Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and Ultra Super Grace.
 4. There is always someone or some situation in life which will attempt to distract you from the concept that the most important thing in your life is Bible Doctrine.
 - i. All those who surround you in your life periphery and circumstances are all human and their failures may not be the same as yours, you have no right at any time to change your Mental Attitude on the basis of the things, people or situations which surround you or any other factor.
 - ii. You have NO RIGHT TO THESE IN ANY WAY, and to fail a Mental Attitude test is not the fault of those around you who are the 'cause' of your bad Mental Attitude but it is strictly YOUR OWN FAULT and failure to be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. You cannot ever blame a Mental Attitude failure on anyone or any situation ever.
 5. One of the worst things which can happen to you as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is to try to blame your failures, distractions or poor Mental Attitude on anything or anyone else but yourself.
 - i. You must take your responsibility for your own actions.
 - ii. In marriage where there is UNHAPPINESS, ANTAGONISM, BITTERNESS, ETC., the husband cannot blame the wife and vice versa nor in any other organization such as the church or a business or military unit or athletic team, etc.
 - iii. NO one can ever be justified for blame anyone else for your own deflection from Bible Doctrine.
 6. The reason you try to blame others or situations in the first place is because of your own BAD Mental Attitude.
 - i. This is failure on the part of the believer to be under Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and often failure to simply MIND YOUR OWN BUSINESS under the principle of Privacy.
 - ii. It could also be failure to understand the issues of authority or to be objective.

B. Failure in Mental Attitude is one of the greatest distractors for those who are in reality or allegedly under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine.

1. One simple bad Mental Attitude situation can in a 24 hour period can turn you from being under Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine and put you on the road to reversionism.
Phil 3:15
2. One little thing in the Christian Way of Life can instantly change your direction and focus moving from Positive Volition to Negative Volition almost instantly.
3. Your own Mental Attitude reacts when you are caught by surprise by a person or situation.
4. Many times we will think “hooray” we can simply go along in life and serenely take in Bible Doctrine for the rest of our lives and the WAM some person or situation hits you and your Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is as if it had never occurred in your life at all and you are out of sorts with everything.
5. YOU cannot ever neglect Bible Doctrine and NEVER assume that you have arrived at the pinnacle of Spiritual Maturity or your Mental Attitude will suddenly change and you won't know yourself and neither will anyone else know you and you will blame your failure on someone else.
6. When you blame your failure on someone or some situation it is a sign of your own weakness.
7. The WEAKEST people in the world always blame their own failures on someone else and this is a part of their Self Righteousness which people cling to like sanity in a difficult period of their life.
8. This is simply using someone else as an excuse for your failures whatever they may be and Mental Attitude especially is strictly your responsibility and Bible Doctrine is designed to give you that mental blessing, peace, inner happiness, Occupation with the Person of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and capacity for life.
9. When Mental Attitude varies from that in this positive direction NEVER blame it on anyone else it is strictly your own failure and fault.
10. Operation Patsy is never justified and trying to find someone to blame is totally useless for it is your own Mental Attitude which is to blame and failures of other people NEVER give you an excuse for deviation from your own proper Mental Attitude.

C. YOU WILL BE TESTED IN YOUR MENTAL ATTITUDE AS NEVER BEFORE WHEN YOU ARE MOVING FROM SUPER GRACE TO ULTRA SUPER GRACE.

1. Any time any ill wind moves in and in effect upsets your Mental Attitude you have failed in your advance.
2. WE must never falter in our forward advance despite all Mental Attitude testing of maturity.

II. The objective of making advance to Ultra Super Grace.

- A. Advance in the Spiritual Life is vital especially when you recognize the pitfalls of so doing.
1. The believer who has been in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God in recovery from reversionism this believer makes the move through the Spiritual Life to again reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 2. Paul has made recovery in Phil 3 from his Jerusalem reversionism and Timothy has also made his recovery from his Ephesian reversionism and they are in these 2 books in the same place spiritually moving toward Ultra Super Grace.
- B. In order to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace the believer must function consistently under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
1. In addition to move from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace there must also be a consistent function under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit and Grace Apparatus for Perception.

2. NO ONE ever makes these advances in the Spiritual Life apart from Academic Discipline of the congregation under a right Pastor Teacher.
 3. NO ONE can leave the teaching of their right Pastor Teacher and try to get their spiritual growth on their own by reading a book of the bible as they have LEFT the discipline of the local church and Pastor Teacher which is the divine system for Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine.
 4. Part of the spiritual growth is NOT ONLY the Bible Doctrine but the discipline in which it is acquired.
 5. Advance in the Spiritual Life is done under discipline and proper training of Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine from the right Pastor Teacher.
 6. THERE MUST BE THE PRESENCE OF AUTHORIZED DISCIPLINE UNDER A PASTOR TEACHER WHO HAS THE AUTHORITY AND OFTEN AN OBNOXIOUS PERSONALITY TO EMPHASIZE THE DISCIPLINE.
 7. It is always the authority which must be recognized and responded to not the personality of the Pastor Teacher.
 8. Many different personalities have been called to function under the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and VERY FEW of them who succeed in providing the Bible Doctrine as God has established the system come up with and function under a sweetness and light personality.
 9. Sweetness in the ministry is an automatic sign of failure in the ministry and trying to use public relations gimmicks and being sweet to everyone so they will come and listen to the pastor and provide for the children to have fun, etc., is all nauseating Human Viewpoint thinking.
 10. Any outside organization in order to function at all in a proper way MUST have at its head a Pastor Teacher in order for the people within the organization to advance spiritually.
 11. These organizations have no academic discipline as in the local church and therefore there cannot be any spiritual advance.
 12. All of these organizations, like the YMCA, never stand the test of time for spiritual advance of people ever.
 13. NO ONE CAN EVER ADVANCE OUTSIDE OF THE LOCAL CHURCH AND IT IS STRICTLY PERSONAL ARROGANCE YOU CANNOT READ A BOOK AND GROW UP SPIRITUALLY NOR DO PERSONAL STUDY AND GROW UP.
 14. Personal study is acceptable if you are preparing to teach in prep school of some such thing but your spiritual growth must come from being under your right Pastor Teacher and concentrating on the word of God and you will never grow up spiritually any other way nor glorify Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 15. Academic Discipline is absolutely vital for spiritual growth.
- C. In making the final step moving from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace there is another hindrance.
1. Having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and continuing to move ahead toward Ultra Super Grace we have been warned about Mental Attitude testing.
 2. Now we are warned about the rejection of any discipline outside his own self.
 3. Upon reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace the believer at times becomes a law unto himself and does tend to reject discipline or authority outside of himself.
 4. Therefore the additional hindrance is rejection of authority in the Spiritual Life.
 5. Many people have broken through to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and then rejected the system of authority and discipline which has brought them to this advanced point.

6. The interesting thing is that Mental Attitude and Discipline and Authority are all interrelated.
7. Mental Attitude is part of self and academic discipline and Mental Attitude is a part to proper response to and acceptance of authority.
 - i. Self, Group discipline and Authority in the local church.
8. At times these things get all tied together and you fail to reach the final objective and are distracted by your own Mental Attitude related to others, the Pastor Teacher, the discipline of the local church, etc.
9. NO ADVANCE IN LIFE IS EVER MADE IN ANY FIELD APART FROM SELF DISCIPLINE AND AUTHORITY
 - i. No advance in freedom and all freedom comes from military victory and the military unit which always wins the victory is the one which has the discipline and training.
 - ii. This was Wellington, he was a great disciplinarian and his troops worked properly for him under their self discipline.
 - iii. This is the situation in the War for Independence where our commanding generals were the dumbest men in uniform, Gates who was saved by Benedict Arnold and the great troops under him.
 - a. Gates was the REASON Benedict Arnold defected to the British.
 - b. This is not an excuse nor justification for it.
 - iv. This the case with Montgomery in WWII and Bradley who stifled Patton and put him down so much that you almost never heard of Patton because of them.
 - a. It was a good thing they needed him so much.
 - v. Reputations are made on the battlefield 90% of the time by the discipline, training and recognition of authority by the men in the ranks not the high ranking officers.
 - a. This was true of the army of Northern Virginia.
 - vi. The freedoms we still have today have come from discipline and authority orientation and yet Americans have turned from the 60s to rejecting discipline and authority the basis for everything.
 - vii. Happiness comes in the same way.
10. Everything in life is related to discipline and authority and yet you can divorce yourself from these in any field almost instantly by ONE BAD Mental Attitude, one bit of arrogance which always resents authority.
 - i. Jealousy, bitterness, implacability, self righteous judging of others, etc.
 - ii. There are a great many ways your Mental Attitude change in 24 hours and begin your journey into reversionism.
 - iii. In this you retreat from the maximum of glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and maximum blessing and happiness.
11. There is and cannot be any spiritual advance outside of the academic discipline of the local church and the authoritative teaching of the Pastor Teacher whether the believer likes or dislikes the pastor.
 - i. If the Pastor Teacher does his job right you will dislike him and there are times when you cannot stand him since he is teaching things which get down into your soul and HURT you.
 - ii. You may resent the hand that feeds you spiritually but if you have good academic discipline and it will pass and you will get in line and move ahead.
 - iii. You cannot advance as a holy roller, a high ranking person in an outside organization and YOU ARE NOTHING WITHOUT BIBLE DOCTRINE.
 - iv. The only exception is the men who have the spiritual gift of Pastor Teacher and will eventually they will go out on their own and study and teach others as well.
12. No matter how much a person dislikes the Pastor Teacher or his personality or some other aspect of him, he must stay under the academic discipline of his right Pastor Teacher in

order to grow in the Spiritual Life since being under this discipline causes concentration on Bible Doctrine and it is NEVER the man but the message and concentration on Bible Doctrine means assimilation of Bible Doctrine.

- i. This means that there is incredible spiritual growth but it requires discipline, self and group.
- ii. This is essential for advance in any field of life.
- iii. You must understand the principle of discipline to advance in any field in life especially in the spiritual realm.

13. Having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace the believer MUST continue to advance toward the final objective of Ultra Super Grace.

D. The Pastor Teacher is the final authority in the local church but he is under the authority of the Lord and the original languages of scripture are his authority when teaching Bible Doctrine.

1. When the grammar and syntax and etymology of words say a certain thing the Pastor Teacher is OUT OF LINE if he tries to make it say something else.
 - i. Maybe something not so offensive to sweet people or something not quite considered today to be “politically correct”.
2. Many bend the word of God to suit their own purposes and this is totally wrong.
3. Part of the discipline of the Pastor Teacher and the authority he is under is in recognition of what is actually written in scripture and to teaching it as it stands.
4. While the believer is under the authority of the Pastor Teacher HE is under the authority of the word of God.
5. NO ONE can ever bypass the chain of command in the realm of spiritual growth.
6. The Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is the commander in chief of the Pastor Teacher and the written word is the authority of the Pastor Teacher since Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ expresses his commands through the written word.
7. The Pastor Teacher who does not study will therefore not know what the word of God says and therefore he is UNDISCIPLINED and a REBEL and a reversionist and out of line and no Pastor Teacher can lead his congregation beyond his spiritual growth.
8. All Pastor Teachers MUST be under the authority of the word and NO Pastor Teacher can be under the complete authority of the written word of God unless he knows what it says in the original languages.
9. If you cannot discern what the original languages say how can you know what the authority is commanding you to teach.
10. The men who have a gift of Pastor Teacher and do not have opportunity to study the original languages must then get under someone who does know the languages and they must accept that person’s authority in that area.
11. A Pastor Teacher minus the original languages whether he does not get it on his own nor from someone who does know them, is a revolutionist and this is why they go off in areas of legalism and works.
12. There are some pastors who know what the word of God teaches but are afraid to teach it having NO MORAL COURAGE.
13. The major problem today is that Pastors do not know what their authority is saying and when the word of God gives a command they do not know the word nor the command and are ignorant of the command.
14. Their ignorance is no excuse and this pastor is the blind leading the blind and both fall into the ditch and why independent churches become denominations.
15. This is why individual people leave denominational churches and go to outside organizations where they WORK for God.
16. ONLY the Pastor Teacher who recognized the authority of the word of God in the original languages being under that authority can communicate that authority.

E. Principle:

1. All pastors must be under the authority of the word of God.

2. You cannot teach the word of God unless you are under the authority of the word of God.
 3. If you teach in prep school you are under the authority of the Pastor Teacher and cannot teach something he has not taught because YOU are not the expert and every bit of Bible Doctrine you know you learned from him and he learned it from study of the original word of God.
 4. It is wrong in any church for a Sunday school teacher to teach in opposition to what the Pastor Teacher taught.
 5. The Pastor Teacher must at times clean house in order to get rid of those who are under pseudo Positive Volition in order to make room for those who will follow the teaching and principles to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and beyond.
 6. This is the removal of the infiltration of pseudo-intellectuality and other systems of arrogance from the congregation to allow spiritual advance of the remaining believers.
- F. The bible is called the (gr) Canon == the RULE or STANDARD or AUTHORITY
1. The “Canon of Scripture” is labeled as such to differentiate it from any other text works which could be called scripture as well.
 2. The Canon of Scripture is the Absolute Authority of God’s Commands to Man reduced to writing, his promises, principles and his revelation.
- G. Principle:
1. There must be transferring of the principles and doctrines in the canon of scripture to the soul of the believer in order to fulfill this command.
 2. This verse is a command to keep advancing in the Spiritual Life.
 3. This can only be accomplished through the same method through which all spiritual progress is made namely the continued persistent function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception under one’s right Pastor Teacher.
 4. The Pastor Teacher is under authority also
 - i. Just because he has the highest authority given to any human being does not mean he is not under authority.
 - ii. He is under the authority of the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - iii. He therefore gets double Divine Discipline where we get single Divine Discipline and double blessing where we get single blessing.
 - iv. The Canon of Scripture is the THINKING of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ therefore he is also under the authority of the written word of God in the Canon of Scripture and he CANNOT exceed his orders and bend the word of God to say something it does not.
 - v. He must teach what the word of God says and he cannot do this without understanding the original languages
 - vi. You cannot teach the bible from an English translation of the bible EVER.
 - vii. No pastor can comply with the orders of God in the Canon of Scripture without knowing the original languages thoroughly and spending one’s life in the study of them.
 - viii. **When believers go out to write books on spiritual subjects we MUST remember EVERYTHING we learned about Bible Doctrine we learned from our right Pastor Teacher in my case Col. R. B. Thieme Jr. Thank you !!!**
 - ix. In addition we learned the Bible Doctrine under authority and to advance spiritually and NOT to impress people.
 5. Normal function and production of the royal priesthood begins when you break into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
 - i. At the point of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God you become a Super Grace believer and if you continue you will become an Ultra Super Grace believer.
 - ii. The Ultra Super Grace believer has the HONOR of bearing the mantle of opposition from all satanic systems and forces which intensifies blessing for him.

6. It follows that Ultra Super Grace not only intensifies blessing BUT ALSO PRODUCTION and also increases to the maximum Glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ
 - i. ONLY Ultra Super Grace believer Max out the glorification of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.

Phil 3:16

v16: However the objective or status to which we have already attained or reached in Super-Grace status, by that same function of the Grace Apparatus for Perception, let us under strict discipline, keep marching, advancing in step, with others, in ranks by means of enforced & genuine humility and academic discipline to the next objective of Ultra Super-Grace, by the same rule or standard or sphere of action or daily function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception with regard to the sum total of Bible Doctrine in the Canon of Scripture, in persistent Momentum in the Spiritual Life.

Lesson #76 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:17

- I. No congregation nor any believer can advance beyond the spiritual growth of his right Pastor Teacher.
 - A. Someone has to be responsible for communication of the word of God and for the Church Age this is the Pastor Teacher who has maximum authority over his local church.
 1. In the early Church Age Apostles had authority over a all of the local churches and as they faded out of history certain Pastor Teachers were to carry on this same concept but this is no longer the case today.
 - B. The Pastor Teacher having Maximum authority means that in the Human Race there is still authority over the Pastor Teacher.
 1. There is first the living word which is Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ, God.
 2. There is the written word which is the thinking of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ the principles of Doctrine put into writing for our understanding and PRESERVED.
 3. The Pastor Teacher takes his authority and messages and his orders from the scripture therefore he MUST know what is said in the ORIGINAL languages of scripture to know what the scripture is telling him to do and to teach.
 - i. If He, himself is not able to Exegete the word of God from the original languages he must depend on someone who is able to do so.
 4. The Pastors authority is the word of God and he must know what is in the word in order to properly follow the instructions and to teach the content and he must never distort what is there for his own benefit or advantage.
 - i. His communication of the word must be accurate and to do this he must learn the original languages.
 5. The Pastor Teacher who does not know the original languages is LIMITED all his life in what he teaches because he MUST depend on someone who does know and exegete the scripture from the original languages.
 - C. NO pastor Grows in the Spiritual Life unless he can constantly LIVE in the word of God and study it every day since his spiritual growth depends on this.
 1. He cannot grow from a passage if he does not know what the word of God is teaching in a passage and he therefore cannot teach what is there and neither he nor his congregation can grow in that case.
 2. Translations do not cover this deficiency and the Pastor Teacher must either know the languages or have someone whom he depends on who does in order to know what a passage holds for him.
 3. The Pastor Teacher gains his authority in the congregation by his teaching of Bible Doctrine and his teaching is valueless unless it is based on the exegesis of the original languages.
 - i. It is difficult for a person to learn the original languages but NOT impossible and in the academic preparation for the ministry the Pastor Teacher MUST take courses in the original languages.
 - ii. If anyone is going to communicate the word of God with authority and present this to the congregation with authority which he exercises over that congregation

HE MUST KNOW THAT HE HIMSELF IS UNDER AUTHORITY OF Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ AND THE LANGUAGES OF SCRIPTURE.

- iii. The Pastor Teacher cannot be under the authority of the word of God unless he knows what the original languages of scripture are saying.
 - iv. No Pastor Teacher in his right mind ever wants to be under any other authority for it is the Word of God which gives him his orders and message and NO Pastor Teacher is free from the authority of the word just as no congregation is FREE from that authority of the Pastor Teacher.
4. There is a chain of command for the Pastor Teacher and as a result of MOST pastors bypassing the chain of command their congregations also bypass the chain of command under the Pastor Teacher.
- i. The Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ has ordained the Canon of Scripture to be the source and have the content of his thinking by which there is authority transmitted to the Pastor Teacher communicator.
 - ii. When the canon of scripture is NOT understood there is a BYPASS of the authority in the chain of command (Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ does not speak directly to any person or Pastor Teacher in the Church Age).
 - iii. When the Pastor Teacher does not know the original languages he is depending on a VOICE he cannot hear and only before the completion of the canon did God the Father communicate directly to the communicators of the word of God to Prophets and Apostles.
 - iv. If the Pastor Teacher is ignorant of what the word of God says then the congregation will bypass the communication of the Pastor Teacher because it is not based on the word of God thus ignoring the chain of command.
 - v. Avoiding of the chain of command results in confusion and loss of discipline and failure all around and this double bypass of the chain of command is the HISTORY of Fundamental Christianity today.
5. No pastor should ever pick up the word of God for study without a realization of the fact that HERE are his orders from the highest authority, here transmitted and preserved for all Pastor Teachers.
- i. He is under the authority of the word of God for his spiritual growth and under the authority of Christ Jesus for his discipline for failure to grow.
 - ii. This is very stringent authority and some never understand why things are so tough for them and never get their job straight and RUN to the easiest substitute which is everything from Christian Education to Speaking from the heart to visiting speakers, to long services with a short message, or some program in the church.
 - iii. These all are destructive to the principle of authority found in the bible.
- D. When the Pastor Teacher studies from the original languages and the congregation studies under him in strict academic discipline then it is normal for the believers to reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and continue to move along with the Pastor Teacher toward Ultra Super Grace.
1. Paul is commanding the Royal Family of God in the Church Age to be imitators of his advance to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and on then to Ultra Super Grace.
 2. The Prison epistles lead believers to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and the Pastoral Epistles lead the mature believers to Ultra Super Grace.
 3. This is the whole point of 2nd Timothy as it is the last of the pastoral epistles designed to lead from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace.
 4. The believers are thereby commanded to FOLLOW Paul to Ultra Super Grace.
 5. Paul cannot take any believer beyond his own Status Quo in the Spiritual Life and therefore no Pastor Teacher can do it either.

- E. Your right Pastor Teacher must be selected on the basis of his MESSAGE and PERSONAL SPIRITUAL progress and NOT ever on the basis of his personality or any other personal factor.
1. To emulate Paul we must remember “Life without doctrine is DEATH”, and it is destructive to the congregation.
 2. Any pastor who happens to be in your vicinity or in your geographic area or is friendly to you is NOT necessarily your right Pastor Teacher; he may be and may not be.
 3. The believer under Positive Volition to Bible Doctrine must understand the importance of the word of God as opposed to any human personality in any situation.
 4. The believer is told to look for and have respect for his own Right Pastor Teacher and this respect is on the basis of his MESSAGE ONLY.
 5. It is the message which he has in his Stream of Consciousness of the Soul from his own study of the word of God which is the basis of his personal advance in the Spiritual Life and the basis for YOUR personal advance also.
 6. YOU cannot ever advance because you have great rapport with the pastor or he says nice things to and about you, or because he has set up a “program” and you have excelled in this program or any other reason.
 7. If you are ever going to grow up you must find a Pastor Teacher who takes his orders and message from the word of God by very strong study day in and day out and therefore can present to you the result of his study and his spiritual growth.
 8. The Pastor Teacher who understands and teaches this principle is not begging for the believer who hears it to come to his congregation and whether a believer chooses a Pastor Teacher or not is their decision ALONE.
 9. God provides hearers for the Pastor Teacher under Positive Volition who studies and teaches effectively and the believer should search for his right Pastor Teacher and get under him as quickly as possible and FORGET ABOUT any other pastor.
 10. Once you find your right Pastor Teacher NEVER run him down and since you chose him then YOU MUST STICK WITH HIM.
 11. The pastor who teaches from the original languages and studies constantly SHOULD NEVER BE ASSUMED TO BE BEGGING PEOPLE TO STAY IN HIS CONGREGATION.
 12. You must stay with your right Pastor Teacher ONLY because he teaches the word of God effectively and who and what he is outside of the pulpit is no one else’s business.
 13. Objectivity is imperative in both directions from the Pastor Teacher to the congregation and from the congregation to the Pastor Teacher.
 14. There must be therefore a mutual issue made of the word of God upon assembly in the local church and not out of either sides personality.
 15. It is imperative to understand that the continued function of the local church does not depend on anything you do or give to the local church.
 16. The Lord has a great sense of humor about this when believer think that if they leave a local church it will collapse and the Lord can raise up better preachers than there are at present in any local church AND he can make better congregations out of the pews in the local church.
 17. The question is not of the lord’s ability but of the Angelic Conflict and whether you want to live under GRACE or make an ass of yourself until the Sin Unto Death overtakes you and you enter heaven with JUST a Resurrection Body and nothing else.
 - i. Those Resurrection Bodies will be great however allowing the PEON believers to PICK Cotton on the plantations of the mature believers for thousands of years without ever getting tired of thirsty.....
- F. When this is taught the believer becomes aware of what his right Pastor Teacher must have as a CONSTANT DEDICATED STUDENT of the WORD OF GOD.
1. The Pastor Teacher will make mistakes occasionally like everyone in the Human Race does but he will continuously and consistently grow in the Spiritual Life.

2. Paul here is the pattern of reversion recovery and of breaking back into the Status Quo of Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace and now moving to Ultra Super Grace.
 - i. Timothy did the same thing in Ephesus and is not in 2nd Tim challenged to advance to Ultra Super Grace.
3. The believer is not encouraged or commanded to become a personality like Paul or have his strengths or weaknesses but it means to advance to the level of his spiritual growth by hearing and learning his message.
4. V17 is a KEY to selecting the local church you go to and you don't go the the local church of your "choice" but to the local church of your right Pastor Teacher.
5. Wherever he ministers there you are or you might have to get his teaching lessons by recorded media but you must get with his teaching and STICK with it.

II. The Doctrine of Walking:

A. Definition:

1. Walking is the function of biped man in which his forward locomotion is accomplished by placing one foot in front of the body and putting the weight on that foot and then moving the rear foot forward and exchanging the weight to it.
2. The reference to Walking in the scripture denotes many other functions in the Spiritual Life.
3. In English walking is often a synonym for Modus Vivendi or Modus Operandi
4. A walk may be described in terms of Peregrination, traveling or wandering around; Ambulation, Rambling, Marching, Strolling, Traversing.
5. This is the same in the Greek and Hebrew and most of the uses of walking in the English are also found in both the Old Testament Scripture and New Testament Scripture.

B. Nomenclature:

1. (heb) v Halak == to walk or go forth in the literal functions, and is used metaphorically in the sense of living or pursuing a way of Life **Ezera 5:6-7, 11:12+20, Ps 89:31**
 - i. This is walking in the Statutes of Jehovah we call the Laws or Doctrinal Principles of Jehovah
 - ii. Walking in the counsel of someone or to Live as he does Ps 1:1, 89:13, Micah 6:16.
 - iii. Walking in righteousness or to live a righteous life by divine standards. Is 33:15.
 - iv. Walking in Wind meaning in Falsehood Micah 2:11
2. (heb) v Jalak == not synonymous with Halak but means to Go, make a journey and in the ancient world OFTEN on foot but not always.
 - i. It is used in more analogies and metaphors than Halak.
3. (gr) v Stoicheo == to march under a system of authority and the principle of discipline, Rom 4:12, Gal 5:25, 6:16, Phil 3:16 but always means to advance in military terms with discipline and authority in the Spiritual Life.
4. (gr) v peripeteo == to walk with many connotations in metaphor and analogy and is often used for the Modus Operandi of the Royal Family of God with some variations.
5. (gr) v orthopodeo == Straight Feet, Orthopedic, to walk straight and with the negative it is used for reversionism, **Gal 2:14**

C. Walking is used metaphorically for the believer relating his life to Bible Doctrine **Eph 5:8. 3rd John 3**

D. Therefore walking is related to the function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception **Col 1:10**

1. Epignosis Bible Doctrine from God here is called "walking worthily".

E. Walking is related to the function of the Faith Rest Drill (4 categories) **2Cor 5:7, Col 2:6**

F. Walking is related to the Filling of God the Holy Spirit **Rom 8:2-4, Gal 5:16, Eph 5:2**

1. This is the ministry of God the Holy Spirit from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God on to the end of your life and it FREES you with doctrine from the penalty of the Original Sin (not personal sin) and the Sin Unto Death.

2. We are potentially free from the Sin Unto Death and the Old Sin Nature controlling our life by the ministry of God the Holy Spirit.
 3. Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ was sent by God in the “Likeness” of sinful flesh but he was not sinful flesh and in appearance he had a human body but you could not tell by looking at him that he did not have an Old Sin Nature.
 4. He was sent as a sin offering and condemned sin in the flesh in order that the requirement of the law might be fulfilled in us who walk according to God the Holy Spirit.
- G. Walking is a synonym for lifestyle in other areas. **Rom 13:13**
- H. Walking describes Reversionism **Eph 4:17-18**
1. We are not to walk like gentiles or unbelievers who walk according to the “NOTHINGNESS of their MINDS”. {Explains a lot!!!!}
 2. Many great people are said here to have a NOTHING MIND which is in fact Human Viewpoint.
 3. They are in darkness and excluded from the life of God because of their ignorance.
- I. Walking describes the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace **Rom 6:4, Eph 4:1**
1. If you are going to walk in a manner according to you STATION in life you must WALK like royalty and the bible defines this for you.
- J. Walking describes the believer under the influence of evil, **Phil 3:18-19**
- K. Walking is related to spiritual advance under one’s right Pastor Teacher **Phil 3:14-17**
- L. Walking describes the believer’s impact on the unbeliever and history **Col 4:4-6**
1. We are to walk by means of Bible Doctrine which we have learned in order to understand contemporary history and those making it as the Russians, Chinese, Islamics, and our idiotic government.
 2. This is demanding that we MUST have Bible Doctrine in our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul so in historical disaster we will not react but respond with the Metabolized Bible Doctrine from our Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and fill in the Gap.
 3. We do not and cannot know if or when this will have to be fulfilled in the lives of all of us.

Phil 3:17

v17: Mature Believers in the Church Age, Royal Family of God, be co-imitators of me, Paul, advancing to Ultra Super-Grace, and regard, look for, observe and have respect for with academic discipline under the Grace Apparatus for Perception, those same ones, the studying and teaching Pastor Teachers, constantly walking in this manner, with Positive Volition toward Bible Doctrine, advancing continuously in the Spiritual Life, just as you have an example, pattern or model in us.

Lesson #77 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:18

- I. Principles of Spiritual Advance:
- A. Once you reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God there are 3 objectives for you to move toward.
 1. Super Grace Package of Blessings
 2. Ultra Super Grace with the mantle of opposition from Satanic forces with the INTENSIFICATION of blessing.
 - i. This is the exact antithesis of the intensification of Divine Discipline
 3. Dying Grace were this is the maximum blessing we can have in this life.
 - B. Review the comparison of Paul in Phil 3 and Timothy in 2Tim 3.
 1. Paul’s first imprisonment is the time of his writing the Prison Epistles which are the 4 concentrated doctrinal expositions which explain in detail the purpose of the Church Age and Royal Family of God
 - i. In 2 Tim 4 it is called “THE PROCLAMATION”
 2. Paul in his 2nd imprisonment wrote the Pastoral Epistles which instruct the believer in how to reach the ultimate objective of Ultra Super Grace.

- i. By the time of the writing of 2Tim Paul had obviously reached this objective.
 3. Timothy followed the same pattern and in **2Tim 4:1** Paul passes the leadership of the church to Timothy, the changing of the Guard from Paul to Timothy and from Apostles to Pastor Teachers as the communicators of Bible Doctrine with the Highest Authority in the local church he controls.
 - C. In addition we as believers in the Church Age moving toward or having reached Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God **MUST** be on the right side of history and be able to properly interpret contemporary history.
 - D. Review v1-17
 - E. One of the greatest tests to be faced in the move from Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace is Mental Attitude Testing.
 1. This Mental Attitude is related to one of the greatest dangers which belongs to any believers especially in our generation but also in any time in history, of **NOT HAVING ENOUGH BIBLE DOCTRINE WHEN OVERTAKEN BY HISTORICAL DISASTER SO THAT YOU REACT TO DISASTER AND MOVE INTO REVERSIONISM.**
 2. This is one of the quickest ways to move into reversionism and the only way to avoid it is to have enough Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul to be able to correctly interpret contemporary history.
 3. Failure to be able to do this means reaction to disaster and moving into reversionism.
 - F. The believer again, must find his right Pastor Teacher and wherever he may be get doctrinal teaching from him and stay under his teaching consistently.
- II. The 2nd phase of Opposition moving from Super Grace to Ultra Super Grace – Reversionism and being on the wrong side of history.
- A. The bicentennial of the United States of America is a time when things in the nation should have been cleared up and our nation should have gone back to what formed our greatness.
 1. It did not occur and according to the ‘Prophetical’ description at this point in this lesson 15:15 min is has been taken over by a bunch of racist idiots whose ancestors were in the jungle and did not then and do not now know anything about freedom nor will they ever know about it without recovery to Bible Doctrine or Laws of Divine Establishment.
 2. In addition the trend continues to glorify a bunch of idiots who know nothing about Americanism and it continues today much much worse than it was in 1976.
 - i. The Chelsiden Report Oct 1975?? or 76.
 - a. In 1974-75 the number of Americans supported by TAXES totaled 80.65 MILLION.
 - i) (ff) I would hate to actually see the numbers today
 - b. The private sector numbers 71.65 million
 - c. The number of people supported by taxes exceeds the number of people paying taxes at that time by 9,000,000.
 - ii. This is a phenomenal danger signal and it could have been a year of great historical disaster and those without Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul would fall apart because of it not being able to cope with it nor even being aware of the true historical trends of the time.
 - a. **NOW CONSIDER HOW MUCH WORSE THINGS ARE TODAY THAN THEY WERE IN 1976.**
 - iii. The government deceives the people and spends the money of the people to deceive them and they do so to the best of their ability.
 - a. Only Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul will prevent being deceived by this evil in the government.
 - iv. The Feminine Smart Lady – Joan Wilkie “Guess Who”
 - a. The United States of America Government spends more on advertising than any of the GREAT companies of the 70’s decade and is the 10th largest advertiser in the United States of America at that time.

- b. They spent at that time more than 110 million and the ranking is misleading since it does not pay for RADIO nor TELEVISION time which is donated as a public service.
- c. The government is selling us:
 - i) The Post Office – 8,000,000 in 74 and in 75-76 13,000,000 spent on advertising.
 - a) 4,000,000 was budgeted to explain to people how to give a forwarding address when they move and claim they spend in excess of 300 million on forwarding costs.
 - b) They advertise on TV to try to increase letter writing to increase the use of 1st class mail which is a paradoxical situation since they use the idea of increased volume of mail to excuse inefficiency and the need to increase postage rates.
 - c) We therefore are paying more money to persuade ourselves to write more letters in order to increase the mail load so the post office can charge us more for their services.
 - ii) This is the absurdity which is inevitable when any part of the government gets involved in Marketable services.
 - iii) This will expand the advertising budget for the near future for the post office to 30 million.
 - iv) If the post office was in the private sector where it belongs along with all NON Protection services advertising would not be purchased out of deficits nor in spite of losses but paid out of the same costs which would transform the services into smooth running, efficient, economical systems.
 - v) This condition can be assured ONLY by competition in the private sector.
- d. We pay each year in the 70's about 16 million to tell ourselves to put out matches to stay physically fit and exercise and stop smoking, join car pools, etc.
- e. We pay millions to tell people about the Welfare benefits they should be getting and people who don't need welfare often don't know they are entitled to it anyway so we the tax payers PAY out of our pocket to tell people to come take our money whether they need it or not.
- f. The bulk of the government advertising budget is used for Military recruiting and the army Alone spent 35 million on recruiting advertising in 1975 and it strains the imagination to think of how so much advertising could be spend and be relatively unknown.
 - i) Magazines 7.5 million
 - ii) Outdoors 1.5 million
 - iii) News Paper < 1million.
 - iv) The other 25 million is not accounted for directly but as displays, transportation, direct mail, promotion materials.
 - v) In 1976 the budget was upped to 40 million.
- g. When the government spends money there are not the restraints of PROFIT and LOSS statements and we are not told how many were recruited nor what the goal is but we do not we have service men populating countries all over the world.
- h. If we believe they are looking for a FEW GOOD MEN the recruiting costs are astronomical.

- i) Tax Money is like a mountain it is just there and you can go to it any time and if you are a bureaucrat it will even come to you.
 - ii) The questions remain as to WHY there is so much advertising for a plethora of reasons.
- i. When all things are considered it becomes clear that the military is trying to compete with industry for the highest quality individuals and all of the expense of advertising is not just the cost of a volunteer military as opposed to the DRAFT but we are paying the cost of another federal screw up.
 - i) The government is using our money to reach young people for the military services on special time schedules but at the same time they are telling these same young people to go to college at government expense.
 - ii) Unemployment compensation and welfare programs are all in competition with the military services recruiting programs.
 - iii) By this we use our tax dollars to bid UP the cost of protecting ourselves.
- j. When government mixes in with the private sector of the economy we find that we are fighting ourselves and all the objectives become self defeating and it occurs when:
 - i) Welfare competes with wages
 - ii) Laws control prices and salaries
 - iii) Subsidies push up prices
 - iv) Tariffs raise the cost of imports
 - v) Government protected unions disrupt production
 - vi) Government WASTE bids up prices of scarce materials and services in many ways.
- v. This woman can obviously think straight.
- vi. This shows that there are so many ways in which the government is corrupt that you could not cover nor correct them in a lifetime.
 - a. However ONE OF THESE DAYS the whole thing is going to break down and collapse.
 - i) Total economic collapse
 - a) We may run out of the paper with which to PRINT MORE MONEY.
 - ii) Total government inefficiency exemplified by programs which the government has forced on the services which has made out defense ability ludicrous.
 - iii) Catering to the stupid idiotic asinine voter because he is in the majority.
 - iv) Revolution or Civil War
 - a) We have at least 5 different potential revolutionary groups and it would be great if they all revolted at the same time and killed each other off in the streets.
 - b) Moslems vs Africans
 - c) Black Panthers vs Skin Heads
 - v) National counsel of Churches.
 - a) Who arm revolutionaries and at the same time are trying to remove the 2nd amendment.
 - b. When one thing breaks down many others will break down and it could have and should have occurred in the 70s and 80s and did not.

- vii. If the believer has not been consistent in the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine when the break down occurs they will not be able to cope with it and fall immediately into reversionism.
 - a. Their question will be “WHY ME, is God NOT in his heaven”
 - b. What dumb asses of course God in in heaven.
 - c. It is the lack of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which is the true failing of believers especially in time of disaster.

III. The opposition of reversionism v18-19

- A. There is an essential necessity for the continuation of the function of the believer under the Grace Apparatus for Perception after reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace.
- B. There are a large number of believers who when disaster occurs or when they react to some other situation in life FALL into reversionism and get under the influence of evil and these reversionistic believers are the greatest enemies of Christianity and in the early church of the 1st century they were Paul's greatest enemies and they did more to hinder him than anyone else.
 - 1. Alexander the Metal Smith a believer who is not in heaven was one of the greatest to oppose Christianity in his reversionism and influence of evil.
 - i. He was the enemy of Paul the greatest believer of all time.
 - 2. Phgellus, Hermogenes etc were all 3 part of the mantle of opposition of Paul in Ultra Super Grace and this intensified his blessings.
 - 3. There were MANY more then and the same is true today and our enemies as positive believers by and large are believers without Bible Doctrine.
 - 4. The love every believer is a facade of fundamentalism and it is designed to foment opposition to Christianity by other Christians.
 - 5. These people will oppose the positive believers more than anyone else and they will be born again believers IN REVERSIONISM.
 - 6. Widespread reversionism in the 1st century church were its most vigorous enemies and the same is true today.
 - 7. These people are vicious, underhanded, evil, lying people with great piety and pseudo spirituality.
- C. Satan is the greatest personality changer in history and he uses evil to change personalities.
 - 1. He cannot change the soul only Metabolized Bible Doctrine has that power and the power to change people.
 - 2. He changes personalities and knows how to put on a facade of great beauty and he is the father of Public Relations and the GREATEST liar in all of human and angelic history.
 - 3. He is the greatest phony in history as well and the father of all hypocrites and uses the facade of Sweetness and brotherly love in order to set up the greatest systems of opposition for believers in all of history.
 - 4. A FRIEND WHO IS HONEST IS WORTH 50,000 SYCOPHANTS AND IF YOU CAN FIND ANYONE ANY TIME WHO WILL TELL YOU THE TRUTH AND LEVEL WITH YOU OCCASIONALLY AND STILL LOVE YOU THEN YOU HAVE SOME ONE GREAT.
 - i. They are willing to risk friendship in order to help you in some way and to protect you telling you what an ASS you were in a moment and how easy it is to walk out of being so stupid.
 - 5. All those who tell you how great you are are not your friends and all those who tell you what an ass you are are not your enemies.
 - i. The Little Sparrow Story.....
- D. These people who are saved by the cross and in fact the enemies of the cross.
 - 1. The best friend which anyone can have is the Apostle Paul and he was always straight with his friends and his generation and to every generation after that to our time.

2. The greatest writer of scripture, the man who wrote the deepest and most important Bible Doctrines and who talks the most about the importance of Advance in the Christian Way of Life and was always truthful for everyone is Paul.
 3. Paul can make all of us feel uncomfortable as we learn what he wrote down which he had learned.
 4. The Prison Epistles can take you to Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace from Salvation Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 5. The Pastoral Epistles can take you to Ultra Super Grace.
 6. Both show you what an ASS you can be and are in reversionism and this is a fantastic doctrinal development.
 7. There is an incredible and classic illustration of HONESTY and LOVE in Gal 2 where Paul takes Peter and berates him like never before in history for anyone and if there is any doubt in anyone's mind as to who was in charge of and ran the apostles Gal 2 clears it up.
 8. Peter was not the leading apostle and at the end of Gal 2 he was probably at the bottom and afraid to speak up at all.
 9. His spirituality and honesty is without comparison in history with the exception of Moses and Jeremiah.
- E. Paul taught NEW Bible Doctrine and also the old doctrines over and over and over so that you could not forget the doctrines he taught due to his repetition.
1. The Col for our benefit has also done so.
 - i. {(ff) It is amazing to me as I review my notes in compiling them for the consolidation of the Interlocking System of Arrogance in how many studies and how many times he taught us the same principles over and over about this subject which in fact makes it very hard to not become very redundant in the writing down of it all}
 2. This is how Bible Doctrine must be taught with repetition constantly.
 3. This shows us that Paul was the most amazing bible teacher of all time in his communication of Bible Doctrine to groups of people all over the world of his time.
- F. Paul continually and repeatedly warned the Royal Family of God about reversionism and how easy it is to get into reversionism and how it will carry you from what once was considered wonderful in the Cross and Grace of God into misery.
1. There is a historical reality in the preservation of the Pauline epistles which are a monument of the importance of persistent repetition in studying and teaching of Bible Doctrine the true concept of communication by which the believer can grow in the Spiritual Life.
 2. Paul is here weeping with true emotion and is a TRUE man and this is not blubbering sobbing emotionalism.
 - i. Weeping starts in the throat where something gets large in the throat and tears come to your eyes and this is true emotion.
 - ii. Manliness is not a matter of build strength or being obnoxious but is an attitude of soul.
 - iii. Man who does not have bonifide emotion is not a true man.
- G. Paul was thinking of the wonderful memories of people he knew as believers in the past as friends who have since become reversionists and are now enemies of the cross.
1. It is difficult to not feel emotion for someone who did not make the whole trip to Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and even for those who reject Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ as savior.
 - i. It is difficult to comprehend friends or loved ones who did not make it and got tangled up in reactors and fell from the Christian Way of Life to reversionism.
 - ii. Communicators of Bible Doctrine are also HUMAN (Just barely) and they must study and teach and tell weak believers who are cry babies and want special

- attention and want to suck the energy out of the Pastor Teacher so he cannot study that they can go to hell.
2. These people have made themselves into reversionists, enemies of the cross of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - i. Manliness is in the soul and means you are sensitive to others NOT INSENSITIVE.
 - ii. Manliness is sensitivity in the soul to others or memories of others with the inevitable tear when you realize that they did not stick with Bible Doctrine and reach Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and therefore suffered because of it.
 3. (Historical Aside) There is a historical reference to Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in Latin History and his name has been spelled erroneously Chrestos.
 - i. The Lord brought Samuel back from the dead to describe the SAME reversionism of Saul telling him he was the enemy of God. 1Sam 28:16

Phil 3:18 (Alternative to Effective Rebound for Believers)

v18: For many reversionistic believers keep walking from the past and making wrong decisions falling into various stages of reversionism and under the influence of evil, concerning, with reference to whom I have constantly, regularly, repeatedly communicated to ya'all honestly, faithfully many, many times and now, even though momentarily weeping for former friends and Christians, I continue, faithfully, to communicate that these not taking responsibility, have made themselves the enemies of the cross of That Same Christ. (1Sam 28:16)

Lesson #78 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:19

- I. Breaking into Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God and moving to Ultra Super Grace – continued
 - A. The most overlooked thing in the teaching of Bible Doctrine at any stage of spiritual growth which is the MOST overlooked aspect of the teaching process and is essential, Academic Discipline.
 1. This Academic Discipline essential in many aspects of life especially in teaching children.
 - B. In any local church and in fact in any organization there must be a good system of authority which is understood and properly used in order to have proper advance in the Spiritual Life and any organization.
 1. No advance is every made apart from a good system and proper use of authority in the system.
 2. The federal government cannot stand to see authority used properly to get great results (OBVIOUS in 2019) and cannot stand efficiency.
 3. The issue in any organization is not personality of the individual but the system under which the authority is to function.
 - C. It is critical to notice that Reversionists walk toward their objective of destruction while the believer with Positive Volition ADVANCES IN RANKS under strict academic discipline and authority.
 1. The direction of the walking reversionist is in whatever direction they so please and to hell with everyone.
 2. God has set up a system of authority and NO ONE is free from it not even Satan himself.
 3. Today the Pastor Teacher gets his orders from his personal exegesis of the word of God and the Lord has not spoken to any individual since AD96 with John on Patmus.
- II. Doctrine of Enemy-ship:
 - A. Every military model which has come down in history and the United States of America sites one specific principle; "Know Your Enemy"; and this has been a principle of war since Sun Tzu wrote his concepts down.
 1. Before World War II the United States of America military had a great system of intelligence.

2. During World War II Roosevelt who did not like the Army, MacArthur, or anything except Marshall who was a politician made it a point to start CIVILIAN Intelligence organization like the CIA deliberately wiping out the Army Intelligence system.
3. The military intelligence system since 1976 and before has been in terrible shape due to organizations under civilian control like the CIA and NSA etc.
4. The greatest problem we have had in decades is that we do not know our enemies whether they be in the public, congress or any other branch of American life.
5. In our current status we have the worst enemies in the nation we have ever had in the history of this nation and they were very bad in the 70's but far far worse today.
 - i. Chinese
 - ii. Russians
 - a. They have had plans to destroy the United States of America for almost 100 years since 1926.
 - iii. Moslems
 - iv. Cubans
 - v. South East Asia
 - vi. South America
 - vii. Canada
 - viii. Mexico
 - ix. and MOST of the Middle East.
6. It is vitally important to know who your enemies are to keep them under scrutiny.
 - i. Despite not knowing our enemies today the Lord helped us out when he told us that some of the worst enemies will be in your own family.
 - ii. Anyone in your periphery including your family if they try to hold you back from Bible Doctrine ARE your enemies.

B. Definition:

1. Personal Enemy-ship:
 - i. The bible specifies by categories certain stated hostilities or alienations or ignorances
 - a. Some people who dislike you don't know anything about you but don't like the way you look or see you as some kind of challenge to them or their Status Quo.
 - b. They may be jealous of you and more enemies are made by Mental Attitude Sins such as Jealousy, bitterness, vindictiveness, implacability, anger, hatred than any other way.
 - ii. Despite psychology muddying up the concept with personality conflict concepts, ENEMY-SHIP is simply an expression of one's Mental Attitude Sins toward another.
 - a. This is HOSTILITY toward those not really known or ALIENATION toward those whom are known.
 - iii. It is inevitable and possible for 2 people to marry and be lifetime enemies.
 - a. You cannot hold a marriage together by a physical relationship and when this runs out one of the greatest break up considerations in marriage are that 2 enemies get married and spend the rest of their life hating and despising each other.
 - b. One of the things which must be established in marriage when the physical relationship wanes is whether you are enemies or friends.
 - c. These are not just the ones which STICK IT OUT TOGETHER but the successful marriages are those where the 2 find out that they have a great rapport and friendship.

- d. After about 5 years you discover whether you have a friend or enemy and if you have made a friend you will have a great life together and if you have made an enemy you will fight each other constantly.
 - e. Friendship vs Enemy-ship is the explanation as to what actually happens in marriage and it is 2 people locked up in the same cell for life and they are either friends or enemies.
 - f. This is somewhat of an oversimplification but does hold true, so that enemy-ship is in this case alienation and is where 2 people get married and can't stand each other.
 - iv. The 2 key words in understanding enemy-ship are:
 - a. Alienation == to be well acquainted with someone and not like them at all.
 - b. Hostility == to be ignorant of someone and not like them at all.
 - c. Both are basically irrational.
 - v. Enemy ship is therefore divided into 2 categories
 - a. Alienation
 - b. Hostility
 - vi. Personal Enemy-ship is based totally on Mental Attitude Sins.
2. Historical or National Enemy-ship
- i. There is legitimate enemy-ship where hostility and alienation are gathered into one concept on a national basis.
 - a. This is Arabs vs Jews as a group of people as an example.
 - b. In historical enemy-ship the bible often describes one side as right and one as wrong and the bible takes the position on the side of Israel always.
 - ii. The illustration is the Twin Sons of Isaac, Esau and Jacob, One Arab and One Jew.
 - a. Esau was an Arab and Jacob a Jew and yet they were twins one gentile and one Jew and yet are twins.
 - b. With regard to the Arabs and Jews these were personal enemy-ship situations which became national ones.
 - iii. Sometimes there is wrong or right on both sides but the most clearly defined biblical enemy-ships is where the Arabs are Wrong and the Jews Right.
 - iv. Another great national enemy-ship is between Egypt and Israel and again Israel is considered correct and Egypt wrong.
 - a. This is why there are whole chapters on the discipline of Egypt.
 - v. There are also the Philistines and Israel and again the principle is the same where the philistines are destroyed as a people for opposing the Jews.
 - vi. Isaiah dramatizes as does Kings the Assyrians vs Israel.
 - vii. In Rev 12 we then can see why Israel is Right and the Arabs, Philistines, Egyptians, were Wrong because Satan deceives the nations.
 - a. It is one of his objectives in the Angelic Conflict to totally wipe out Israel in order that the Lord not be able to keep his promises to them and therefore WIN the Angelic Conflict.
 - b. The omnipotence of God and the Essence of God protects Israel.
3. Not only is there personal enemy-ship and Historical Enemy-ship which is National or Racial but also there is an Enemy-ship in the Angelic Conflict where Satan as ruler of this world seeks to gain his objectives by means of hatred, and Enmity.
- C. Factors of enemy-ship:
- 1. Satan and fallen angels are the enemies of the believer **1Tim 5:14, 1Pet 5:8**
 - i. Satan is the enemy of every believer even those in reversionism whom he uses.
 - 2. Demons are the enemies of God as fallen angels operating under the command and discipline of Satan **1Cor 15:25, Heb 10:13**
 - 3. Unbelievers are the enemies of God **Rom 5:10, Col 1:21**

- i. Unbelievers are said to be in a state of alienation since we all are born with an Old Sin Nature and as a result are HOSTILE in thinking Human Viewpoint and the Influence of EVIL in production.
 - 4. Both categories of enemies of God, Demon's and unbelievers will be judged by the Lake of Fire. **Heb 10:27**
 - i. The demon has made his decision in Eternity Past and has been confined to the Lake of Fire but the sentence has not been executed and will not be until the end of Human History.
 - a. These made their decisions at some point in Eternity Past and as a result now are servants of Satan in the Angelic Conflict.
 - ii. The unbeliever is the person who will go to the Lake of Fire having rejected the Lord Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ. **John 3:18**
 - iii. This is the eternal judgment of the unbeliever and fallen angels **Heb 10:27**
 - 5. The Carnal Believer becomes a temporary enemy of God by being out of fellowship **Rom 8:7-8**
 - i. In this case recovery from being enemy of God is instantaneous by means of the rebound procedure.
 - 6. God is the Enemy of the Reversionistic believer **1Sam 28:16**
 - i. This is Saul a believer in reversionism who died the Sin Unto Death and who is residing today in heaven and will have a Resurrection Body.
 - ii. This describes the attitude of God when he must administer the Sin Unto Death to any reversionistic believer.
 - 7. The reversionist under the influence of evil appoints self as the enemy of God **James 4:14**
 - 8. The reversionistic believer is the enemy of the Cross **Phil 3:18**
 - 9. The pastor who counters legalism with truth is the ENEMY of the Legalist and Legalism and by teaching truth he makes an enemy out of the reversionist and legalistic believer **Gal 4:16**
 - 10. The Pastor Teacher who communicates Bible Doctrine to those who resist the doctrine and his authority becomes the enemies of these people and vice versa.
 - i. The Pastor Teacher makes enemies by doing his job.
 - ii. The reality is that if you do your job well you will have enemies in any field.

III. 4 Characteristics of Reversionism:

- A. The reversionists transfer to eternity through MAXIMUM Divine Discipline the Sin Unto Death.
 - 1. You can take the HIGH GOLDEN BRIDGE for your Permanent Change of Station or you can do the low crawl through ground glass for your Permanent Change of Station and this is the Sin Unto Death.
 - 2. This passage is elliptical and the verb to be must be added here.

IV. Doctrine of the Sin Unto Death – How to die in ignorance learning nothing missing Bible Doctrine and having a miserable life as well.

- A. The believer who dies the Sin Unto Death MISSES out on the blessings God had prepared for their life in Eternity Past and also for the blessings for eternity.
- B. Definition:
 - 1. Death is the usual way of transfer from time to eternity but not the only way.
 - i. God took a few Ultra Super Grace or Super Grace believers home without death such as Enoch and Elijah.
 - ii. There will be one generation of believers in the Church Age who will leave this earth in the Rapture or Exanastasis and this could happen at any time.
 - 2. There are 3 causes for Christian Death:
 - i. Dying Grace where the advancing or mature believer in Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace and is always related to incredible BLESSING in time.

- a. This believer has enjoyed his Super Grace package of blessing and if he goes to Ultra Super Grace these blessings are intensified under satanic system opposition.
 - b. The Permanent Change of Station to eternity by dying is then the greatest blessing of life.
 - ii. Disciplinary Death for the reversionistic believers under the influence of evil.
 - a. This is our subject and is called the Sin Unto Death
 - b. This is always associated with great pressure and misery, suffering and pain in life while the person moves through the 8 stages of reversionism.
 - c. This believer goes through warning and intensive Divine Discipline and eventually when his use to God is done Dying Divine Discipline of the Sin Unto Death.
 - d. This is also Self Induced Misery and Divine Discipline for carnality and Divine Discipline for reversionism and being under the influence of evil thus a triple intensification of Divine Discipline and misery.
 - e. This is a miserable life followed by vastly intensified Divine Discipline since there will be no Divine Discipline after this life.
 - iii. Reversionistic Superimposition called Christian Suicide only.
 - a. In suicide the reversionistic believer superimposes his volition over divine volition and takes himself out of this life before it is god's will to remove him.
 - b. He is often Neurotic, Psychotic or Psychopathic 3 of the results of being in the last 3 stages of reversionism.
3. There are 4 ways to transfer from time to Eternity:
 - i. Sin Unto Death maximum Divine Discipline in dying
 - ii. Dying Grace maximum blessing in death
 - iii. Resurrection or the Rapture
 - iv. Transfer to time to eternity by SURPASSING GRACE blessing like Enoch Heb 11:5, or Elijah.
 - a. This is a Permanent Change of Station without physical death of resurrection being involved.
4. The Sin Unto Death is the means by which the reversionistic believer transfers from time to eternity.
5. The reversionist dies under the administration from God of maximum punitive discipline.
 - i. This is where GOD pronounces the Sin Unto Death penalty on the reversionist but delegates the execution of the sentence.
 - a. To Satan as in the case of the Incestuous believer 1Cor 5
 - b. To Laws of Divine Establishment government in capital punishment for capital crimes.
 - c. Use the structure of the human body to bring into the body some very devastating disease or series of diseases which could include:
 - i) Cancer (Not all cancer victims fall into this category, and some people die of cancer as part of their dying grace).
 - ii) Syphilis or some other painful venereal disease
 - iii) Some other painful disease
 - iv) Some mechanism using the body where you can experience maximum pain.
 - d. Sometimes he directly does this
 - e. Sometimes he uses history as with Saul using battlefields, economic crises, revolution, natural disasters, etc.
 - i) He as a great warrior died in a disgraceful defeat and miserably knowing he was defeated and even knew the night before the battle

that he would be defeated and had in fact seen how he could have won the battle when he walked around the Left Flank of the Philistines to reach the Witch of Endor and if he brought his army around this way he could have won the whole battle.

6. No believer will suffer or be miserable in Phase III of life in eternity with God.
 - i. No matter how painful life may be NO BELIEVER without regard to the Status Quo of their spiritual advance will experience suffering or pain in eternity.
 - ii. In addition SIN will not be mentioned at the Judgment Seat of Jesus Christ nor in heaven ever having been judged on the cross in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
 - iii. Divine Discipline for the believer stops with time and in eternity there will be NO suffering for any believer.
 - iv. However, GOD knows what hurts you the most and if you are in reversionism and then die the Sin Unto Death he will use what is most horrible for you to take you out of this life.
 - v. The believer however will have a happy, blessed death better than any blessing in time.
 - vi. As an example there is some evidence that Herman Goering may have been a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ.
7. Therefore the Sin Unto Death is god's greatest and last expression of Divine Discipline to the reversionistic believer.
8. The Sin Unto Death includes both a painful horrible miserable death plus loss of 2 categories of great divine blessing one for time and the other in eternity
 - i. In time the reversionist loses his package of Super Grace blessings
 - ii. In eternity the reversionism loses his package of Surpassing Grace blessings and Rewards.
 - iii. Part of loss of Super Grace blessings includes LOSS OF DYING GRACE BLESSINGS.

Lesson #79 Series # 469 2Tim 3:13, Phil 3:20

- I. A Historical Perspective on the National Education Association:
 - A. In 1976 the National Education Association adopted a program for the 4th of July which was idiotic.
 - B. Objectives in teaching in 1976:
 1. Celebrate the birth of American independence with a declaration of INTERDEPENDENCE.
 - i. An educational program for the global community.
 - ii. Convince School Children that NATIONALISM, Pride in one's country and the United States of America's sovereignty are outmoded.
 - iii. They have the ability both with support from educators and financial strength to force its objectives into all schools.
 - iv. Children are to be taught to think of themselves as citizens of the world not the Unites States of America.
 2. In July they started in LA with a display of "Peace Studies" including books and literature, movies designed for all levels of education.
 - i. Grades 7-12 book, "Learning Peace" by Grace Contrino Abrams, Jane Adams Peace Association – Left wing women's international league for Peace and Freedom.
 - ii. Children are instructed to imitate such courageous individuals for peace such as: (wait for it)
 - a. Joan Baez
 - b. Jane Fonda
 - c. Dick Gregory

- d. Shirley Chisolm
- e. Daniel Elsburg
- f. Linus Pauling
- g. Benjamin Spock MD
- h. Barrigan Brothers
- i. Sisters McAllister.
- iii. Learning peace makes a strong pitch to the young for the establishment of an international police force and a world agency consisting of an Ombudsman for each nation who would have the power to have the last say in international peace.
- iv. Some Topics are designed to weaken students belief in National Sovereignty
- v. The United Nations charter is suggested to be revised to form a federal organization of nations.
- vi. The Oceans resources should be controlled by the UN
- vii. World pollution should be under the jurisdiction of the world court.
- viii. Nations are to relinquish their national sovereignty to a world organization.
- 3. NEA is also assaulting the political structure of the United States of America by:
 - i. Electing politicians who agree with their 1 world ideas and they have the ability to do so.
 - ii. The at that time were second only to the Teamsters Union and were growing at a rate of 4000 teachers per month.
 - iii. They assessed their 1.7 million members 10 dollars for political action they had easily 15-18 million dollar ADDITIONAL finances to sponsor political candidates.
 - iv. They worked closely with AFLCIO lobbyists to pressure congress.

- C. The NEA is traitorous and Evil and has been one of the most influential organizations in the United States of America.
- D. This was and is the OBVIOUS reason for the Berachah Prep School functions and teaching.

II. 4 Characteristics of Reversionism:

- A. Reversionists transfer to eternity through maximum Divine Discipline the Sin Unto Death Continued:
- B. Documentation of the Sin Unto Death:

Ps 118:17-18

v17: I, David in reversion recover, the Nation of Israel under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline will be restored as a priest nation, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ at the resurrection, shall not die, but live, therefore I will narrate, speak or sing the words or manifestations of the Justice of God from the Lord for me.

v18: The LORD has disciplined me, David in reversionism, Israel under the 5th cycle of Divine Discipline, Jesus of Nazareth, The Christ on the cross, severely, but he has not given me over to death.

1John 5:16

v16: If anyone sees a brother sinning a Sin face to face with or leading to Death, he shall ask and he God will give Life to those who commit sin not leading to or terminating in Death, there is a sin terminating in Death, I do not say you should pray for this sin.

- C. Cause of the Sin Unto Death is reversionism:
 - 1. Review the Definition
 - 2. Reversionism, the Sin Unto Death, Administration of the Sin Unto Death in Historical Disaster, and these same possibilities for historical disaster which have existed since the Bicentennial year of the birth of the Unites States of America till today.

Jer 9:13

v13: And the Lord Said, "because they have forsaken my Laws of Divine Establishment by which freedom exists, which I have set before them and have not obeyed my voice by believers rejecting Bible Doctrine in reversionism nor walked according to it,

Jer 9:14

v14: but have walked after the stubbornness of their souls in Scar Tissue of the Soul, and after Baal's as their fathers taught them,

Jer 9:15

v15: therefore thus says the Lord of the armies, the God of Israel, behold I will feed this people wormwood and give them poisoned water to drink,

Jer 9:16

v16: also I will scatter them among the nations (5th cycle of discipline) whom neither they nor their fathers have know and I will send a sword after them in military disaster until I have annihilated them. (Sin unto Death)

Jer 44:12

v12: I will take away the reversionistic remnant of Judah who have made up their minds to enter the land of Egypt to live there, consequently they will meet their end of life in the land of Egypt where they shall fall, by the sword in criminal violence and meet their end by famine of economic depression; Both the small and great reversionists shall die by the sword and by famine; therefore they shall become a curse an object of horror, an imprecation a reproach.

Phil 3:18-19

Rev 3:15

v15: I am cognizant of your behavior and production in the doctrinal content of your Stream of Consciousness of the Soul, that you are neither cold (unbelievers) nor hot (Mature Believers). Oh that you were either cold, unbelievers, or hot, Mature believers.

Rev 3:16

v16: So therefore because you are Lukewarm reversionistic believers, neither cold, unbelievers, nor hot, mature believers, I am about to vomit you out of my mouth (Sin unto death)

3. In this passage of revelation there are 3 categories of people mentioned:
 - i. The Cold is the unbeliever
 - a. Has not spiritual objectives
 - b. The cross divides these from the believers
 - ii. The Hot is the believer in Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God Super Grace or Ultra Super Grace.
 - a. Spiritual objectives of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
 - iii. The Luke Warm is the believer in reversionism.
 - a. Lost their direction of reaching Maturity Adjustment to the Justice of God.
- D. Administration of the Sin Unto Death to the believer does not mean loss of salvation **2Tim 2:11-13**
 1. The Hymn of Paul, "Faithful is the Word".
 2. He remains faithful even to the reversionistic believers and they cannot lose their salvation nor be repudiated in eternity.
 3. No matter how you as a believer in Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ fail in the Spiritual Life you will still have ultimate sanctification with a Resurrection Body minus the Old Sin Nature and minus Human Good.
- E. Case Histories of the Sin Unto Death:
 1. Monetary Reversionism **Acts 5:1-10**
 - i. Ananius and Saphira
 2. Phallic Reversionism **1Cor 5:1-5**
 - i. The Incestuous unnamed Corinthian believer.
 3. Ritual Reversionism 1Cor 11:30-31
 - i. Participating in Communion as a reversionist.
 4. Mental Attitude Reversionism **1Sam 13:9-14, 1Chron 10:13-14**
 - i. Saul refusing to Kill King Agag (see Esther)
 5. Verbal Reversionism **1Tim 1:19-20**
 - i. Hymenaeus and Alexander
 6. Anti Establishment Reversionism **Is 30:1-3 comp Is 31:1-3, Is 38**
 - i. The Human Viewpoint policy of Hezekiah
- F. Concept of Reversion recovery:

1. You have to HURT enough to want to do something about it and this usually occurs in either Intensive Divine Discipline or Dying Divine Discipline
 2. The principle of Repentance or changing one's mind **2Tim 2:24-26** about Bible Doctrine.
 - i. By the constant teaching of Bible Doctrine by a Pastor Teacher in the local church people may wonder into the church at some point hurting so bad and they may respond to the Bible Doctrine being taught and change their mind and decide to get with it.
 - ii. Reversionistic believers are casualties in the Angelic Conflict and are prisoners of Satan under the influence of his evil policies.
 3. Rebound as per **1Cor 11:30-31** if the reversionistic believer judges self when necessary this is part of reversion recovery.
 4. The Ultimate factor **James 4:4-8** the persistent daily constant function under the Grace Apparatus for Perception.
 - i. There must be a daily intake of Bible Doctrine in order to REMOVE the Pollution we are constantly exposed to in life, EVIL.
 5. The first characteristic related to reversionism is the Sin Unto Death and all reversionists are headed toward the Sin Unto Death and only reversion recovery can change this.
- G. Reversionists are influenced by Emotional Revolt of the Soul:
1. Every reversionist has a god and this is not God the Father, God the Son nor God the Holy Spirit.
 2. The god of the reversionist is his emotion in Emotional Revolt of the Soul.
 - i. How they feel is their dictator, if they feel like working then they work and if not then they do not work.

III. Doctrine of the emotions of the soul:

- A. In the older translations of the bible the emotions were not understood with regard to the various parts of the body.
1. (heb0 Leb and (gr) Kardia == Heart was used for the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul which processed thought into vocabulary, categories, norms and standards, and application to life.
 2. Stomach, Kidneys use for emotion
 3. No one realized that this was not referring to LITERAL parts of the anatomy and there are hundreds of references to the anatomy in the bible and they do not refer to the anatomy at all.
 4. These terms when used are Metonyms and used to describe portions of the SOUL not the body.
 5. Emotion is part of the soul and invisible and unseen and anatomy was used as something seen to describe it.
- B. In the bible there are 3 different words used for Emotion:
1. Belly – Rom 16:17-18, Prov 18:8, 26:22, 13:25, Phil 3:19 == Emotion.
 - i. This is however a good designation for emotion since the Stomach contains nothing except some fluids for digestion.
 - ii. The stomach is empty but is designed to respond to FOOD.
 - iii. Putting good tasting food into the stomach may cause the stomach to rebel and protest this food for you and this is a perfect illustration of EMOTION which is designed to respond to proper thinking from the Right Lobe.
 - iv. Peptic Ulcers are perfect illustrations of the Emotional Revolt of the Soul.
 2. Bowels – Intestines – **Gen 43:30, 1Kings 3:26, Jer 4:19, 31:20, Lam 1:20, 2:11, Phil 1:8, Philemon 12, 20**
 - i. Emotion also handles WASTE of the soul like the physiological large intestines.
 - ii. Emotional Revolt of the Soul is perfectly illustrated by Ulcerative Colitis
 3. Reins – Kidneys – **Ps 7:9, 26:2, 139:13, Prov 26:16, Jer 12:12, 17:10, 20:12**

- i. Emotional Revolt of the Soul is illustrated by (the Col used Pheochromocytoma an adrenal tumor) but a better illustration might be nephritis or nephrosis which is a destruction of the kidney resulting in physiological instability from inability to filter the blood, similar to that which occurs with Emotional Revolt of the Soul regarding the soul.
 - 4. There was originally in the Greek and Hebrew for emotion as such therefore other words were substituted to indicate emotion.
 - i. Therefore various categories of anatomy were used to reflect this part of the soul function.
- C. Definition and Function of Emotion:
 - 1. Emotion is the responder and appreciator of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul where you do your thinking
 - i. Self consciousness
 - ii. Volition
 - iii. Emotion is designed to respond to what you have by way of thought in the Right Lobe.
 - iv. This is part of capacity for life, appreciation for life and enjoyment of life.
 - v. We would not be very normal without emotion for appreciating life.
 - 2. The Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is analogous to the Right Man in marriage while emotion is comparable to the Right Woman in marriage.
 - 3. There are 2 emotions which are 2 parts of the same thing.
 - i. Just as the woman has a body and soul, so the Right Woman of your Right Lobe, the emotion has 2 parts.
 - a. Some Responses are analogous to one part and some to the other.
 - ii. The woman's soul responds to her Right Man in life just as her emotion responds to the thinking of her Right Lobe of the soul.
 - iii. She can respond or react to her own thinking.
 - iv. When a person reacts to their own thinking the emotion revolts against what is thought and this is where people become irrational.
 - v. Emotion is EMPTY and has no capacity for thinking and no ability to determine right from wrong, reason, weigh facts nor handle any rational thing in life and is only a responder and a very poor ruler.
 - vi. In Emotional Revolt of the Soul when emotion starts to run the soul the male wears her hair too long and the woman cuts her hair off and tries to look like a man.
 - a. There are both inner and outer manifestations of this.
 - b. A change of Mental Attitude
 - c. Emotional Revolt of the Soul is one of the most dangerous failures in life.
 - vii. Emotion can produce a spectrum of response in happiness from tranquility to ecstasies.
 - viii. Emotional response to the Old Sin Nature produces a misery spectrum called carnality.
 - ix. There is therefore between the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and the Old Sin Nature of the body a competition.
 - a. The Old Sin Nature in trying to compete and when the believer is carnal he is very often irrational since in Emotional Revolt of the Soul
 - b. In this case the Old Sin Nature is acting like the Right Man and the emotion is therefore responding to the Old Sin Nature rather than the contents of the Right Lobe of the soul.
 - 4. By function the emotion responds to the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul as the Right Man of the soul.
- D. Emotions have to be tested by God: **Ps 7:9, 26;2, Jer 11:20, 17;10, 20:12, Rev 2:23**

1. God does not actually test the soul and emotion at some given time but knew in Eternity Past what would be in control of the soul at any given time and how it would function at any given time with the Right Lobe or Old Sin Nature controlling the soul.
 2. Emotions can be tested and as a result can be destroyed **Job 16:13, Ps 73:21, Lam 3:13**
 - i. This is caused by Old Sin Nature reflux or reversionistic reflux into the emotion.
 - ii. You cannot destroy the emotion of the soul with carnality since this can be recovered from instantly and can only temporarily upset it.
 - iii. Reversionism can absolutely destroy the emotion of the soul
 - iv. Once you destroy the emotion of the soul reversion recovery will then have limited capacity for life since you have lost your responder to what you have in life from your Right Lobe of the soul.
 3. Reversionism can therefore result in 2 kinds of Scars in the soul.
 - i. In Drug or alcohol addiction will destroy brain cells and will be limited in his reversion recovery no longer having total function of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - ii. If in reversionism if your emotions are destroyed you are limited after reversion recovery in your enjoyment of your Super Grace blessing package.
 - iii. You cannot fully or even at all enjoy any of the first 4 categories of the Super Grace blessing package if you are minus total Right Lobe function or Emotional Capacity.
 - iv. People who destroy their emotions in reversionism end up being neurotic
 - v. People who destroy the function of their Right Lobe in reversionism end up being psychotic.
 - vi. These limit the possibilities of FULL reversion recovery.
 - vii. It is possible that there is something WORSE for the reversionist than the Sin Unto Death that being a severely limited possibility for recovery and being a walking ghoul trying to get out of reversionism.
 - viii. The Question is HOW FAR can a spiritual zombie go in reversion recovery.
 - ix. One of the worst types of reversionism is CHEMICAL reversionism whereby you get involved in some chemical addiction which can chemically destroy the Soul and thereby limiting reversion recovery.
 - x. Chemical destruction can occur in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and Emotion of the Soul.
 - xi. Emotion can be destroyed chemically and also by the CONTENT of what is responded to or reacted to from the Right Lobe or Old Sin Nature.
- E. Emotions react or respond to tragedy **Jer 4:19, Lam 1:20, 2:11**
1. This occurs under the Status Quo of Emotional Revolt of the Soul so that the authority of the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is destroyed or neutralized so that you cannot see tragedy in the light of Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 2. Historical disaster when it comes will cause some to crash into reversionism not having the ability to understand historical disaster.
 3. This results from Emotional Revolt of the Soul when the emotion controls the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul and when disaster occurs you cannot cope with it because EMOTION CANNOT THINK and has no doctrine and therefore you question God and historical disaster.
 4. When historical disaster occurs we are not to question Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who controls history since there are other factors which only God knows and we do not know.
 5. This is what occurs in the holy roller movement where they cannot cope with life since they cannot think Bible Doctrine and therefore must FEEL something that makes them feel close to God.

6. Their focus is to find Something to feel good about and tie this to the bible and enter the tongues movement which is an invalid function not having worked for almost 2000 years.
 7. But this does not matter to these people since they need something to make them feel closer to God but Emotional Revolt of the Soul is a total disaster when it is linked to something religious.
 8. These people in fact are EVIL REVERSIONISTIC Holy Rollers and some will permanently and totally destroy their emotions.
 9. Emotional reaction to tragedy is a revolt against divine design.
 10. Emotions can also respond to tragedy but in the response the Lord gets the glory since the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul is the controlling aspect where normal sorrow and weeping for a dead or dying loved one is totally normal and being able to think and use Metabolized Bible Doctrine and Divine Viewpoint the believer is able to control the emotion and the disaster.
 11. Under Emotional Revolt of the Soul tragedy or some disaster pressure breaks the individual apart and destroys the soul.
- F. Emotion is the appreciator of LOVE as one of many facets of Life, **Gen 43:30, 1Kings 3:26, Phil 1:8, 1John 3:17, ETC.**
1. When there is Metabolized Bible Doctrine in the Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul there will be capacity for love.
 2. When this same Right Lobe of the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul dominates the soul the emotion makes one very aware of the fact that he is in love and that it exists in the soul toward God, the Opposite sex and friends.
 3. This is a wonderful use of the emotion and completes the capacity for all aspects of life making it all more enjoyable.
- G. Emotion stimulates happiness Prov 23:16, Philemon 7, 20.
1. It does so in 3 areas:
 - i. The Frame of Reference of the Right Lobe
 - ii. The Conscience of the Right Lobe
 - iii. The Launch Pad for application from the Right Lobe.
- H. Emotions and spirituality in dispensations is an important subject in view of the rise of the Holy Roller Movement.
1. There is a contrast between the ministry of God the Holy Spirit in the Church Age and in the millennium
 - i. In the Church Age Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is absent from the earth therefore the Filling of God the Holy Spirit produces the character and glory of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ without emotion.
 - a. Therefore the Filling of God the Holy Spirit in the Church Age means MINUS emotion.
 - b. You may have emotion when under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but the EMOTION IS NOT THE FILLING OF GOD THE HOLY SPIRIT.
 - c. Each of us as Royal Family of God in the Church Age are Royal Ambassadors for Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ and his personal representatives Gal 5:22-23, comp 4:19, Rom 5:5
 - d. God the Holy Spirit produces the character of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in the soul.
 - e. Emotion is never designed to produce character but to only to respond to the character of the believer.
 - f. Just as Grace Glues the Essence of God together EMOTION as a responder becomes distilled grace whereas emotion as an aggressor or dictator becomes distilled legalism.
 - g. Emotion cannot produce LOVE but only respond to it and cannot produce integrity but only respond to it.

- h. Therefore EMOTION and ECSTATICS have no spiritual connotation in the Church Age.
 - i. You can be emotional and under Filling of God the Holy Spirit at the same time but they are NOT RELATED.
 - ii. In the Millennium Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ is present on the earth and ruling under perfect environment and the Angelic Conflict is suspended due to the incarceration of Satan and the fallen angels.
 - a. The Filling of God the Holy Spirit is characterized by emotional response from the Stream of Consciousness of the Soul.
 - b. All believers here as in the Church Age are indwelt by God the Holy Spirit and commanded to be under the Filling of God the Holy Spirit but because of the difference in the millennial conditions EMOTION is a bonifide part of the Filling of God the Holy Spirit here. **Joel 2;28-29**
 - c. Filling of God the Holy Spirit in the millennium is designed to appreciate Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ who is present rather than to produce the character of Jesus of Nazareth, the Christ in his absence as in the Church Age,.
- I. The emotion of the believer under Negative Volition Hinders the Perception, Cognition, Inculcation and Metabolization of Bible Doctrine **2Cor 6;11-12**
- J. Therefore believer are commanded to separate from those believers under Emotional Revolt of the Soul **Rom 16:17-18, Rev 2:23**